

Chapter 5669

Charlie did not expect that he would meet two young cancer patients while camping in the mountains of Yunnan;

He further did not expect that these two people,

Who both wanted to go to Aurous Hill to participate in the clinical trials of JX Pharmaceutical,

And both were brushed off.

And what surprised him the most was that this Ruslen actually knew James Smith.

When others were marveling that James Smith, who had once been in charge of the entire FDA,

Had taken the initiative to resign from his position and go to Aurous Hill to do charity,

This kind of thing sounded unbelievable.

Charlie asked Ruslen with feigned curiosity, "Old Hu, are you familiar with this James Smith?"

Ruslen frankly said: "I can't say I am familiar with him. He was the Director of the FDA and a big name in the pharma industry."

"It is not possible for an ordinary person like me to have contact with him."

"I actually met him at the registration site of JX Pharmaceutical."

"He took his child to sign up."

"At first glance, there was nothing special about him."

"The people around didn't recognize him at all."

"I could recognize him because I studied biological sciences in the United States."

"There should be no students who study biological sciences, genetic technology, and chemical pharmaceuticals in the United States and are not familiar with his name and the FDA."

Charlie was a little surprised and asked:

"What is the main direction of your biological science?"

"Is it the research and development of biomedicine?"

"Yes." Ruslen nodded and said: "My main focus is biochemistry,"

"I planned to go to the university after graduation in cancer research."

"To join a pharmaceutical company,"

“And to participate in the research and development of a new generation of chemotherapy drugs,”

“I did not expect that before the drug was developed,”

“I would become a terminal cancer patients.”

Ruslen sighed with a smile: “This is the way of life.”

“The long-awaited hero wanted to go to the battlefield to kill the enemy and serve the country,”

“But before he put on the uniform, he died first.”

Bellina on the side smiled and said:

“Everyone has their own destiny.”

“Like us, we came here for a visit,”

“So it is more important than anything else to be happy before going back.”

Ruslen tapped lightly and nodded, reached out to hug Bellina gently, and said with a smile:

“God has been very kind to me,”

“He let me find the love of my life before I die, and this life is not in vain.”

Her face blushed slightly, and she said angrily,

“Oh, you are so nasty.”

Ruslen smiled and said, “There is not much time left for me to be graceful and reserved,”

“So I have to be unrestrained as soon as possible.”

As he said, he looked at Bellina, and asked her with a loud smile:

“Bellina Shu, will you marry me?”

A boy who was about the same age as Ruslen said with a smile,

“Gosh! Hu, are you proposing?”

Looking at Bellina, he asked very sincerely:

“Bellina, are you willing to marry me?”

She came back to her senses, pursed her lips, and said,

“It hasn’t been long at all, do you really want to get married?”

“Marriage is very troublesome. You have to meet your parents,”

“Choose a wedding dress, book a hotel, and then prepare for the wedding.”

“Rather than delaying it for such a long time,”

“It is better to simply be together,”

“So that the two of us can spend more time together, right?”

He was silent for a moment, then looked at Bellina, and said seriously:

“Before I die, I want to have more experiences that I haven’t had before.”

“If possible, I would like to take you to live in the United States...”

Chapter 5670

Bellina smiled, said: "After going back on foot this time,"

"Both of us will start chemotherapy separately."

"Once we start chemotherapy, our physical condition will deteriorate significantly."

"By that time, we may not be able to move anymore,"

"And you have to go back to the United States for treatment."

"I want to go back to the capital for treatment,"

"If I really go to prepare for a wedding, maybe it will delay the treatment."

As she spoke, her expression gradually became serious, and she said,

"Ruslen, let's make an agreement, first try to survive this year,"

"If a miracle happens next year and neither of us dies,"

"You can come to China to meet me."

"Meet my parents, after obtaining their consent,"

"I will go to the United States with you."

Ruslen, who had always been cheerful, suddenly became weak and said in a low voice:

"There are still four months until next year."

"Even if I'm not dead, I won't be able to come to China to see you."

Bellina's eyes were red, and she smiled and said,

"It's okay, We will make video calls every day then,"

"And now everything is online, even the courts often hold court sessions online."

"If it doesn't work, we can hire a priest, and I'll marry you online."

Ruslen nodded slightly with tears in his eyes, and said with a smile:

"Then let's just say that I'll find a priest when I return to the United States this time."

"Host an online wedding for us on the first day of the month!"

The emotions of the other colleagues around him have gradually fallen into a trough.

Maria looked at Charlie, and whispered in his ear:

"Master doesn't JX Pharmaceutical belong to you?"

Charlie nodded and hummed, "It's mine."

Maria looked at Ruslen and Bellina, Then asked: "Then see if you can..."

Before she finished speaking, Charlie nodded without thinking:

"Yes, but not now, I will make arrangements when we go back."

Maria was instantly relieved, and her mood also changed all of a sudden,  
She got better, but she thought that Charlie always cared about the rules,  
So she tentatively asked: "Isn't it going to make it difficult for you?"

Charlie shook his head: "No, every style, the game designer has formulated a set of  
basic rules for the game,"

"But he will also actively put easter eggs in the game rules,"

"And at the same time passively leave bugs."

"I am the hidden NPC in this game. When you meet me, you will trigger the hidden  
easter egg."

Maria felt relieved when she heard this and said with a smile:

"In this case, then the former head of the FDA they mentioned just now met you,"

"Why didn't he trigger the easter egg?"

Charlie said with a smile: "Easter eggs can't be triggered when you meet an NPC  
just like that."

"You need to use the correct trigger method and a pious heart to make it possible."

"The two points that I am most dissatisfied with about James Smith, one is  
overconfidence,"

"And the other is the by-product of overconfidence—to look down on others too  
much."

"With these two points, I will not give him a chance."

At this time, Ruslen opened his mouth and said:

"Okay, the time is almost up, let's hurry up and start a fire."

"Cook first, if it is later, we can only eat dinner in the dark!"

Soon, everyone began to work in an orderly manner.

Someone prepared firewood, someone prepared food,

And someone took out everyone's small folding table and pieced them together  
into a long long table.

Charlie contributed all the ingredients and wine he purchased,

And while everyone was preparing dinner, he first set up the tent.

Although the camping tent he bought is for two people,

The internal space is only about the size of a 1.8-meter double bed.

Maria helped lay the moisture-proof mat on the side, and at the same time said in a  
shy voice:

“Tonight are we going to sleep here?”

Charlie nodded, and said, “Let’s see when Victoria appears,”

“If she doesn’t appear, we will let nature take its course.”

Maria asked again: “Then what if she appears after everyone sleeps?”

“In that case, we can’t sneak out to spy on her, right?”

“In that case, she will definitely find out soon.”

Charlie said with a smile: “Don’t worry, I’m ready, I’ve mixed some aura into the wine,”

“Everyone will be very excited tonight and will not feel any fatigue.”

“This bonfire party may be held until tomorrow morning.”

“If Victoria flies to Myanmar in such a hurry, then she will definitely come here from Myanmar.”

“She won’t waste time, she should be here before tomorrow morning!”

## Chapter 5671

Soon, the group of people lit a bonfire and set an oven at the moment when the sun had completely set.

Since everyone had prepared the ingredients,

Charlie specially bought some more, so this dinner was extraordinarily rich.

In addition, Charlie also bought a lot of good wine, the atmosphere was enhanced,

And basically, everyone decided to drink to their heart's content this evening.

Therefore, he specially mixed a little spiritual energy into the wine.

These auras cannot make them strengthen their bodies or cure diseases,

But they can guarantee that no matter how much they drink this night, they will not yawn.

Moreover, once this meager spiritual energy is absorbed by their bodies,

It will never leave any traces, even if Victoria came, it is impossible for her to notice it.

Southern Yunnan is located on a plateau, so the temperature difference between day and night is relatively large.

In addition, the Mountain itself has increased its altitude by several hundred meters,

So after nightfall, the temperature suddenly drops to a bit chilly.

So everyone sat around the bonfire, warmed by the temperature of the fire and spirits.

Ruslen held the guitar, and some young people who liked to sing sang a few popular songs with him.

Maria also liked this feeling very much, she blended in very easily, and she was very relaxed.

While toasting with everyone, a young man said, "Oh, tonight's wine is really amazing."

"It's not too good to drink. I usually drink so much that it's too early to break up."

“Today, the more I drink, the more energetic I am!”

“Me too!” Another person said with a smile,

“Although I’m a little dizzy, I don’t feel like I’m going to be drunk at all.”

“It’s so comfortable!”

The person said, looking at Charlie and asking,

“Linye, you bought this Wine, although it tastes the same as the wine I usually drink,”

“It seems to be different, is this vintage wine?”

Charlie said with a smile: “It feels different, it’s because the atmosphere is here,”

“Drinking this thing, the hotter the atmosphere, the higher the drinking capacity.”

Ruslen agreed: “Linye is right. Whether you get drunk after drinking depends on three indicators.”

“One is a person’s alcohol tolerance, the other is his alcohol intake and consumption.”

“If your maximum drinking capacity at the dinner table is a catty of white wine,”

“Then when you are drinking alone, you will definitely not be able to reach this drinking capacity.”

“This is because drinking at the dinner table while chatting the physical strength and body fluids are high, the consumption of alcohol is also greater,”

“And the spirit is highly aroused, all of which are conducive to the volatilization of alcohol.”

The man thought for a moment, then smiled and said:

“It makes sense! I am really happy today. When I am happy, I think about having another drink!”

Charlie said at this time: “It’s a rare thing that everyone is very happy,”

“Let’s just be high until dawn tonight, and after watching the sunrise,”

“Let’s have a good sleep.”

Everyone agreed almost immediately.

Staying up late, for young people, is simply a piece of cake.

Holding the mobile phone on the bed, or facing the screen in front of the computer,

It will be the whole night without knowing it,

Not to mention that everyone is very excited and in good condition tonight,

Staying up until dawn, watching the sunrise, it doesn’t seem impossible.

So, the group really stayed awake, eating skewers and singing songs, until the next morning.

Before sunset yesterday, Charlie could occasionally see other friends going down the mountain.

After sunset until the sky began to turn white, he didn’t see anyone else appearing again.

At this time, there were less than 20 minutes before sunrise,

And everyone finally added some branches and firewood to the campfire,

And began to wait for the moment when the sun rose from the other side of the mountain.

About ten minutes later, the originally white skyline began to have a golden glow.

This is an omen that the sun is about to rise over the horizon.

Just when everyone was looking forward to it,

Charlie’s senses suddenly sensed that there was a person in the distance,

Walking quickly towards where they were.

Worried about being discovered by Victoria,

Charlie has been running the mental formula Jeremiah taught him since drinking last night,

Locking his aura tightly in his body.

For monks, everyone is like a submarine sailing in the deep sea.

Everyone finds each other by sonar detection.

To borrow this metaphor, a person with a high level of cultivation is equal to a more advanced submarine.

The submarine is more comprehensive, not only has fierce and strong power,

But also has more advanced means of detecting other submarines and a longer detection distance;

People are like old and backward submarines, with poor and weak power, and poor detection capabilities.

It is very likely that they will be killed by the opponent's torpedo before they know where the opponent is.

The monks perceive each other, just like the passive sonar of a submarine monitors each other.

Once they hear a movement of the same kind, they will immediately be alert and enter a state of readiness.

However, this does not mean that all people with low cultivation bases cannot escape death in front of those with high cultivation bases.

Old submarines, if they are cautious enough, can also avoid advanced submarines.

One of the most commonly used means is to sit on the bottom and keep absolutely silent.

Once the submarine enters a state of absolute silence, the engine shuts down,

All electronic equipment and detection equipment stop working,

And all people on board remain motionless and do not make any sound.

In this case, it is difficult to detect an advanced submarine if it only relies on a passive sonar Goal.

## Chapter 5672

Charlie is now in this silent state.

Generally speaking, even if a very powerful cultivator appears here,

As long as they don't deliberately investigate everyone to the end,

It is impossible to find that Charlie is also a cultivator.

But this is not absolute. It is like an absolutely silent submarine.

Although the opponent's passive sonar cannot detect it,

If the opponent turns on the active sonar to search, it is still possible to find it.

However, there is still a very critical problem here, that is,

Although the active sonar is easy to use, it is a double-edged sword,

Just like a flashlight in the dark, it is really much easier to find people with it,

But once you use it If you get rid of it, whether you can find your opponent or not, you will be the first to be exposed.

Therefore, neither the military nor the ascetics themselves will blatantly search for their own kind.

They are afraid of being targeted by secret masters,

So they will not risk their own safety casually,

Let alone release their spiritual energy to investigate everyone around them wherever they go.

What's more, the current Victoria must be very cautious,

Let alone let her use active sonar, she may even choose absolute silence like Charlie to ensure absolute safety.

At this moment, Charlie sensed that someone was approaching quickly,

Not relying on aura, but relying on his own keen senses.

At the same time, Victoria, who was going up the mountain quickly,

Also noticed that there were already more than a dozen people here early in the morning on the mountain.

However, she was not surprised. After all, she met many camping enthusiasts along the way.

She knew that this kind of outdoor sport was very common among young people, so she didn't take it seriously.

When she stepped up the Mountain and saw several tents and a dozen young people not far away, her brows subconsciously twitched.

These people are all looking at the direction of the sunrise at this time,

Victoria didn't suspect them, she was just upset and disappointed,

Because these people were too close to Senior Warren's tomb.

She is revisiting the old place this time,

Just to go to Warren's grave to reminisce about the past,

And to say a few words of her heart to her senior by the way.

But the location of these people is only two or three hundred meters away from Warren's Tomb.

If she goes in directly, then she won't be able to avoid the sight of these people.

In this way, she wants to say something to her senior, it is not so convenient.

At this time, Charlie had caught a glimpse of the young and mature woman who had just appeared in the distance from the corner of his eye.

With superhuman eyesight, he could see the woman's appearance.

It has to be said that although Victoria has lived to be four hundred years old,

She is still beautiful and charming. Compared with Maria, she seems to be no different.

Moreover, Victoria's expression is cold, her eyes are like torches,

And her aura is extremely strong, she doesn't seem like a good stubble at first glance.

As if feeling that someone was watching her, Victoria subconsciously wanted to look at him too.

Maria saw Victoria's figure, but before she could see her face clearly, Her heart skipped a beat. She knew that the woman in the distance was Victoria, Who she had been hiding from for more than three hundred years.

At this moment, Maria's heartbeat stalled a little,

And her palms were also covered with sweat due to mixed emotions of anger and nervousness.

Seeing that her face was pale and she was a little nervous,

Charlie quickly took her into his arms and said in a distressed voice:

"I told you not to stay up late, you did not listen,"

"The key point is that you drank a lot Alcohol, it must be hard to stay up until now, right?"

Maria knew that Charlie had noticed her abnormality,

And while he was deliberately confusing Victoria, she was grateful,

But also somewhat nervous and shy because of being hugged by Charlie.

She forced herself to adjust her state, and said softly:

"I stayed up all night just to watch the sunrise with you..."

"After we got together, we have never watched the sunrise together."

Seeing her coming over slowly, Charlie felt relieved.

From the corner of his eye, he sensed that Victoria might be observing them,

So he deliberately glanced at her position, then deliberately lowered his voice,

And said to Maria beside him. "Look, baby, someone has come to climb the mountain so early!"

Maria looked at it pretending to be curious, and then said:

“And she seems to be alone. Could it be that she climbed the mountains for the sunrise?”

“Doesn’t that mean she left before dawn?”

Charlie casually said, “Who knows, maybe she’s like us,”

“Looking for a place to stay on the mountainside for one night.”

Then, Charlie said again: “But it’s still a bit strange. The altitude of the Mountain is not the highest nearby.”

“Why bother to climb here to watch the sunrise? What’s even more strange is that she is alone...”

In the conversation between Charlie and Maria, Victoria heard everything clearly.

The conversation between the two did not arouse any doubts in her.

On the contrary, after Charlie took the initiative to express doubts to her,

It immediately reversed the situation imperceptibly,

Making Victoria realize in her heart that she appeared here alone so early in the morning.

In the eyes of others, it is indeed a little unreasonable.

At this time, Victoria’s heart had changed from trying to discover the anomaly to trying to cover up her own anomaly.

Therefore, she suddenly hesitated and thought to herself:

“If I go to worship in front of the senior’s tomb now, will these people notice anything unusual?”

## Chapter 5673

Charlie's release of Meng Changsheng's portrait in Aurous Hill really gave Victoria a great shock,

So that the one thing she was most worried about when she came to China this time was to expose her identity.

The young people camping not far away, in her opinion, should be students who are still studying.

She is not worried at all about who among these people can threaten her safety,

But she has just heard Charlie and Maria's conversation,

Knowing that her actions are already a bit suspicious in the eyes of others,

In this case, she is really hesitant.

And her attention was indeed drawn to another direction unconsciously by Charlie.

Now she was only worried about being suspected by others,

But never doubted the identities of these young people.

While Victoria was still hesitating,

A golden glow spread down, and the sun had already risen from the east.

The young people around Charlie, who were still excited after staying up all night,

Immediately became excited after seeing this ray of sunlight.

While shouting loudly that the sun came out,

They quickly took out their mobile phones to take pictures and record videos.

Seeing that no one was paying attention to her,

Victoria walked towards the woods behind the camp.

At this time, she was only seventy to eighty meters away from Charlie and Maria.

It's just that her attention was not on these young people at all,

And she was in a silent state, and she didn't release her aura to investigate others,

So she didn't notice any abnormalities at all.

At this time, Charlie was carefully looking at Victoria from the corner of his eye.

This woman looks to be in her thirties,

With a mature and charming appearance.

Whether it is appearance or temperament, she can definitely be regarded as the top of the top.

And in her hand, she was carrying some yellow paper and a wine jar.

The yellow paper looked very rough, and it was probably extremely difficult to buy nowadays.

Charlie could tell that the yellow paper and the wine jar Victoria was carrying must be for Warren,

And being able to come to worship him showed that in Victoria's heart, she didn't just hate Warren.

Maria was also a little surprised.

Originally, she thought that Victoria would come here aggressively,

And will vent her anger in front of her parents' tomb,

But she didn't expect that Victoria would come here with the things used for showing respect.

The other people who were camping together also saw Victoria who was alone at this time,

And for a while, everyone whispered to each other secretly.

Someone said: "Hey, is that elder sister here to sweep the tomb?"

Someone echoed: "It looks like, but there is no tomb here."

Could it be a tomb?"

Ruslen said calmly: "Even if it is a tomb, there is nothing to make a fuss about."

"Before Chang'an built the subway, it was said that thousands of ancient tombs were discovered during the construction of only one of the lines."

"Look here It sounds like an outstanding person, and it's normal to have a few ancient tombs."

Charlie also nodded at the moment and said:

"Ruslen is right, it's not surprising that others come to visit the tomb."

"Let's not talk about others behind their backs,"

"Just in case we make it embarrassing and impolite for others if they overheard."

Ruslen nodded and said: "Linye's point of view is the same as mine,"

"Let's not bother with other people's affairs,"

"And when the sun rises, everyone should take the time to go back to the tent to rest for a while and get some sleep."

"I stayed up all night, I didn't feel tired at first, but now I feel a bit overwhelmed."

Everyone said that their feelings were the same as his,

But they didn't know that it was a sequela after the aura in the liquor had been exhausted.

## Chapter 5674

Maria suddenly took out her mobile phone at this time,  
And said to Charlie: "Honey, before the sun's light is so strong,"  
"Let's take a picture with the sun and take some selfies."

He guessed that she was wanting to take a picture of Victoria,  
He nodded understandingly, then took out his mobile phone and turned on the  
camera function of the front camera.

After opening the camera, the two turned around tacitly,  
With their backs facing the rising sun and Victoria, and took a group photo.  
After taking the photo, Charlie quickly clicked on the photo to enlarge it.

Thanks to the high resolution of the front camera,  
Victoria's appearance was clearly captured in the photo.

Afterwards, while adjusting his posture, Charlie took a group photo with Maria,  
And kept capturing photos related to Victoria through the photos taken by the  
front camera.

But it's a pity that Victoria entered the woods very quickly,  
And the front camera didn't have a telephoto function.  
It's a bit of a dream to take pictures of her in this situation.

So, he put his phone in his pocket and continued to pretend to enjoy the sunrise  
with Maria.

But from the corner of his eye, he was still staring at Victoria carefully.

After searching for a while in the woods, Victoria chose a relatively empty place,  
And then took out a hammer and a cylinder made of wooden handle from her bag.  
Immediately afterwards, she threw the yellow paper on the ground,  
Pressed the cylinder against the yellow paper, and then hit the head of the cylinder  
heavily with a hammer.

In this way, circular outlines were left on the rough yellow paper with a square  
space in the middle.

This is the "making fire" that ordinary people have rarely come into contact with.  
Although the yellow paper is rough in workmanship, it is highly flammable.  
It is still the best choice for many people in rural areas to sweep graves and pay  
homage to relatives.

And the cylinder of the wooden handle is the mold for this purpose.

At this moment, Victoria deftly separated out a stack of yellow paper,  
Spread it flat on the ground, supported it with a mold, started from the upper left corner,

And hammered the tail of the cylinder violently, leaving a circle on the stack of yellow paper.

The shape of the outer circle and the square circle in the middle.

This, in fact, represents the copper coins used in ancient China.

Copper coins were the main currency of the ancients.

Therefore, the copper coins produced in this way were burned for the dead,

Which was the real paper money in the hearts of the ancients.

Burning such paper money to the deceased can ensure that he has no worries about food and clothing on the other side.

This way of burning paper money is basically hard to see nowadays.

In the current funeral industry, no one is still producing such cheap and simple products.

Even the most basic paper money is printed with the head of the Jade Emperor, Writing Banknotes printed on the face of the bank.

But for Victoria, she still has the habit of using yellow paper to burn money to pay homage to the souls of the dead,

So this time she came to southern Yunnan, she specially brought yellow paper and the mold that has been used for hundreds of years.

At this time, she had completely ignored the young people she met just now.

From her point of view, those people were not in the same world as her,

So she didn't need to pay attention to them, let alone care about them.

The mental journey was almost exactly the same as Maria's prediction, Maria bet right!

So, after she concentrated on putting all the yellow paper on dense copper coins, She got up to pick up a convenient branch, and then, she used that branch to clear a flat area on the ground.

Then, she took out the lighter, ignited one of the yellow papers,

And then threw the ignited yellow paper back to the center of the flat ground,

And then began to fill it with paper one by one.

Looking at the burning flames and the ashes rolled up by the heat wave,

Victoria's eyes were filled with tears, and she whispered in a voice that only she could hear:

"Warren, I am here to see you..."

## Chapter 5675

Victoria hadn't come to pay respects at Warren's tomb for many years.

Although she hasn't come back for hundreds of years,

She can still tell where the tomb is.

Even though the tombstone had been destroyed by herself,

And even those graves had disappeared with the passage of time,

She was still able to find the location.

Although she knew that Warren's body was not buried here,

Victoria still regarded this place as the closest place to her senior.

Her mood at the moment was filled with sadness, remorse, and even a bit of resentment.

When she had mixed feelings, the past events of that year rushed to her heart like a tide.

At the beginning, she attacked Warren impulsively because of love and hatred,

And Warren disappeared from her eyes in an instant.

She expected that he must be sent to Maria by the ring given by her master,

So she hurried out of the mountain to the southern Yunnan to find them.

However, the road from 100 Mountains to southern Yunnan was dangerous and far away,

And Victoria was one of the most important criminals wanted by the Qing government.

By the time she tried her best to get to southern Yunnan,

Maria had disappeared, and Warren had already been buried.

It was only then that Victoria knew that her senior,

Whose cultivation was higher than her own, was actually stabbed to death by her own sword.

In fact, she didn't really want to kill Warren at first.

All she wanted was to snatch away the Everlasting Green Pill and the ring that Master had left for Warren.

Moreover, in her opinion, with Warren's strength,

Even if he was stabbed in the heart with her sword, he would never die because of it.

After all, Warren also mastered spiritual energy.

Although Warren's cultivation base was not high at that time,

And his spiritual energy was not pure and abundant, he could use spiritual energy to temporarily stabilize the injury,

And then slowly use spiritual energy to heal the wound Recovery,

Within a month or two, he would definitely be able to recover as before.

When she arrived in southern Yunnan and made many inquiries and found out that Warren had been buried,

She couldn't believe it was true anyway.

However, after insinuation from many people,

She finally confirmed that Warren was indeed dead,

And it was his daughter who organized the funeral for him.

At that moment, Victoria regretted it too much.

But no matter how regretful she was, she couldn't bring the dead back to life,

So she turned regret into anger, feeling that Warren would rather die than accept her sincerity for a woman who had been dead for many years.

Later, she brutally destroyed the tombstones of Warren and Maria's mother,

And she never came here again after that.

She never came, not because she had let go of Warren in her heart.

On the contrary, after more than three hundred years,

She still couldn't forget that handsome and imposing man.

At this time, Victoria, who was kneeling in front of Warren's tomb, whispered emotionally:

"Warren, I still clearly remember the first time I saw you;"

"At that time, you were thirteen or fourteen years old,"

"And I was only twelve or thirteen years old, but I fell in love with you at first sight;"

"From that day on, I had been looking forward to your coming home to see my elder brother,"

"So that I could see you, outside the door of brother's room,"

"I eavesdropped on your chatting about important matters..."

"I heard that you wanted to abandon literature and join the military."

"Looking forward to being able to fight side by side with brother.

"At that time, I even felt that I should always be by your side in this life;"

"Wherever you wanted to go, I wanted to go with you;"

## Chapter 5676

Victoria continued her monologue: "Whatever you wanted to do, I would accompany to do that;"

"So, even if I took up the sword and went with the Qing army to fight in front battle, I had nothing to say;"

"From the day when you and elder brother established the Warriors Den,"

"I was the third member of it;"

"At that time, you and elder brother strongly opposed my participation,"

"But I shaved my head, I wanted to fight side by side with the two of you no matter what you say:"

"At the time I said it was for the righteousness of the nation,"

"But in fact, I was just a girl, so I didn't want to care about the country and the nation's righteousness."

"I didn't care whether this country belongs to Han people or Manchu people,"

"And I didn't care whether the emperor's surname was Zhu or Aixinjueluo."

"I just wanted to follow you, be with my beloved man."

"If my beloved man said that this country should belong to the Han people and that the emperor should be surnamed Zhu,"

"Then I would take up swords with you and fight the Qing army to the end;"

"If my beloved man said, no matter what Who owns the palace,"

"He just wanted to disarm and return to the fields, and live a stable life,"

"Then I would immediately put aside the sword and spend life in the field, and would never change my loyalty;"

Victoria burst into tears at this point.

She burned the last piece of yellow paper, choked up, and said:

"Warren, I thought that my love for you would surely impress you in time,"

"But it was only at the last moment that I realized that you, you had always been there."

"But in the end, you never loved me even the slightest bit..."

"I had been by your side since the year of the golden hairpin,"

"Until you were 40 years old, twenty-eight years spent in countless fights and battles,"

"And a narrow escape. During this period, countless good boys confide their hearts to me,"

"But I had never looked at any of them even once!"

"But your rejection broke me. I feel resentful in my heart..."

At this time, she was sobbing, unable to utter a word.

Charlie didn't dare to use his spiritual energy,

He could only see Victoria's hazy back shaking,

As if crying, but he couldn't confirm it.

Although Maria at the side couldn't see Victoria's back clearly,

She could see the mottled flames in the forest,

And her expression and mood were extremely complicated for a while.

Originally, Maria thought that Victoria came here to vent her anger on her father.

But she never expected that Victoria would bring yellow paper and wine to pay respects to her father's tomb.

At this time, Victoria wiped away her tears, opened the jar of old wine,

Poured the wine on the burnt yellow paper, and said in a low voice:

"Warren, in the past three hundred years, I have witnessed the rapid development of this world."

"The more it develops like this, the more I don't want to die;"

"But if I can't find the Evergreen pill or the method to refine it,"

"Then I will only have a hundred years left to live!"

"Your only daughter, Maria, has been avoiding me for more than three hundred years."

"In fact, I have no ill intentions towards her."

"As long as she is willing to give the ring to me,"

"I will naturally won't embarrass her, but if she continues to hide,"

"Then my patience will gradually run out, and at that time,"

"If I do something that displeases you, please don't be offended."

After finishing speaking, Victoria paused slightly, and said again:

"By the way, I plan to go to the Hundred Mountains next time to see if I can find the secret treasure left by Master back then."

"If I can find it, I can forget about your daughter,"

"But if I can't find it, then I'm afraid I can only find a solution for Maria..."

Afterward, Victoria poured all the wine on the ground,

And said in a low voice: "Warren, I am leaving,"

"And after I acquire what I want, I will definitely come to pay respects to you again!"

After pouring out all the wine in the wine jar,

She stood up slowly and walked out of the woods.

She didn't look at those noisy young people sighing towards the sun anymore,

And walked down the mountain without looking back.

She never dreamed that Maria, whom she had been looking for more than three hundred years, was now among those noisy young people...

## Chapter 5677

After Victoria, who didn't notice anything unusual, left, Charlie and Maria finally breathed a sigh of relief.

Everyone who stayed up all night was already tired, and everyone was so sleepy that they couldn't keep their eyes open.

Several people rushed back to the tent to rest one after another,

And Ruslen couldn't stand it any longer and said to Charlie and Maria:

"It's been a long time since I stayed up all night,"

"And my body really can't take it. You two must be tired too,"

"Why don't you go back first? Rest in the tent to catch up on sleep,"

"We will set off to Erdaogou fifteen kilometers away in the afternoon, do you want to come with us?"

Charlie shook his head: "We will not go, and plan to drive around again."

Bellina Curiously asked: "Where are you two going?"

Charlie said casually: "We plan to go to Lijiang to chill and stay for a few days."

In fact, the next stop planned by Charlie and Maria is southwest of southern Yunnan Bian Bian,

The reason why Charlie said it was Li Jiang was mainly to avoid risks.

Ruslen nodded and said with a smile: "We have been to Lijiang,"

"It's very good, you can go and have fun for a few days."

After talking, Ruslen thought of something and quickly asked:

"Could it be that you two are going to leave now?"

Charlie said: "That's right, we should go now."

"This..." Ruslen hurriedly said: "You haven't slept all night,"

"And it's not safe to drive. You should rest first and recharge your batteries before leaving. It will not be too late."

"No." Charlie said with a smile: "The upcoming schedule is relatively tight,"

"So I won't rest here, and it won't be too late to take a good rest when we arrive in Lijiang,"

"After all, it's not too far away."

Ruslen nodded and said: "That's right, it's just over an hour's drive.

After arriving, after getting a room in a hotel, you can have a good rest."

Seeing that Charlie and Maria really wanted to leave,

Bellina couldn't help feeling a little regretful she said:

"I thought I could spend a few more days with you,"

"But I didn't expect you to leave so soon."

"I don't know if there will be a chance to see you again in the future."

For Bellina, she doesn't know when her life will come to an end in the future,

But she knows that this day will not be too long.

Therefore, facing this kind of new friend who can be chatted with,

She is still a little bit reluctant.

She feels that life is short, and she is afraid that this parting will be forever.

Ruslen knew what she was thinking, so he gently held her waist,

And comforted her with a smile: "Stop thinking about it, God will take care of us."

Maria looked sideways at Charlie, she pursed her lips slightly, just looking at Charlie who didn't speak.

Although Maria didn't speak, Charlie also knew what she meant when she looked at him.

Seeing that other people did not go back to the tent to rest,

Charlie said, "Old Hu, why don't you and Bellina send us off?"

Ruslen was slightly taken aback, and then readily agreed, saying:

"Okay, we two will be sending you off."

As he said, Ruslen asked again: "By the way, do you need me to pack the tent for you?"

"No." Charlie waved his hand: "We won't take the tent with us, leave it for those who need it. "

Maria hesitated for a moment, and summoned up the courage to ask Charlie:

"Honey, can I bring the tent? I'm afraid it will be useful in the future."

Charlie heard her say this, and said straightforwardly:

"Okay, I'll take the tent. Come on."

Ruslen also hurriedly said: "I'll help you."

The two packed the tent together, and Ruslen couldn't help teasing Charlie:

"This tent was set up for nothing yesterday, and you didn't use it to sleep for a while."

"Yes."

Charlie smiled and said: "I didn't expect everyone to have such a good time and didn't sleep all night."

Ruslen helped Charlie pick up the floor mat and sleeping bag, and said,

"I'll help you with these."

# Chapter 5678

Then the group of four walked towards the direction of the mountain together.

Walking down the Mountain, there was no one else on the short mountain road except four people,

So Charlie said to Ruslen and Bellina: "By the way, Old Hu, Bellina,"

"Yesterday you were talking about JX Pharmaceutical."

"Because the matter is more sensitive, I couldn't talk about it in front of everyone."

Ruslen asked curiously: "What's so mysterious?"

Charlie explained: "I have something to do with the JX Pharmaceutical you mentioned."

"I am very familiar with the person in charge,"

"If you want to get the opportunity to experiment with the JX Pill, I can push it for you."

Ruslen and Bellina were both extremely surprised and Ruslen blurted out:

"LinYE, are you kidding me?"

"Do you really know the person in charge of JX Pharmaceutical?!"

Charlie said seriously: "How could I joke with you about life-threatening matters."

Ruslen quickly asked: "You know, which business is it? The person in charge?"

Charlie said: "I know the person in charge of the entire JX Pharmaceutical, Liang Weo,"

"And he is also fully responsible for the clinical trials of JX recovery Pills."

"Based on my friendship with him, I will give him a mention. It shouldn't be a problem to fight for two places."

The two looked incredible.

Hearing Liang Wei's name, they are naturally feeling like thunder.

No one knows who the real boss of JX Pharmaceutical is,

But almost everyone who knows JX Pharmaceutical has heard of Liang's name.

Everyone knows that Liang is the CEO of JX Pharmaceutical,

And he decides all the big and small matters of JX Pharmaceutical,

And he personally checks the test quota of the cancer pill this time.

It is said that this person is selfless and upright.

Many people knelt and begged him for a quota with a huge amount of cash, but he was still unmoved,

And could still follow the fair algorithm that Charlie told him to advance through the points system review work.

For ordinary people who want to see him, it is even more impossible for them.

Liang currently does not go out to meet anyone except dealers and suppliers.

Most people just want to see him, and there is no chance at all, let alone ask him for help.

Therefore, Ruslen couldn't believe that Charlie had a personal relationship with Liang.

He couldn't hide his excitement and asked subconsciously:

"LinYE... are you kidding me? Do you really know Mr. Wei?"

"Yes."

Charlie nodded and said, "You two are in a special situation."

"Am I going to joke with you about such an important matter?"

Ruslen quickly waved his hand and said, "No, I didn't mean that,"

"I am just a little too shocked..."

Charlie smiled and said, "It's okay to be shocked, don't worry."

"It's fine to delay the serious business. If you believe me,"

"I suggest you use your mobile phone to check the air ticket from Dali to Aurous Hill now."

"After you arrive in Aurous Hill, you will go to the gate of JX Pharmaceutical Factory immediately."

"You can write down my phone number, call me when you arrive,"

"And I will arrange the rest, you don't have to worry."

Ruslen and Bellina glanced at each other, and everyone could see the disbelief in each other's eyes.

But Ruslen still decided to believe in Charlie, so he blurted out:

"Okay! Let's look at the air ticket now! Linye!"

"No matter whether this matter is successful or not,"

"We thank you from the bottom of our hearts!"

Charlie smiled slightly and said: "You don't need to be so polite."

"It's not too late to thank me when you really get the quota."

He said again: "Okay, you don't have to send us off anymore."

"We should leave now. If you need to say goodbye to everyone, you can go again."

"Go back, and pack up your things by the way."

Ruslen nodded heavily, and said, "Let's go back and say goodbye to everyone."

Charlie warned: "Don't tell them what you are going to do,"

"After all, this is also a back door entry. Don't make it public."

"Okay!" Ruslen said without hesitation: "Don't worry, we won't tell anyone!"

Charlie thought of something and said with a smile: "By the way, after you arrive in Aurous Hill,"

"If you can find James Smith, let him bring his son with you to JX Pharmaceutical,"

"And Liang will make arrangements for him too!"

# Chapter 5679

Charlie didn't have any sympathy for James.

In this world, there are so many parents of children with cancer,

And James is just one of thousands of people, nothing special about him.

And most importantly, he originally had a chance to save his son's life,

But his ignorance and arrogance made him give up this chance by himself.

In this case, he no longer deserves anyone's sympathy.

Charlie never thought about giving him a chance again.

However, what surprised him was that according to what Ruslen said,

After James met him last time and told him that he had to pay first if he wanted what he wanted,

He actually resigned from his post and job as the person in charge of the FDA.

He sold his family property and took his child to Aurous Hill to do charity.

Although Charlie is very clear that the reason why he did this is most likely to win a chance for his son,

But what Charlie admires is that he really worked hard to do it after all.

In this case, he represented Aurous Hill to give him a little return as a reciprocity.

And even more coincidentally, Ruslen, who met by chance at the mountain, actually knew James.

Must say that there is still some chance in this.

Because of this, Charlie made a temporary decision to give Ruslen and Bellina a chance to survive,

And at the same time to give James's cancer-stricken son a chance.

This also confirms a truth from the side, that is, actions are more important than anything else.

If James did not make such a move after being rejected by Charlie,

Then his son would not be able to get the survival pill until his death.

But fortunately, he really took action.

This is the main reason why Charlie wanted to save his son.

Ruslen didn't expect that Charlie would be willing to use favors to help him just after hearing himself tell the story of James,

So he couldn't help asking excitedly:

"Linye, can you really help Smith's son fight for him?" A quota?"

Charlie smiled lightly, and said: "After you arrive in Aurous Hill,"

"Just ask him to take his son to JX Pharmaceutical, and I will naturally arrange the rest."

Ruslen gratefully said: "Thank you, Linye! Really very sincere Thank you!"

Charlie patted him on the shoulder and said:

"You guys go back and say goodbye to the others, so hurry up. We will leave first."

Ruslen nodded, and wanted to say something,

But Charlie had already turned around and left side by side with Maria.

Watching the two disappear from sight, Bellina still said in disbelief:

"Ruslen, do you think what Linye said is credible?"

Ruslen said seriously: "I don't know if it's believable,"

"But I, I can Indirectly verify whether he is credible from other aspects."

Bellina asked suspiciously: "How can you indirectly verify?"

Ruslen looked at her and asked, "Do you think Linye is a bad person?"

Bellina thought for a moment, then shook her head and said:

"I don't think he should be a bad person, and..."

"I don't think he should be a rich second generation who can only spend money."

"I always feel that this person is a bit deep,"

"And I don't know if it is my illusion."

Ruslen smiled slightly and said: "I don't dare to say whether he is deep or not,"

"But I think he is not a bad person."

Then, Ruslen said again: "The indirect verification I said is to first feel that Linye is not a person."

"If he gives us the impression that he is a bad person,"

"Then we should not believe anything he says;"

"But since we all think that he is not a bad person, then we have to consider a common sense issue,"

"If a person is not a bad person, then will he make fun of other people's life and death issues?"

# Chapter 5680

After that, Ruslen asked himself and answered:

"I think this question should be negative."

"A good person does not dare to say how great and brilliant he is,"

"But he will never take other people's jokes about life and death."

"So, based on this, I think that if Linye is not fully sure, he will definitely not say such a thing."

After hearing what he said, Bellina couldn't help being enlightened and murmured:

"You are right! After you say that, I don't think Linye would joke with us."

After finishing speaking, she couldn't help but feel excited, she said,

"Then...then do we really have a chance to get the clinical trial opportunity of JX Pharmaceutical?!"

"If that's the case, wouldn't we be able to survive?"

Ruslen nodded solemnly and said: "I think we have a great chance this time!"

After speaking, Ruslen took out his mobile phone to search for the ticket information, and blurted out:

"There is a flight from Dali to Aurous Hill at two o'clock in the afternoon."

"I will book the ticket now. Let's hurry up and go back and say hello to everyone, and then go to the airport!"

After Charlie and Maria went down the mountain, they came to Shuanglang to pick up the car, set off from Shuanglang, and drove to Poole.

Poole is the final resting place of Maria's parents,

And it is also the first stop on Maria's escape route.

One of the purposes of Charlie's accompaniment to South Yunnan this time is to accompany her to revisit the old place,

So this time, not only will he accompany Maria to Poole.

He has to go to Banna again from Poole to find the Tianchi in Maria's painting.

As for Victoria's whereabouts, Charlie no longer cares about it.

Because he knows very well that since Victoria has appeared in Guibei Mountain,

It means that she has completely integrated into the world this time.

Since she has completely integrated into the world, she will definitely be recorded by various surveillance systems.

Victoria will inevitably be monitored and photographed.

With Ethan's help in calling out the surveillance video,

He will be able to restore the general movement of Victoria in the country.

Therefore, Charlie felt that he didn't need to pay attention to Victoria's situation now.

With Victoria's strength, it would only be self-defeating if he approached rashly.

It's better to let her go where she wants to go first,

He will just follow the vines and sort out her route.

As long as he can finally find out where she entered the Hundred Mountains,

The location of Meng Changsheng's retreat can basically be accurate to within a radius of a hundred miles, or even smaller.

When the two were driving to Poole, Ruslen and Bellina took the afternoon flight to Aurous Hill.

The last time they came to Aurous Hill, although they didn't come together, they both had the same expectation.

However, both of them failed the clinical trial screening of JX Pharmaceutical,

And when they left Aurous Hill, they were both extremely disappointed.

And they didn't expect that they would return to Aurous Hill again before they died.

Along the way, neither of them expressed any views on whether the trip could be fulfilled.

When the plane landed safely at Aurous Hill Airport, Ruslen called James immediately.

Because both of them are from the United States,

One is a cancer patient and the other has a family member as a cancer patient,

So he had exchanged phone numbers with Smith,

On the one hand out of appreciation and respect for James, on the other hand, because in order to stay in contact as both were foreigners here.

At this time, the plane was still taxiing, and Ruslen had already called James's mobile phone number in China.

The phone was connected, and James Smith on the other end of the phone asked curiously:

"Ruslen, what do you want from me?"

Ruslen hurriedly asked: "Mr. Smith, what are you doing now?"

James said: "I am helping the homeless at Aurous Hill Old Church,"

"What is going on? Do you have something to do with you?"

Ruslen said quickly: "Mr. Smith, please deal with the matter at hand quickly."

"Take Jimmy to wait for me at the gate of JX Pharmaceutical,"

"And Bellina and I will come directly from the airport, and we will meet there!"

# Chapter 5681

"Go to JX Pharmaceutical?"

James asked subconsciously, and then asked in surprise: "What are you going to JX Pharmaceutical for?"

Ruslen said with a little excitement: "A friend helped me and Bellina with the trial entry."

"He seems to have something to do with the senior executives of JX Pharmaceutical."

"I asked him to give Jimmy a quota, and he agreed. We are rushing over there to connect with him, and you should bring Jimmy there as well. Let's go!"

James couldn't believe his ears, and asked in confusion: "Haven't you two already been kicked out by them?"

"Jimmy can't meet their points standard, what is the origin of your friend? How can he have such a great ability?"

Ruslen said: "I don't know what his origin is, he said that he has a good relationship with Liang Wei of JX Pharmaceutical,"

"Although there is nothing to prove that he really knows Mr. Wei, but I feel he is not joking with us, so I am somewhat sure about this matter."

"How is it possible..." James said very seriously: "Ruslen, you don't know many inside stories about JX Pharmaceutical."

"I understand, but I can tell you clearly that even Liang is just a spokesperson for the boss behind JX Pharmaceutical, and he absolutely dares not open the back door to anyone in this matter."

Ruslen said: "But he said he is very sincere, I feel like he really doesn't seem to be joking with us,"

"Anyway, you are in Aurous Hill, and we have already returned, bring Jimmy over to try with us, even if it doesn't work, there is no loss."

James hesitated for a moment, then asked him: "Ruslen, what is the name of your friend? How did you meet him?"

Ruslen said: "His name is Linye, and we met while hiking."

"Linye?" James was even more surprised: "If the person you know is called Charlie, then this matter should be fine, but Linye... I haven't heard of this person..."

Saying that he then asked: "How old is this Linye you mentioned?"

Ruslen said: "Looks like he's only in his early 20s."

James muttered in a low voice with some disappointment: "In his early 20s...then it doesn't look like Charlie, Charlie is almost 30 years old..."

Ruslen said to him: "Mr. Smith, how is Jimmy's condition?"

"Not very good..." James said in a very decadent voice: "The doctor here in Aurous Hill said that his cancer cells have spread to many places. Organs and cancer cells are already somewhat immune to chemotherapy drugs,"

"After this course of chemotherapy, if there is not much improvement, I am afraid that we can only use palliative therapy, in that case, it is basically the end stage..."

Ruslen asked: "Where is Jimmy now? Is he in church with you?"

"No." James said: "Jimmy is undergoing chemotherapy in the day ward of Aurous Hill People's Hospital, and his mother is with him."

Ruslen Asked in surprise: "Your wife is here too?"

"Yes." James said: "She settled things in the United States a few days ago, sold the house, and then with daughter came over here recently,"

"Both children have been entrusted to her to take care of, and I mainly focus on the charity."

Ruslen sighed softly and asked him: "Then...Mr. Smith, are you going to bring Jimmy here? If you come together, I am waiting for you at the gate of JX Pharmaceutical."

James pondered for a moment, gritted his teeth, and said, "It is better to believe what you have than to believe what you don't have."

"So, I'll go to the hospital to pick up Jimmy now, and then go to JX Meet you at the entrance!"

Ruslen said: "No problem, let's meet at the entrance."

Then, Ruslen urged: "By the way, Mr. Smith, my friend said that this is a special operation to a certain extent. , let us not say anything."

James said without hesitation: "I understand!"

...

James hung up the phone and said to his friends in the church: "I have something to do, so please excuse me."

Most of the friends in the church are from the United States like Smith, and some of them came to Aurous Hill earlier.

Due to religious beliefs, they soon got acquainted with each other in the church,

And then started some small charity together with the church.

James is also a Christian. After he brought his son to Aurous Hill, he instinctively found the church and got acquainted with everyone.

Several people knew about his condition, and knew that he had a terminally ill son who was currently undergoing chemotherapy in the hospital,

But it was said that it was only a delay in the process of death. On the whole, Smith's son was running out of time.

So, hearing that Smith had something to leave for, one of them quickly asked:

"James, is something wrong? Do you need our help?"

James shook his head and said, "I'm going to pick up my son, and then go to JX to try our luck at the pharmacy and see if there is any chance."

The man nodded and said, "If you need help with anything, please contact us anytime."

"Okay," James responded, left the church in a hurry, and took a taxi to the People's Hospital.

When they came to Aurous Hill, they first took their child and established a file in Aurous Hill People's Hospital,

And then began to use the same regimen as in the United States for chemotherapy here.

At the beginning, he lived in a hotel near the hospital and waited for his wife, Jenny.

After arranging everything in the United States and rushing to Aurous Hill with their daughter, they rented a house near the hospital.

James followed Charlie's advice and was busy doing charities in Aurous Hill every day.

His wife, according to the hospital's requirements, took the child to the hospital when chemotherapy and examinations were needed.

Jimmy's cancer has basically entered the terminal stage. The chemotherapy drugs currently used are the best and the latest on the market.

But even so, they cannot cure the cancer. What can be done is to delay the spread of cancer cells as much as possible.

For cancer patients, the best result is to find carcinoma in situ, which can be completely cured after resection.

If the cancer has metastasized, the best result is to find available targeted drugs.

However, different people have different genes.

Some people are lucky enough to find the target of targeted drugs in their genes,

And they can rely on targeted drugs to achieve very good therapeutic effects.

## Chapter 5682

Some people are unlucky and cannot find any target in their genes, so they cannot be treated with targeted drugs.

With no targeted drugs available, only traditional chemotherapy and radiotherapy remain.

In his current situation, for Jimmy, chemotherapy is the last barrier, but James is very clear that this last barrier is already in jeopardy, and the time it can last may only be a few months.

James came to the day ward of the hospital with ease. At this time, on every bed in the ward was lying on a cancer patient undergoing chemotherapy.

Among these cancer patients, Jimmy was the youngest.

Originally, there was a 5-year-old child with end-stage leukemia. Some time ago, the child passed the approval of JX Pharmaceutical, got a place for clinical trials, and was transferred to the internal laboratory of JX Pharmaceutical for treatment.

At that time, James was very envious, but there was nothing he could do about it.

According to the points system of JX Pharmaceutical, children with young age, severe symptoms, and family difficulties are often given priority for selection.

At this time, Jimmy was lying on the hospital bed. His body was already emaciated, his hair had completely fallen out, and he looked very fragile. At this moment, his eyes were slightly closed, and he seemed to have fallen asleep.

James's wife, Jane James, was sitting tiredly on a stool by the bed.

Seeing her husband coming in, she asked in surprise,

"James, why are you here? Isn't the church going to prepare relief for the homeless this afternoon?"

James didn't answer her question, but looked at the child on the bed and asked her, "Is Jimmy asleep?"

Jenny nodded slightly, and said distressedly: "His vomiting is getting worse and worse."

"The doctor added some anti-emetic drugs to his chemotherapy drugs, but the newly added drugs will make him drowsy."

Saying, With red eyes, Jenny said in a low voice: "Smith, the results of enhanced CT came out two days ago."

"Jimmy's cancer cells are still growing and spreading. This week's chemotherapy has basically not improved."

"The doctor said that his physical condition has begun to worsen rapidly."

"The decline is like an elevator falling out of control from a high altitude."

"Chemotherapy drugs could barely slow down his falling speed, but at most, it extended from two months to two and a half months, and it is difficult to reach even three months... .."

At this point, Jenny covered her face and broke down in tears.

James hurriedly stepped forward to embrace her in his arms, and comforted her in a low voice:

"Don't cry, there may be other opportunities."

Jenny shook her head and said, "I don't want to hold any hope blindly anymore. I wonder if we should stop Jimmy's chemotherapy and take him back to the United States for the remaining few months."

"His grandparents, grandfather, and maternal grandmother are all waiting to see him."

"Returning to the United States can at least save him from dying away from the family."

James said: "There is one last chance now, although I don't know how likely this chance is to succeed, but as long as there is still a chance, it must be much better than no chance."

As he said that, he said to Jenny: "Let the nurse pull Jimmy's needle, I'm going to take him out!"

Jenny asked in surprise, "Where are you taking him?"

James remembered that Ruslen had told him to not reveal it to the outside world, so he said:

"Don't ask so much first, I promised the other party not to talk nonsense,"

"But don't worry, if there is any result, I will tell you as soon as possible!"

Jenny couldn't figure out why her husband suddenly wanted to take her son out.

Even though his son is dying, he still regards chemotherapy as the last straw for his son.

Seeing that her husband was about to take the child out without waiting for her son to finish chemotherapy,

She quickly stopped her and said, "Are you crazy? No matter what, we have to wait until the child's chemotherapy is over!"

James waved his hand: "I can't wait, I'm going to take him out now."

As he said that before Jenny pressed the calling bell,"

"He took a step forward and pulled out his son's infusion needle, then picked up his sleeping son and walked out.

Shocked and angry, Jenny chased all the way out, and reprimanded from behind:

"James! You put Jimmy down! He still has half of the chemotherapy drugs,"

"And you will kill him like this!"

James did not speak, and the ground under his feet was gaining distance faster and he ran out of the hospital as if escaping.

Jenny hurriedly chased him out of the hospital. When she saw James stopping the car at the door, she stomped her feet angrily, and cried and asked,

"James, what are you doing? No matter what, you can't make fun of your son's life!"

At this time, a taxi stopped in front of James. He was about to get into the car with his son in his arms.

Seeing his wife crying like rain, he hesitated for a moment, turned around, and said in her ear:

"A friend called and said that he can help Jimmy win a clinical trial quota for JX's trials."

"I am still not sure whether this matter is true or whether it will be successful,"

"But the other party told me that this matter is not impossible. That's why I didn't tell you clearly in the hospital."

When Jenny heard this, she was surprised and asked him: "Really?! James, is everything you said true?! Jimmy can really get a Quota for clinical trials?!"

James said in her ear: "Honey, everything is still unknown, so you don't need to be too excited or nervous, keep calm and prepare to pick up the girl from school."

"If this happens, I will inform you, and then we will find a place to celebrate."

"If this fails, I will bring Jimmy back for chemotherapy as soon as possible. You take care of the girl and don't worry."

Jenny nodded quickly, and said: "Okay! Then you take Jimmy there first, I'll wait for your news!"

James kissed his wife's forehead forcefully, turned around got into a taxi, and said to the driver,

"Hi, go to JX Pharmaceutical please!"

...

The current level of secrecy of JX Pharmaceutical is comparable to that of a military institution.

Because there have been many cases of trying to steal the formula of JX Pills before, the Aurous Hill police have listed the vicinity of JX Pharmaceutical as a control area.

This control area is equivalent to creating an artificial buffer zone for JX Pharmaceutical.

In the zone, there are not only police patrols at all times, but also no vehicles are allowed to stop temporarily.

Once they stop, the police will come forward to persuade them to leave.

The only place that outsiders can approach is the main entrance of JX Pharmaceutical.

Here, all visitors must show their ID for registration, and the internal staff of JX Pharmaceutical must come out to pick them up before they can bring people in.

Since the gate is guarded by security guards and also guarded by the police, when outsiders come here, they cannot enter without an appointment.

When James took a taxi and got off at the door, Ruslen and Bellina just arrived.

Seeing James, Ruslen smiled in surprise and said: "Mr. Smith, we meet again!"

"Meet again!" James smiled slightly and asked him, "How do you feel about hiking?"

"Very good indeed." Ruslen said with a smile: "Walking around and seeing more before you lose your ability to move."

James nodded, and couldn't help asking him: "Ruslen, is what you said on the phone true?"

Ruslen took out his mobile phone, looked at Charlie's phone number, and said with some uncertainty:

"If it is true, you will know after I make this call."

Just after finishing speaking, two security guards came forward, and one of them asked: "Hey, do you have an appointment? If you don't have an appointment, you can't stay for a long time, please retreat outside the cordon."

Ruslen said: "Please wait a moment, I will make a call, and my friend has made an appointment with your President Wei."

The security guard was a little surprised, and said in doubt: "With Mr. Wei made an appointment?"

"It seems unlikely, right? Mr. Wei has stopped seeing guests recently, and all those who said they came to see Mr. Wei have basically been persuaded to leave."

Ruslen said: "Specifically I don't know the situation, can you let me make a call first?"

The security guard nodded and said, "It's okay to make a call, but the time can't be too long, because we also have regulations here."

"Okay." Ruslen also knew that the security guard was doing his duty, he naturally couldn't cause trouble for others, so he said,

"Just wait a moment, I'll be fine soon."

After that, he pressed the call button and called Charlie.

Ruslen's heart hung in his throat when the beeping sound of waiting to be answered came from the phone.

Although deep down in his heart he didn't believe that Charlie would make fun of him with such a thing,

But at this time, he was really worried that no one would answer the call, or that the other party would hang up directly.

At this moment, Charlie was still on his way to Poole.

When he received a call from a stranger, he guessed it was Ruslen.

Sure enough, as soon as the phone was connected, Ruslen's breathless voice came over:

"Huh... Linye, it's me, Ruslen... I've already arrived at JX Pharmaceutical..."

Charlie smiled and said: "It's good. Just wait a moment, I'll call Liang now."

Ruslen was a little apprehensive and said in a grateful tone:

"I'm sorry for your inconvenience, Linye..."

Charlie smiled lightly Said: "Don't worry about it."

After that, he hung up Ruslen's phone and called Liang.

The phone rang twice, and Liang's voice came over:

"Master Wade, what are the orders?"

Charlie asked him: "Liang, has the clinical trial quota for JX Renewing Pills been finalized yet?"

Liang hurriedly said: "Master Wade, there is still the last batch of quotas, a total of 50 people,"

"And they are evaluating quickly. It is expected that the final points ranking will be released in two days, and the final batch of full names will be determined by then."

"Okay." Charlie smiled slightly, and said: "By the way, the reason I called you, I want you to add three quotas."

"But they are coming in separately and not disturbing the actual quota."

Liang asked: "Master Wade, do you mean that the last batch should have a total of fifty-three people?"

Charlie hummed: "Yes."

Liang said: "Master Wade, the doses of the medicines are all suitable now, and there is no way to even out the doses of the additional three people."

"If we dilute a part of the medicines of the other fifty people, can we divide them into fifty-three parts?"

"No need." Charlie said casually: "After you take the three of them into treatment, they should be administered according to the normal course of medication."

"I'm out of town for the past few days, and I'll give you the missing medicine when I come back in two days."

Liang didn't think about it. He said: "Okay, Master Wade!"

Charlie said again: "By the way, the three of them are at the gate now, you can go and pick them up in person."

"One is called Ruslen and the other is Bellina. The third is your old acquaintance, James from the US FDA."



# Chapter 5683

"James Smith?!"

Liang was astonished, and couldn't help asking:

"Master Wade, I dare to ask, why did you open him up?"

Charlie smiled and said: "Just when he accidentally triggered the hidden Reward,"

"I told him before that if he really can do charity with his heart without asking for anything in return,"

"JX Pharmaceutical may give him a chance,"

"This time just remove the word "maybe."

Liang said without hesitation Said:

"Okay, Master Wade, don't worry, I'll arrange it."

Charlie said: "The other two are young people who I happened to meet,"

"And they were destined to be with me, so you can make arrangements for them together."

Charlie instructed again: "However after you admit the patient,"

"You put James's son in the children's ward and isolate him from the other two."

"Don't let those two know my identity, but you can find the opportunity to explain James in private,"

"I definitely can't give this favor in a daze,"

"Let this old boy know who gave the opportunity."

Liang immediately said: "I understand Master Wade,"

"When the time comes I will find a chance to explain clearly to him face to face!"

After finishing speaking, Liang remembered something and quickly asked:

"Master Wade, after I meet James this time, do you want me to tell him your real identity?"

Charlie hummed and said: "Tell him straight,"

"I just planned to take this old boy for my own use in the future,"

"This time I will directly recruit him into the group."

Liang asked in surprise: "Master Wade, do you want James? Will he cooperate with us?"

Charlie said: "Not just cooperation, I want him to join us and become a member of JX Pharmaceutical."

Speaking, Charlie said again: "He has resigned from the FDA."

"It is impossible for him to come and leave whenever he wants in a position like the director,"

"So it is definitely not possible to return to the FDA,"

"He has worked in the FDA for many years after all."

"Not only does he have very deep connections within the organization and the North American pharmaceutical industry,"

"But more importantly, he has a very good understanding of the rules of the game in the entire FDA and the North American pharmaceutical field."

"Then he will definitely help JX Pharmaceutical to occupy the North American market in the shortest time!"

After hearing this, Liang said excitedly: "Master Wade is right,"

"If we want to open up the situation in North America, James really is our best candidate!"

Charlie said: "When you meet him, tell him my identity and the stakes in it,"

"And then tell him, I will take time to meet him when I return in a few days."

Liang immediately said: "Okay, Master Wade, I will definitely convey it to him!"

...

At this time, Ruslen, Bellina, and James outside the door were already waiting anxiously.

Even now, they are not sure whether this matter is reliable or not,

And they all know that whether this matter is reliable or not is directly related to the lives of three cancer patients,

So everyone is extremely nervous.

The security guard waited for a while, and when no one came out to pick them up, he stepped forward and said,

"Three, you have already timed out, please move outside the cordon and wait."

Ruslen hurriedly said, "Wait a moment, it is estimated that someone will come to pick us up soon."

The security guard said seriously: "The time has come, and three steps outside the cordon will not affect your waiting."

"When the person who picks you up comes, I will let you in."

# Chapter 5684

Ruslen had no choice but to nod and said, "Okay, let's wait outside the cordon first."

As soon as the words fell, a man said: "Captain Sun, these are my friends, let them in."

Several people turned their heads to look,

Only to realize that the person speaking turned out to be the general manager of JX Pharmaceutical, Liang Wei.

The security guard known as Captain Sun saw Liang coming, and immediately said very politely:

"Mr. Wei, since they are your friends, please help me to register their information."

According to the regulations of JX Pharmaceutical, any visitor from outside must be accessed by internal staff.

And every pick-up employee must also truthfully register the visitor's information,

Which is convenient for unified management, even Liang is no exception.

Liang nodded, looked at the three of them, and said with a smile:

"I know Mr. Smith, and the other two, please show your personal documents, and I will register."

Ruslen couldn't hide his excitement and said: "Wei... Hello Mr. Wei, my name is Ruslen Hu,"

"This is my girlfriend, Bellina Shu,"

"We...we are friends of Linye, he asked us to come to you..."

Liang smiled slightly and said: "I know. He has already called me,"

"Don't worry, I will fulfill what he promised you."

Ruslen and Bellina burst into tears of joy.

In the minds of cancer patients, the status of JX Pharmaceutical is much higher than that of Mayo Clinic.

Being accepted by JX Pharmaceutical for clinical trials indicates that people have completed the U-turn before the gate of hell.

Holding the child James was even more excited and burst into tears.

He looked at Liang and said with great gratitude and shame:

"Mr. Wei, thank you for giving Jimmy this opportunity..."

"Please forgive me for my arrogance and ignorance at the beginning. ..."

Liang said with a smile: "Mr. Smith, the person you want to thank is not me,"

"I will talk to you in detail later."

After that, he took the certificates handed over by Ruslen and Bellina,

And made for them After registering, he said, "Please come with me, I will settle you down now."

They were overjoyed and quickly followed Liang into JX Pharmaceutical.

As soon as you enter the gate of JX Pharmaceutical, you can see several commercial vehicles parked on the roadside inside the door.

Liang pointed to one of them and said to the three people:

"The current JX Pharmaceutical covers a very large area."

"The next clinical trial center is 1.5 kilometers away from the door, let's go there by car."

Several people nodded and followed Liang into the commercial vehicle.

The driver started the car, and Liang began to introduce: "After I received the call just now,"

"I have already arranged the places for clinical trials for you,"

"But our clinical trials are separate for adults and minors,"

"So Mr. Hu and Ms. Shu will be directly assigned to the adult group,"

"Which consists of four patients in one ward, and relatives are not allowed to visit or accompany them,"

"And our own nursing team will be responsible for daily life and necessary life care."

They hastily nodded.

For them, whether they have family members to accompany them is not important,

What is important is that they can accompany each other, and that is enough.

Liang looked at James again at this time and said:

"Mr. Smith, our juvenile group has two patients in one ward, but every minor patient can be accompanied by a family member to take care of them."

"You or your wife can stay and take care of him,"

"But only one person can accompany him at a time."

"If you need to change the person in charge, you need to get a specific pass and register outside the door."

James said without hesitation: "I will accompany him!"

# Chapter 5685

Liang quickly arranged the three of them properly.

Ruslen and Bellina were placed in the adult ward,

While little Jimmy was placed in the children's ward.

Under the guidance of the staff, James completed the hospitalization procedures for his son,

And the whole process was like a dream.

He thought that his son had no chance to participate in the clinical trial of JX Pharmaceutical,

And he was just discussing with his wife whether to send the child to the United States for hospice care,

But he didn't expect that everything would turn upside down in the blink of an eye.

Because he had a certain understanding of JX Renewing Pills,

James had only one thought at the moment, and that was his son's life, which was really saved this time!

He couldn't help guessing in his heart, who was secretly promoting all this.

Could it be that the Mr. Linye that Ruslen met by chance really had such great ability?

Just when he was lost for a while, his wife called suddenly.

Only then did James remember that he was too excited and forgot to keep pace with his wife on such an important matter.

So he immediately connected the phone, and before he could speak,

Jenny on the phone couldn't wait to ask:

"James, how is your situation?"

James said excitedly: "Jimmy has been admitted by them,"

"I just completed the admission procedures for Jimmy,"

"And there is a clinical trial base inside JX Pharmaceutical,"

"And Jimmy and I are here!"

Jenny blurted out excitedly: "Really?!"

"James, what you said is true? Are you kidding?"

"You didn't lie to me, did you?!"

James said in a very firm tone: "Honey,"

"How could I joke with you about such an important matter?"

"Jimmy is already in the hospital bed now, the doctor is examining Jimmy."

As he spoke, he quickly said, "Wait a minute, I'll send you a video!"

Before Jenny could respond, James hung up the phone and sent a video call to Jenny.

Jenny also connected immediately, and soon,

She saw James running in the corridor of the inpatient area on the screen of the mobile phone.

James switched the camera.

He had already run back to Jimmy's ward.

As soon as he opened the door and entered,

He saw two doctors conducting a detailed examination of Jimmy.

These doctors are all doctors poached by JX Pharmaceutical from major tumor hospitals.

Their main task here is not to treat patients,

But to use the most professional means to monitor each patient's use of JX Renewing Pills.

The physical changes before and after treatment are used to record the specific efficacy of JX Renewing Pills.

Seeing James coming back, a doctor said to him,

"Excuse me, are you Jimmy's father, Mr. Smith?"

James nodded quickly and said, "I am, doctor, how is my son doing now?"

The doctor said: "At present, Jimmy's condition is not very good."

"All aspects of him are signs of terminal cancer,"

"But he is not life-threatening. We have just collected blood from him and have sent it to the laboratory for further examination."

"After a comprehensive cancer index check,"

"We will immediately arrange for him to have a CT scan to see the current division of cancer cells."

James asked impatiently: "Excuse me, when can you start giving JX Renewing Pills for the child?"

In James's view, JX Renewing Pill is the only life-saving straw for his son at present.

As for blood drawing and CT scans, these are just routine cancer examinations and have no therapeutic effect.

The doctor also understood James's mood and explained:

"You don't have to worry about this."

"The reason why we want to draw blood and do a CT scan for the child is mainly to understand the physical condition of the child when he is admitted to the hospital,"

"So that it can also be related to the follow-up. for reference and comparison."

"We have already collected the child's blood before taking the medicine,"

"And now we will send the child to the radiology department. He will take two JX Renewing Pills."

# Chapter 5686

James asked in surprise: "Two at a time?"

"Yes." The doctor nodded: "Considering that Jimmy's condition is more critical,"

"We plan to give him five days of rapid consolidation first."

"During these five days, we will give him two JX Renewing Pills every day,"

"So that his physical condition can recover quickly."

"After five days, he will enter a stable period,"

"And we will give one JX Renewing Pill every day until he recovers and is discharged from the hospital."

James breathed a sigh of relief.

Taking two JX Renewing Pills a day for five days in a row,

His son will definitely get a lot of relief.

Maybe he will be able to get out of bed after five days!"

Thinking of this, he quickly said gratefully: "Thank you so much!"

The doctor smiled slightly: "You're welcome, this is what we should do."

Then, he looked at the time and said:

"It's almost time to go to the Radiology Department, Mr. Smith, come with us."

"Okay!" James agreed without hesitation, and then together with the doctor,

Pushed his son's hospital bed to the Radiology Department.

After arriving at the radiology department,

The nurse injected a contrast agent into Jimmy who was unconscious,

And then pushed him into the CT room.

Since this CT is a full-body scan, it will take a relatively long time.

James was somewhat anxious.

What he was anxious about was not the result of the CT,

But when his son would be able to eat today's JX Renewing Pill.

While James was pacing outside the CT room door,

Liang walked in from the entrance of the Radiology Department.

James saw Liang at a glance, hurried forward, and said respectfully:

"Mr. Wei, thank you so much!"

Liang smiled and said: "Mr. Smith, you should not be thanking me for having this opportunity for Jimmy,"

"Because in my case, a child like Jimmy who is over ten years old and from a wealthy family does not meet the admission criteria."

"Our clinic's experimental project has clear scoring rules and algorithms,"

"And I must follow this rule to screen the list,"

"And I have no right to go beyond the scope of the rules."

James couldn't help but ask: "Mr. Wei, I want to know who gave Jimmy a chance?"

Liang smiled and said: "The person who can open you an opening beyond the rules is naturally the one who made the rules,"

"And only he has the authority and qualification to let Jimmy in."

James asked curiously: "Aren't you the CEO of JX Pharmaceutical?"

Liang nodded, "I'm the CEO, but I'm not the boss."

"The real boss, as you have seen, is Mr. Charlie Wade."

"Mr. Wade?" James exclaimed in surprise: "He...is he the boss of JX Pharmaceutical?"

"By the way, I forgot to tell you that the Mr. Linye that Ruslen and the others met was actually Mr. Wade,"

"But Mr. Wade did not reveal his true identity to the two of them due to personal reasons."

"It just so happened that the two of them were also cancer patients."

"He decided to make a special opening for the two of them,"

"And then he thought of you and Jimmy, which made Ruslen call you over."

James widened his eyes and murmured: "So Mr. Wade is the boss of JX Pharmaceutical..."

"No wonder I saw him in Fei's scientific research center that day, and even Ms. Fei respected him..."

Thinking that it was his arrogance that missed JX Pharmaceutical, but Charlie actually took the initiative to give Jimmy this chance to survive,

This made him extremely grateful to Charlie, so he subconsciously asked Liang:

"Mr. Wei, I wonder if I have a chance to meet Mr. Wade?!"

# Chapter 5687

James really did not expect that Charlie was not only the boss of JX Pharmaceutical,

But also gave his son a chance to survive when he was most desperate.

Thinking back on his helplessness before, at this moment, he was extremely grateful to Charlie in his heart.

Liang said with a smile: "Mr. Smith, don't worry. Mr. Wade told me that he is out of town,"

"So you should accompany your son to receive treatment these days."

"When the child's condition improves, he will return to Aurous Hill. I will ask you to meet."

James said gratefully: "Then Mr. Wei must help me convey my thanks to Mr. Wade,"

"Our whole family is grateful for his great kindness!"

Liang nodded and looked at James's current state,

He knows in his heart that this person is really grateful to Charlie,

And will definitely do his best for Charlie in the future.

The underlying cultural background and underlying logic of JX Pharmaceuticals are quite different from those of Western society.

If JX Pharmaceuticals' drugs are to be successfully marketed in North America or even Europe in the future,

There must be a person who understands the Western medical system very well,

And in this world, those who have enough resources in the system will be the strikers prizes who charge forward.

And James is definitely the best candidate.

Liang, as the CEO of JX Pharmaceutical, also looks forward to James joining the team one day.

However, he knew in his heart that it was not suitable for him to come forward in this matter,

And he still wanted Charlie to communicate with James.

So, he smiled and said to James: "Don't worry,"

"Mr. Smith, I will convey it to Mr. Wade for you."

Then, he looked at the time and said, "Mr. Smith,"

"I have something else to do. Won't bother you too much."

"We have already arranged for the child's follow-up treatment."

"Don't worry, all cancer patients participating in clinical trials will get better and recover without exception as long as they enter the door of JX Pharmaceutical,"

"So you don't have to worry about it now."

"Stay with the child, and wait for the child to recover and be discharged from the hospital."

Liang's words undoubtedly gave James great confidence.

He nodded repeatedly and watched Liang leave gratefully.

After waiting outside the CT room for about ten minutes,

The electric door slowly opened, and several doctors came out immediately,

And pushed out little Jimmy who was still in a coma.

As soon as Jimmy came out of the CT room,

James hurried forward to check on his son's condition,

But his son hadn't received the JX Recovery Pill yet, so his condition didn't improve.

At this moment, two doctors in white coats walked over quickly,

One of them was holding a small suitcase,

And the other was holding a portable professional video camera.

The two came to Jimmy, and the doctor with the suitcase asked the other doctors:

"Is the patient ready to take the medicine now?"

The doctor who had been in touch with James nodded and said:

"All the examinations of the patient are done, you can administer the medicine."

The doctor nodded and said: "Okay, I'm going to give the medicine now."

After finishing speaking, he exchanged glances with the doctor holding the camera next to him, and said,

"Start recording now."

The other party immediately pressed the record button of the camera,

And then the doctor opened the suitcase, and there were dozens of spherical pill boxes slightly smaller than golf balls neatly arranged inside.

He took off two in order, and rotated in front of the camera at the same time, he said:

"Patient number e33 of group e, name: Jimmy Smith; age: twelve years old; on the first day of admission, he took two JX Recovery Pills,"

"The pill body numbers ebar 1905, ebar 1906,"

"The package of the medicine box is intact and there is no abnormality,"

"Please check the information with the family members."

# Chapter 5688

After that, he handed the two JX Recovery Pills to James and said:

"Mr. Smith, please check the integrity of these two pills."

"If there is no problem, we will take it apart and give it to the child."

James asked in surprise, "Is the medication process so strict?"

The doctor nodded and said: "Currently, many people in the black market are buying JX Recovery Pills with a lot of money."

"From now until the patient is discharged from the hospital,"

"Every time he takes JX Recovery Pills,"

"Our specialist will personally deliver the medicine and supervise the patient to take it."

James suddenly realized.

JX Recovery Pill should be the only drug on the market that can completely cure all cancers.

In addition, there is no supply on the market, and those rich people who are sick will definitely pay a very high price for it.

If there is no strict control over the medicines, maybe someone inside JX Pharmaceutical or the patient's family members will rack their brains to sell JX Recovery Pills because of huge interest.

Strict supervision of the delivery and administration of drugs can prevent such things from happening.

James carefully checked the outer packaging of the two JX Recovery Pills,

And after confirming that there was nothing unusual,

He handed the medicine back to the doctor, and said,

“The medicine is fine, please hurry up and give it to the child!”

Then the doctor nodded slightly, and opened one of the pills under the gaze of the camera, and everyone,

And then asked a doctor to gently pinch Jimmy’s mouth open, and then put the pill into his mouth.

Immediately afterward, he did the same and put the second pill into Jimmy’s mouth.

The two JX Recovery Pills quickly melted in Jimmy’s mouth.

The medicine not only contained medicines that could treat cancer,

But also had the ingredients to quickly restore the body’s vitality,

So Jimmy’s pale and bloodless complexion quickly recovered to somewhat ruddy.

A minute later, Jimmy woke up.

He slowly opened his eyes and found that he was in an unfamiliar environment with many strangers around him,

And he was a little nervous for a while.

Seeing that his son was awake, James rushed forward and said excitedly:

"Jimmy, Jimmy, you are awake! Dad is here!"

When Jimmy saw James, his nervousness instantly eased a lot.

He couldn't help but ask, "Dad, where am I? Where's Mom?"

"This is JX Pharmaceutical,"

"Your mother and sister are waiting for news from us outside,"

"They will be very happy if they know you are awake!"

Although Jimmy is not very old, he has long known that his cure is only JX Pharmaceutical's JX Recovery Pill.

He can be cured here, which is why Dad traveled thousands of miles to bring himself here from the United States.

However, he also knew that his condition did not meet the selection criteria for the clinical trial of JX Recovery Pill,

And he had already been rejected by JX Pharmaceutical.

So, when he heard his father say that he was in JX Pharmaceutical, he couldn't help being surprised.

James asked him with concern: "Jimmy, how do you feel now? Are you feeling better than before?"

Jimmy nodded slightly, and said truthfully:

"I feel much more comfortable, and the pain compared to before is also better."

"It is better a lot, Dad, I won't have to die now?"

James grabbed his hand, nodded heavily, and choked up:

"Don't worry Jimmy, you won't die, you will live a long life, Dad promises!"

The doctor on the side said:

"Mr. Smith, the child's condition is better now,"

"Let's send him back to the ward first for a good rest,"

"He will continue to take the medicine at the same time tomorrow,"

"And the body will be further strengthened,"

"I believe it will not take a few days for Jimmy can get out of bed and move around."

"Great!" James said excitedly:

"Thank you, doctor! Thank you!"

# Chapter 5689

When Jimmy's condition became more and more stable,

Charlie and Maria had already driven to Poole in southern Yunnan.

This city has a history of more than a thousand years.

It is not only a post station on the ancient tea-horse road,

But also an important producing area of Pu-erh tea.

When Maria left Dali, she brought the ashes of her parents out of Dali,

And they were finally buried in Poole.

She hasn't come back here for more than three hundred years,

And she can't remember what this city looked like before.

According to her, she only brought out her parents' ashes from Dali back then.

When making a burial here, she also secretly chose a geomantic location to bury the two coffins.

She did not buy coffins for her parents, let alone build Graves and tombstones.

It was basically impossible to find two columbariums buried more than 300 years ago here.

Fortunately, she remembered that the place where her parents were quietly buried was a tea mountain called Erlang Mountain.

Moreover, she still remembered that she buried her parents' ashes under the largest and thickest Pu'er tea tree in Erlang Mountain.

However, on the current map, there is no information on Mount Erlang within the Pool area.

Charlie drove the car into the urban area of the city.

And together with Maria found several old scholars in Poole.

After some investigation, they learned that there was indeed a mountain named Erlang Mountain in the suburbs of Poole,

But this mountain was in the past. In the past few decades, many names have been changed.

It was revised once during the Republic of China, and once after liberation.

In the 1960s, when the movement rose, it was changed once in order to erect a slogan on the mountain.

At the end of the 1970s, when the movement ended, it was changed again.

The last name change was more than 20 years ago when it was renamed Zhicheng Mountain.

It is said that this mountain, and its surrounding area of more than 20 miles, is a very famous tea-producing area in Poole.

Since the Qing Dynasty, the tea industry here has gradually formed a scale,

It has become one of the best districts for tea production in Poole.

The reason why this mountain was renamed Zhicheng Mountain is also because more than 20 years ago,

The entire tea production area was bought by a company in southern Yunnan at a high price.

It changed its name to Zhicheng Mountain, and gradually built it into its largest and top tea garden base.

Now the tea of Zhicheng Group has gained a relatively large reputation at home and abroad,

And its product line is mainly medium and high-end Pu'er tea cakes.

Among them, the Zhizhen series produced by Zhicheng Mountain is the flagship product of Zhicheng Group.

The normal price of a piece of tea cake starts at least 10,000 yuan.

Knowing the current situation of Erlang Mountain,

Charlie found the location of Zhicheng Mountain in the navigation.

Because it has been developed by Zhicheng Group for more than 20 years,

The traffic conditions are also very good.

It takes 40 minutes to drive from the city to reach the foot of Zhicheng Mountain.

Maria hasn't been back to China in these years.

She has always been worried that Erlang Mountain will be destructively developed and mined.

She was worried all the way. When Zhicheng Mountain really appeared in front of her eyes,

Her hanging heart was instantly relieved.

Because the mountains here have not changed from the ones three hundred years ago.

Although Erlang Mountain has changed its name because it has always been used as a tea-producing area,

It has not undergone drastic transformation and development over the years.

The biggest trace of development is that Zhicheng Group built a concrete road from the national highway directly to the foot of the mountain.

They also built a tea processing factory in the plain area at the foot of the mountain.

When the car was still more than ten kilometers away from Erlang Mountain,

The lush green hill could already be seen in the sight of the car.

Maria, who was at the side, couldn't hold back her excitement.

Seeing her nervously rubbing her hands, Charlie couldn't help but ask,

"Are you sure your parents are buried on this mountain?"

"Yes." Maria said, "Although the name of the mountain has changed,"

"Its appearance remains the same. It must be here."

She said, "I just don't know if the Pu'er tea tree is still there,"

"If the tree is gone, it may be difficult to find it."

Charlie said: "It's okay, I will accompany you to search until you find it."

Maria nodded gratefully, and said to Charlie: "If that Pu'er tea tree is still alive,"

"It should have a lifespan of a thousand years."

"It is definitely the largest tea tree here. The most luxuriant one."

She couldn't help but sigh with emotion:

"However, it is still far behind the mother of Pucha with a lifespan of ten thousand years by the edge of Tianchi Lake."

Charlie said with a smile: "One thousand years and ten thousand years,"

"I don't know how many generations there are."

As the distance gets closer, the details of Erlang Mountain can be seen more and more clearly.

Maria pointed to a particularly dense tea tree near the top of the mountain, and said excitedly to Charlie:

"If I'm not wrong, I had buried my parents' ashes under that tree!"

Charlie looked up, Sure enough, on the side of the peak line close to the top of the mountain,

There is a huge tree standing in it.

The whole mountain is basically a tea tree with a uniform size and a height of about one meter.

It can be distinguished even from a distance.

Thinking of Maria's story about the mother of pucha,

Charlie was not surprised. Although this tea tree is definitely not as good as the mother of pucha,

It should have a long history and is quite spiritual.

When the car was approaching the foot of the mountain, Charlie found himself in a difficult situation.

Relying on the tea factory at the foot of the mountain,

Zhicheng Group surrounded several mountains including Erlang Mountain with iron fences.

Above the iron fence, there are even surveillance probes and circles of barbed iron nets.

## Chapter 5690

Although the cement road leads to the foot of the mountain,

It was blocked by the gate of the park when it was one kilometer away from the foot of the mountain.

Charlie could only park the car at the gate.

Inside the sentry box, a security guard ran out immediately upon seeing this,

Trotted all the way to the car window, and asked Charlie vigilantly, "What do you want?"

Charlie said, "Master, I want to talk to the person in charge here."

Now that Erlang Mountain has become the property of Zhicheng Group,

It must be difficult for outsiders to get in.

Moreover, Charlie brought Maria to pay respects to her parents,

So it feels a bit inappropriate to go in secretly.

The security guard asked Charlie curiously:

"What's your surname? Which unit is it? We didn't receive a visitor notice today."

Charlie said with a smile: "I came from East China."

"I heard that your Zhicheng Group has been around for a long time."

"I really want to do tea business, so I came to visit."

The security guard shook his head and said, "I'm sorry,"

"You can't come here without an appointment, even the city leaders have to make an appointment in advance."

Charlie was a little curious he asked: "Master, why do you manage it so strictly? It's like a secret-related unit."

The security guard said seriously: "Let me tell you, the entire tea area of Zhicheng Mountain is a commercial secret!"

"Especially the tea king tree on the top of the mountain, these years, bad people have been thinking about it!"

As he spoke, he described vividly: "Just last month, we caught two men,"

"They sneaked in and tried to steal the branches of Tea King."

"They wanted to take them for grafting and breeding,"

"And we caught them as soon as they approached, and we beat them into pig heads."

"Since then, we have a guard at three steps and a sentry at five steps."

"At the Tea King on the top of the mountain, there are 24-hour security guards."

"There is no dead angle monitoring, and it is covered with a nylon net, not even a bird is allowed to fall!"

Charlie couldn't help feeling a little worried.

If you look at it this way, it's not easy to go upright, and it's not easy to sneak around.

After all, there are security guards everywhere, and there are surveillance cameras without dead ends.

Seeing that Charlie didn't look like a bad guy with ulterior motives,

The security guard said, "Young man, let me tell you, our place is just a tea plantation base and basic processing of tea."

"The real leaders don't work here. If you really want to talk about cooperation,"

"Go to the urban area of Poole, there is a Zhicheng Building in the urban area,"

"That's our headquarters, you have to make an appointment there first if you talk about cooperation,"

"If they arrange for you to come here for a visit, they will naturally notify us."

Maria on the side listened to this and her expression was a little depressed,

But she still gently tugged at the corner of Charlie's clothes, and said,

"Why don't we go to Poole and talk to their group first."

Charlie also knew that it might not be easy to get into this situation,

So he can think long-term, so he nodded and said to the security guard:

"Then I will go to the city to have a look first, thank you, master."

The security guard waved his hand: "You are welcome, you go slowly on the road."

Then he was about to return to the urban area, and at the same time couldn't help complaining to himself:

"We should have known the specific situation in Poole urban area first,"

"And went to talk to that Group first, and now we are rushing back to the urban area,"

"I guess we have to wait until tomorrow if it's the fastest."

Maria shook her head and said, "Don't be so troublesome, according to the security guard just now,"

"The tea tree is heavily guarded, with 24-hour surveillance and no dead-end shooting, and the security is also 24-hour Rotation,"

"Even if we try to get in, I can't pay homage; It doesn't seem like something that would happen in modern times,"

"But it will arouse suspicion. I don't think we need to go back to Poole,

"It's more than a hundred kilometers away from Banna, let's go directly to Banna."

Charlie thought for a while and said: "It's better to buy Zhicheng Group directly."

"Ah?" Maria was stunned, and blurted out: "This is too much..."

Charlie said indifferently: "It's okay, a group that sells tea, and it's not the largest in southern Yunnan."

"Its estimated market value is several tens of billions. I'll take care of it, I'll handle it."

Maria hurriedly said: "I'm worried that Victoria's Chinese Army Commander's Mansion is deeply rooted in southern Yunnan."

"Although they have entered a period of silence now if there are too many actions in southern Yunnan,"

"It must be impossible to escape their eyes and ears..."

Charlie waved his hand and said very calmly: "It's okay,"

"It's just a normal business acquisition, what's in the way of them?"

"What's more, who would think that you would have anything to do with the tea company?"

"After all After you left Dali, Victoria didn't find your whereabouts."

"She didn't know where you went after you left Dali, and she didn't know that you buried your parents in Poole,"

"And she didn't know that you lived in Banna guarding the mother of Pucha for many years."

"The reason why you are worried is because you know these clues yourself,"

"So you are afraid that others will be able to figure out the relationship between them,"

"But for people other than you, as long as one link is missed,"

"It is impossible for them to review the complete chain of evidence. "

As he said, he looked at Maria, and said firmly:

"Leave this matter to me, and you don't worry,"

"I will arrange everything, just wait for me to make a call."

Maria also felt that what Charlie said made sense,

And Charlie's sudden acceptance of this matter also made her feel that she could rely on others for the first time.

After thinking for a moment, she nodded slightly, and said in a grateful low voice:

"Then...then there will be Mr. Lao..."

Charlie smiled slightly, immediately took out his mobile phone, and called Zhiyu.

In the eyes of the outside world, the Su family is the Wade family's deadly enemy.

If he allows the Su family to come forward to buy it, it will naturally be safer.

The phone was connected, and Zhiyu asked happily and respectfully on the other end of the phone:

"Mr. Wade, what made you remember me?"

Charlie said: "Miss Su, I need your help."

Su Zhiyu hurriedly said: "Mr. Wade, just say it."

"I want you to buy Zhicheng Group. The sooner the better."

# Chapter 5691

Zhicheng Group is a well-known enterprise in southern Yunnan,

However, because the industry it is engaged in is relatively vertical,

It is not well-known outside the tea circle.

Zhiyu had never even heard of the name of Zhicheng Group.

But her style of doing things has always been capable and direct, without sloppy pause, she on the other end of the phone, while taking the pen and paper in front of the desk, said:

"Alright, Mr. Wade, I wonder how you need my cooperation?"

Charlie said: "I hope you use the name of the Su family to talk to their bosses."

"If the other party is curious about why you, a dignified lady of the Su family and the owner of the Su family, are interested in such a tea company,"

"You can tell them, your grandfather likes to drink their tea very much in Madagascar,"

"So you plan to buy this company, generally speaking, you can just keep a rich and willful tone."

"OK!"

Zhiyu agreed without hesitation, and said: "Mr. Wade, please give me ten minutes."

"I will first get a general understanding of the basic situation of this company,"

"And then formulate a general acquisition plan to communicate with you."

Charlie said: "Okay, I will wait for your response."

Zhiyu hung up the phone and immediately searched for some information about Zhicheng Group in front of the computer.

After recording some useful information she collected, she thought for a minute and then called Charlie back.

Charlie answered the phone and asked her: "How is the situation?"

Zhiyu said respectfully: "Mr. Wade, I just learned about their situation."

"This company is a private joint-stock enterprise. The biggest boss is their founder, Zayden Lu.

At first, it was a small micro-enterprise with sole proprietorship, but after the economic opening up in the 1980s, their tea business had a great breakthrough,"

"And gradually developed into a famous brand in southern Yunnan and became one of the top five tea companies;"

"Zhicheng Group completed its shareholding reform ten years ago.

At that time, it planned to list on the main board IPO, but because of the lack of profit scale and unstable profits,"

"Although it accepted the IPO guidance from the China Securities Regulatory Commission, but the last kick in the door still failed, and it has not been able to complete the listing;"

"A few years ago, they gritted their teeth and joined the New Third Board, but because of the company's low valuation, poor liquidity, and lower-than-expected financing goals, they withdrew from the New Third Board;"

"The market value curve at the time of the third board was only a little over a billion at the peak, but their financial reports in those years were not satisfactory."

"The decline in the tea market would affect their profits,"

"And the reduction in tea production or harvest will also affect them. Their profits and market value will naturally be affected; "

"Moreover, there is a local leading enterprise in southern Yunnan in their industry, Juyi Group."

"This enterprise can be regarded as the top spot in this industry, but even for them, capital The operation has not been smooth."

"Although the backdoor listing was successful, the market value was only relatively hot at the beginning."

"Now that the market has cooled down, its market value has not even reached two billion, so the capital prospects of the tea industry are actually not very good;"

"Speaking of Zhicheng Group, although they can indeed make tens of millions of profits every year, there is still no room for imagination to put such a small amount of money in the capital market."

"Since they have repeatedly hit the IPO, they have tried and failed repeatedly. Judging from their repeated attempts, their boss, Zayden Lu, should have always wanted to go public to cash out, but because of the hopelessness of going public, he has not been able to do so;"

"If the profit of tens of millions is really in his hands, it will be less than tens of millions a year."

"If he wants to cash out his dream of going public with hundreds of millions of yuan, it is estimated that there will never be any hope."

Charlie did not expect that Zhiyu only took 10 minutes to sort out and summarize so much effective information, and he has great recognition for this woman's business acumen, judgment, and business ability.

He asked Zhiyu: "From Ms. Su's point of view if you buy this company, how much should you buy it for?"

Zhiyu said: "Mr. Wade, from the information I can find so far, their boss Zayden Lu, the public shareholding ratio is 57.6%,"

"But through other shareholding structures and option holdings, the overall calculation should be 78.5%, and it is a well-deserved major shareholder;"

"Judging from Zayden Lu's current income situation, if he continues to stick to this business, he will earn 30 to 40 million yuan a year if he is lucky."

"If he is not lucky, he may not earn a penny all year round or even lose money;"

"Looking at him in the next 20 years, the net income that he can get from Zhicheng Group one after another should not exceed 600 million;"

"If we give him a quotation, we can ensure that after he makes a move, If there is no gambling clause, no waiting period, and if you can reap more than 600 million at one time,"

"Then he has no reason to reject our acquisition of 600 million divided by his shareholding ratio, which is 78.5%>"

"So the total quotation of Zhicheng Group should be around 760 million;" "

Of course, whether the price will be higher or lower, in the end, depends on the specific situation of chatting with Zayden Lu. Through communication, we can analyze his current psychological state as well as psychological expectations,"

"If it is safe, I personally suggest setting the psychological price at 800 million,"

"But I will use 600 million as the quotation to talk to him, and try to win him within the price range of 700 million to 750 million!"

Charlie asked her: "Are you sure?"

"Yes." Zhiyu said confidently: "Entrepreneurs like Zayden Lu have been engaged in real businesses for decades. Although the scale of the industry is large,"

"But the money is also earned every penny. This kind of person has no possibility of getting rich overnight in business. If he wants to go public and cash out, he has no chance."

"There is a relatively large consumption, and he probably hopes that someone can take away his plate at one time,"

"So that he can withdraw and retire smoothly with that large sum of money,"

"And he is an absolutely controlling shareholder, so he successful or not, he is alone, I believe there should be no problem."

Charlie was very satisfied, and said to her: "I am in Poole now, how long do you think it will take you to solve this matter?"

"If it is soon, I will wait for you for the next two days, if it's too late, I'll go to other places to do other things first, and I'll come back after you finish it."

Zhiyu looked at the time and said, "It's almost sunset here, but since you're in Poole, there should be more than an hour before sunset. If everything goes well,"

"I should get him to nod before sunset on your side."

"As long as he nods, I can immediately pay him a deposit of 100 million yuan, and then send a team of lawyers to go through the transfer procedures with him overnight!"

"One hour?" Charlie heard this answer and said with a smile: "Okay, then I'll be here waiting for your news,"

"As long as he nods and you pay the deposit, tell him you are sending two consultants to his base in Zhicheng Mountain to inspect first and ask him to notify the person in charge of the base to prepare for the reception!"

At this moment, the Zhicheng Building is in the urban area of Poole.

Sixty-two-year-old Zayden Lu has just finished the distributor meeting.

Since there was going to be a dinner party for distributors at the hotel in the evening,

Although he was exhausted, he could only rest in the office for a while, and when the time came, he would forcefully go to the banquet site.

Zayden felt a little depressed today.

In recent years, dealers have become more and more powerful in front of the group.

In the past, the group put pressure on the dealers to assess their performance, forcing them to continue to purchase goods and increase inventory,

And even often deducted their sales for various reasons. Rebate at the end of the year to force them to work harder and be more obedient.

However, with the rise of e-commerce in recent years, most traditional brands have lost this absolute advantage in front of dealers.

# Chapter 5692

Especially in the opaque fast-moving consumer goods industry such as alcohol and tea, new brands will emerge every day to boast about it, packaging themselves as the second Moutai or the king of tea.

They are better at packaging and storytelling than traditional companies,

And they are also very shrewd and good at marketing.

They can find an OEM manufacturer to produce liquor with better packaging, and hang a link of 500 yuan on the website.

Then they use various promotional packages offline, and finally, 51 bottles are free of postage.

The result is great they sell the bottle at many times the production cost.

The cost of the wine is five yuan, the cost of advertising and buying traffic is ten yuan, and the logistics cost of two or three yuan is basically the entire cost of this wine.

Fifty-one bottles are sold to consumers, and there is at least thirty profit margins.

The same is true for tea.

Zayden Lu sells ordinary mass-grade Pu-erh tea for only 100 yuan per cake,

Which is more than 300 grams per cake, but marketing experts divide the tea of the same quality into five grams and then customize a story for it. A copy can be sold for 50 yuan;

Some colleagues are not good at packaging and telling stories, but they are good at price wars.

They package those who know tea as firewood and think it's too choking. If the cake is not enough, add another cake,

And if it is not enough, add another cake, a total of five big cakes, plus three small cakes for travel,

And then a teapot for making tea will be packed onto it, and the total price is 100.

This seemingly kind of sales method with small profits but high sales is actually even more deceitful.

There are eight cakes of tea leaves five big and three small ones, and the cost adds up to less than 20 yuan.

One yuan and five, and the remaining 70 yuan in profit margins,

If you allocate more than 20 yuan to the online celebrities who sell the goods, you can still earn half of it.

Zayden knew the tactics of his peers, and also knew that they made more money by using this method,

At the same time took away their target customers, but Zayden himself could not learn from the other party's such low-level marketing methods.

These competitors are not people who really understand tea and love tea. They just regard tea as a temporary profit-making track. When they choose tea, they will use this method to harvest tea from consumers.

When they aim at healthcare products, they will start anew, package another healthcare product, and use the same method to wash a wave of healthcare product customers.

In Zayden Lu's words, those people lack reverence for tea.

And he is different.

He has loved tea all his life, and relying on tea, he has become a relatively well-known and wealthy entrepreneur in the local area, so he has a passionate affection for tea.

He feels that the premise of making money is to make tea well first, and only the money earned in this way can he feel at ease.

It is precisely because of this love and awe that he has never been able to find a real chance to get rich overnight.

And those scammers are different. They may sell tens of thousands of orders a day for an order of 50 tea leaves, and easily make millions of profits in one night.

Sometimes seeing these people make a lot of money, Zayden will lose confidence in the tea industry. He feels that most industries will form an embarrassing situation where bad money drives out good money.

If you don't want to become bad money, you can only be expelled by bad money.

Instead of this, it is better to cash out and leave the market as soon as possible.

But cashing out is not as simple as imagined.

Just like a steamed stuffed bun shop, the boss has worked hard for a year, and although he can earn hundreds of thousands, the boss wants to sell the steamed stuffed bun shop at ten times the PE,

That is, sell it at the profit price of the next ten years, and sell it directly. It's more than one million, that's just a dream.

In today's dealer meeting, Zayden suffered another big blow.

Those agents have asked to reduce the purchase discount, from the original 50% discount to a 40% discount, and said that if the group does not agree, they will reduce or even stop the purchase.

Don't underestimate the difference in this discount. If something worth 50 yuan is discounted to 40 yuan, it means that it has been discounted by 20%.

Normally, Zayden would have gotten angry in front of the agent, but he still suppressed his anger and promised the dealer that he would seriously consider their proposal.

Sitting in the office, he dared to scold his mother behind his back, scolding these dealers for crossing rivers and tearing down bridges.

At this time, Zayden's son, Yiannis knocked on the door: "Dad, can I come in?"

Close the door carefully, and then said with righteous indignation: "Dad! These dealers are too fucking useless, and asking for a purchase price that is 40% off,"

"So why don't we go bankrupt at once?"

Zayden said helplessly: "There is no way, these people who came today are at least agents above the prefecture-level city."

"They are our ancestors now, and no one dares to offend anyone. What's more, they are now in a group. Then I can't be more guilty."

"Why?" Yiannis said with a look of displeasure: "They are simply raising prices and extorting money. If I were you, I would have scolded them long ago!"

Zayden sighed: "It was okay to scold once before, but twice Slap and take a step back and give some dates to eat, everyone will be satisfied in the end, but this year's situation is different..."

Speaking of this, Zayden cursed depressedly: "Using the words of your young people, this year's Pu'er tea market is too fcked!"

After a pause, he said again: "Dmn it, not only a few major traditional tea companies are desperately cutting prices to lower the market price, but those emerging brands are also using marketing and price means to constantly impact the market of our traditional tea companies Space,"

"You said your tea is good, he said that the price of the same tea next door is less than half of ours, you said let him try the taste of these two kinds of tea is completely different, he said there is no difference in his taste, What do you think you can do with them?"

Yiannis said depressedly: "There are more and more people drinking tea now, but there are not many people who really understand tea. Tea leaves that cost RMB 10,0000 per catty and tea leaves that cost 10,000 RMB per catty, he can't differentiate."

Zayden nodded in agreement and sighed: "What's worse, even bottled drinks now The industry has focused its firepower on entering the tea market."

"In the past, everyone mainly made oolong tea and green tea, which did not have a big impact on us, but now Puer tea is also targeted by them;"

"Puer tea is troublesome to brew, so people simply brew it and fill it into bottles. Consumers can not only drink it after unscrewing it but also drink it iced. Our consumers can only make tea with boiling water at 100 degrees, the tea leaves have been kept for a long time, the temperature has dropped, and the taste has changed; How to compete with them?"

Yiannis sighed, and said depressedly: "Dad, let me tell you the truth, I have long felt that our business is not so easy to do, and the competition is too fierce;"

"And you said that we have been in southern Yunnan development, resources and contacts are only here, but the industry is not developed here, and the transportation is not convenient. Even if we switch to dry tea drinks here, we still can't do it."

"The old godmother next door is the best example. E-commerce has not risen. At that time, they were No. 1 in the sauce category, but after the e-commerce started, they were quickly left behind..."

At this point, Yiannis mustered up his courage and said to Zayden: "Dad, in my opinion, let's find a suitable next home and sell the company. You have worked hard all your life, and it's time to retire and enjoy the blessings."

Zayden snorted and asked him: "Find a next home? Is it easy to find? If you are not optimistic about this industry, why should others be optimistic?"

"Our group is the most embarrassing right now, larger than us are also reducing their expenses. It is impossible to spend money to acquire us and those emerging brands that are smaller than ours. , People are playing the mode of making quick money, wishing that the money invested today will make a profit tomorrow,"

"And it is even more impossible to spend money to buy such a burden like us, people like us even look down on them as OEM workers, why? Because our

tea production costs are high! If the law is ignored, they would like to sell rotten leaves as tea, how can they use our things?"

Yiannis sighed dejectedly, and asked him: "Is there no chance to cash out? Yet?"

Zayden nodded and said: "Yes, of course, the current profit situation of the group, according to the calculation of the capital market, plus the net assets, the serious market value should be around 1.12 billion."

"Let's not pursue high premiums. A discount of 800 million is always reasonable, right? But no one will offer this price now,"

"Because no one will give us room for a premium. If we set the price below 500 million, it is estimated that there is a possibility of selling. Below 400 million, there is a high probability that it can be sold."

After speaking, Zayden said again: "But 400 million is too low, at least 700 million is reasonable?"

"700 million?" Zayden brushed aside Curling his lips, he said disdainfully: "You have the time to daydream, Why don't you think about how to drink up those dealers tonight, They want a 40% discount, I definitely can't give this, see if they can make a compromise after drinking too much Let's move it to around 45 and sign the contract quickly."

Yiannis couldn't help but say, "Dad, you always have to have a dream, what if it comes true?"

Zayden said impatiently: "If someone has 700 million to buy it, I'll run around Heping Road three times with my bare bu.tt!"

Yiannis immediately looked sad when he heard this, he thought that he might be able to sell it for less than 100 million yuan, but he didn't expect the old man to be so pessimistic.

Just when the father and son were both depressed, they heard the door being knocked open with a bang, and then they saw the secretary rushing in like crazy.

Before the secretary could stand still, he said excitedly: "Director... there is a great thing!"

Zayden was already bored, but when he saw the secretary rushing in without knocking, he immediately got angry and shouted angrily: "When did you learn not to knock on the door?"

The secretary ignored the accusations, swallowed hard, and said excitedly:

"Chairman, the Su Group... the Su Group that ranks first in the country!"

"Their secretary just called and said they want to talk about the acquisition!"

## Chapter 5693

What the secretary said left Zayden and Yiannis dumbfounded.

Naturally, they have heard of the name of the Su Group.

After all, the Su family is the most powerful family in China, and it is definitely a ceiling-level existence in the country.

On the other hand, Zhicheng Group, although it is called a group, has not even been listed on the GEM,

Let alone a name in southern Yunnan, and it is barely a well-known enterprise in Poole City.

Even if the father and son were dreaming, they didn't dare to think that they would be acquired by a top family like the Su Group.

After all, the ranks are too different, and the Su Group's assets are more than a thousand times greater than that of the Zhicheng Group.

Therefore, Zayden asked his secretary in disbelief, "Aren't you kidding me? The Su Group wants to talk to us about acquisitions?"

The secretary said with an aggrieved expression, "Chairperson, why would I joke with you?" Ah! She did say that on the phone, and she also said that if you have a convenient time and are really interested, you can arrange a video conference to chat."

Zayden and Yiannis looked at each other, and then the father asked his son: "Yiannis, What do you think?"

Yiannis took the case without hesitation: "Fraud! It must be a telecom fraud!"

"Dmn, these scammers are really hateful! The deception is becoming more and more professional!"

"In the past, they used to pretend to be the company manager to trick the accountant into transferring. Now they started to play tricks of mergers and acquisitions!"

As he spoke, he scolded angrily again: "Dad, why can't these people design the details of the plot well?"

"The idea of pretending to be an acquisition is really good Yes, the details are not in place."

"If they say that they are a company in the same industry such as the Juyi Group, we can trust him 30 to 50%."

"He directly came to the Su Group and treated us like a fool. Why doesn't he just pretend to be Elon Musk?"

Zayden was stunned, thinking that what his son said made sense.

So he rubbed his temples, and said to the secretary annoyedly, "Call the police."

The secretary said embarrassingly: "Chairperson, she didn't say anything, she just showed her identity and said that if you are interested in being acquired, they will arrange a video conference."

"If I call the police, what can I tell the police..."

Zayden waved waving his hand: "Then ignore it!"

The secretary suddenly didn't know what to do.

Seeing that he hadn't left yet, Zayden couldn't help asking:

"What are you still doing here? Go out and take care of your work!"

The secretary coughed twice and said falteringly: "That... the chairperson... I don't feel like this is a lie."

"They spoke very professionally. Those who make scam calls are illiterate people who can't read a few big characters and can't get a good meal. They definitely don't speak professionally. So..."

As he spoke, he asked courageously: "Chairperson, they said to arrange a video conference, why don't we try it?"

"Anyway, we can show our face, and we can't suffer, and we can't be fooled..."

Zayden asked back: "Let me ask you, why do you think the Su Group will buy us? It's the secretary of the board! Do you know what a secretary of the board is?"

The secretary nodded and said aggrievedly: "I know, am I the secretary of the board? chairperson ..."

Zayden said angrily: "You, the secretary of the board, are parallel importers, and I, the chairperson, are all parallel importers, let alone you?"

"But the Su Group, what level is that? The secretary of the Su Group must be a professional Serving the chairperson of the Su Group and the owner of the Su family!"

He said, "Think about it for yourself, under what circumstances, the secretary of the Su Group will call us and say he wants to buy us?"

"Then she would only call us if the chairperson of the Su Group and the Patriarch of the Su family personally ordered her to call us! Have you read "Private Interviews in Kangxi Weifu"?"

"If San Dezi in it is out of the palace to do business, it must be the emperor."

"What was explained, so do you think that the chairperson of the Su Group will suddenly want to buy us?"

The secretary was speechless when asked, and he was wronged for a long time and muttered in a low voice:

"But it's okay to make a video we won't lose..."

"Dmn it..." Seeing that he was still stubborn here, Zayden scolded him angrily, and blurted out:

"Are you the secretary of the board of directors or am I the secretary of the board of directors? You can do whatever I tell you to do, and then grind with me."

"I will arrange for you to grow tea in the tea mountain! I am in a bad mood already, and you are still here to chat with me!"

The secretary had an idea, and said: "Chairperson, you are in a bad mood, why don't you talk to the other party?"

"Hold a video conference, and then just scold them to relieve your anger!"

Zayden was also bored, and said with a grin: "Okay! You arrange it! I fcuking have to let those liars eat electric batons today!"

Secretary Immediately said: "Wait a moment, I will call the other party back!"

Then he took out his mobile phone and walked outside the door.

Yiannis stretched his waist, and said cursingly: "I have already studied the deception of these liars, they ask you to enter some Tencent meeting or Netease meeting, and fool us into letting them control the computer remotely;"

"Or, let us open some kind of gold bars and white bars to borrow money, and then they secretly borrow the money and transfer it out,"

"Dad, wait and see, it must be such a routine."

Zayden snorted coldly: "I'm just fcuking angry, no matter what their tricks are, I have one purpose, scolding them to death!"

Two minutes later, the secretary hurried in and said, "Chairperson, I have an appointment with them, she asked us to go to the Su Group official website, There is an online meeting function, enter their meeting code, and you can start the video meeting." "

Uh..." Yiannis was stunned, and asked, "What did you say? She asked us to start a meeting from the Su Group website?"

"Yes." The secretary nodded and said, "I'm wondering too, does the Su Group have video conferencing products?"

"Fcuk..." Yiannis hurried to his father's desk, searched for the official website of the Su Group, and after confirming that it was correct, he clicked to open the official website.

After opening the official website, in a secondary category of "Contact Us", there was indeed an entrance for online video conferences.

Yiannis clicked again, and a dialog box popped up immediately, saying: "Please enter the conference code to enter the conference."

Then, followed by an input box.

Below the input box, there is a series of reminders, which read: "This video conference function is the only official channel for online negotiations between the Su Group and cooperative companies,"

"And it can only be initiated by Su Group employees. If there is no conference code, please consult your matchmaker."

Yiannis scratched his head, frowned, and said, "Dad... this... this seems to be true... a liar is definitely not going to come from the official website of Su Group..."

Zayden asked in surprise: "Really?! Does the Su Group really want to buy us?! Why are they buying us?"

Yiannis couldn't help exclaiming: "Dad, the famous Su Group also sometimes misses it!"

Zayden murmured: "Who The fcuk does he know?"

After finishing speaking, he raised his eyebrows and said angrily, "Oh no, what are you doing here!"

The secretary on the side quickly said: "Chairperson, hurry up and enter the meeting code to enter the meeting room. They're already waiting there!"

"Oh!" Zayden came back to his senses and immediately entered the meeting code.

Immediately afterward, the page automatically jumped to the online meeting room.

On the other end of the video, a young professional woman can be seen sitting at her desk.

As Zayden went online, the other party immediately said, "Mr. Lu, I am Melisa Zhang, Secretary of the chairperson of the Su Group."

Yiannis outside the range of the camera, quickly used his mobile phone to search for the information of the secretary of the Su Group, and sure enough, he found Melisa Zhang's encyclopedia and detailed introduction.

When he clicked on it, he found that she was indeed the young woman in the video.

At this moment, he couldn't hold back his excitement, and whispered to his father: "Dad! It's true! It's true!"

Zayden also knew that the other party must be real.

## Chapter 5694

As far as the temperament and tone of the other party sitting there, it can't be fake.

This made him a little flattered all of a sudden, and he became restless.

Zhiyu's board secretary, Melisa, saw that Zayden was silent for a long time, so she tried to ask him:

"Mr. Lu, can you hear me?"

Zayden came back to his senses, and hurriedly said: "I heard you! Miss Melisa Zhang, right! Hello!"

Melisa nodded lightly, and said with a smile: "Mr. Lu, I won't talk too much with you,"

"Let's get straight to the point, the purpose of this time contacting you is that our President Su intends to acquire Zhicheng Group,"

"So I would like to ask Mr. Lu if he has any idea of selling it."

"If so, we can start discussing the specific acquisition matters directly."

This is something that Zayden never even dreamt of.

So he didn't dare to play hard to get, and said without hesitation:

"I have the idea of selling, it depends on what kind of quotation the Su Group can give us!"

Melisa smiled and said: "Since Mr. Lu has a sale intention, then let Mr. Su come to talk to you about the price in person."

"I will immediately invite Mr. Song to join the meeting. If you talk about the details, I will make the meeting minutes."

Zayden asked in surprise: "Mr. Su? Is it your chairperson? Is it?"

"That's right." Melisa smiled and said, "It's our chairperson, Ms. Zhiyu Su."

Zayden felt even more flattered in his heart.

How a small tea business, be favored by the head of the Su Family?

Just when he was so excited, Zhiyu connected to the video conference room.

As soon as she came in, she said politely: "Mr. Lu, I am Zhiyu Su, the chairperson of the Su Group."

Zayden's voice was trembling with excitement: "Su... Hello Miss Su... I have admired your name for a long time ..."

Zhiyu said with a smile: "Mr. Lu, you don't have to be so polite. Melisa should have already told you about the situation."

"I won't waste any more time. Let's get straight to the point. Let's directly negotiate a price today."

"If it is suitable, I will ask the lawyer team to audit it tomorrow, and we will sign the contract."

Zayden asked in surprise: "Su... Is Mr. Su in a hurry? Why sign the contract tomorrow?"

Zhiyu smiled and said, "To tell the truth, Mr. Lu, if the transaction of hundreds of millions of dollars is not done faster,"

"Then I am afraid that I will be very busy every day. Let's take advantage of the time before work."

"Hurry up and talk about your intentions, hurry up and push forward if you can, and not waste everyone's time if you can't."

Zhiyu lightly said a word and released several key messages to Zayden.

The first one is that the transaction is several hundred million yuan,

That is to say, her bid for Zhicheng Group will never exceed one billion yuan, which will directly cut off Zayden's desire to open his mouth

like a lion; To her, a company is like an ancient emperor reviewing an innocuous memorial.

It is too strong, so although she feels a little embarrassed, it is not a negative emotion.

However, he still asked curiously: "Miss Su, why would a company as big as the Su Group fall in love with a small company like ours?"

Zhiyu smiled and said: "Mr. Lu, there is no need to underestimate yourself. The size of a company is not the only criterion for measuring the value of a company."

"As for why the Su Group wants to acquire your Zhicheng Group, to be honest, it is mainly because my grandfather prefers Pu'er tea."

"Now Food safety issues frequently occur in the food industry. As a granddaughter, I want to buy a source company to ensure that he can drink the safest Pu-erh tea."

"It doesn't cost much anyway, so I'm sure about it."

Zayden was dumbfounded after hearing this, and thought to himself: "Dmn, this is the real rich family!"

"Someone likes to drink Pu-erh tea, so why the fuck would he accept a company that produces Pu-erh tea? Is your money brought by a strong wind?"

Then, he changed to another topic after thinking about the direction, he was instantly relieved.

"The assets of the Su family exceed one trillion yuan. Buying a Pu'er tea company with a few hundred million yuan is equivalent to tens of thousands of yuan for a person."

"Isn't it easy to buy a bottle of beverage for seven or eight yuan? Really want to drink Tea, even if it's only a hundred yuan, willing to spend seven or eight yuan!"

Thinking of this, he immediately complimented: "Miss Su is really filial! Our Zhicheng Group still has a lot of advantages in the field of Pu'er tea,"

"In Puer, we have a very large tea production base, which can ensure green and pollution-free planting methods."

Zhiyu smiled and said: "Indeed, I have sent several Pu'er tea experts these days to Yunnan. In the past few days, I have also contacted several companies of the same type, and my current idea is to hurry up and finalize one from these few candidates."

As she spoke, Zhiyu put away her smile and said seriously: "Mr. Lu, let's just talk about the price directly. What is your psychological price?"

Zayden thought for a while and said, "Miss Su, my psychological price is... one billion..."

Zayden said without feeling confident, but still relatively calm on the surface.

Zhiyu didn't watch Zayden in the video at all. When she heard the one billion quotation,

She just smiled slightly and said, "Mr. Lu, I have read your financial reports in the past few years and the approximate revenue in the past few years. I understand that the price of one billion is not too high, to be honest, but this price can only be used for financing, not for sale."

"If I just want 10% of your shares, valued at one billion and invested 100 million, I don't think it's too much, after all, you still have to continue to run the company,"

"And you have to ensure that the future development of the company is not lower than expected and sign a gambling agreement with me;"

At this point, Zhiyu changed the subject, and said: "However, What we are talking about now is a one-shot deal."

"I will buy all your assets in a package. You don't have to make any performance bets with me, and you don't have to worry about this company."

"In this case, you will report ten hundred million, I really take it for granted."

Zayden was a little embarrassed for a while, but he didn't expect that Zhiyu was young, but she was very experienced,

And although she was worth trillions, he was very shrewd, and she didn't have the feeling of being rich and lavish at all.

At this time, Zhiyu said again: "How about this, Mr. Lu, everyone's time is precious, you quote the price again if you are sincere, we will continue the meeting,"

"If you are not sincere, don't waste each other's time, I personally don't like it. The only thing you need is constant bargaining, which not only wastes time but also wastes emotion."

As soon as these words came out, Zayden suddenly panicked.

He felt that although he asked for one billion, it was a bit unkind, but after all, this is the logic of buying and selling.

The seller makes an offer and the buyer counter-offers. The price quoted by the seller is definitely unreasonable, and the price quoted by the buyer is definitely not reasonable either.

Everyone runs in with each other, keep making concessions, and finally find a compromise point that everyone can accept.

But he didn't expect that this young Zhiyu didn't like to play this traditional routine.

Zayden hesitated for a moment, gritted his teeth, and said:

"Miss Su, since you said so, I won't play tricks on you, how about this, I'll give you a 20% discount, 800 million, and Zhicheng Group belongs to you. It's really very sincere."

"Sincerity is not enough," Zhiyu said lightly, and immediately said without hesitation:

"How about this, Mr. Lu, I will only quote the price once, 700 million! The premise is that your Zhicheng Group will start closing the price from this second Account,"

"There must be no more expenses of a dime, and your legal team must also seal all official seals, and you must not sign any legal documents with any third-party companies except the Su Group,"

"And wait for my audit team to take over and start the audit:"

"If you think it's okay, I'll arrange for the finance to transfer 100 million intent money to your personal account now."

"We will complete an intent agreement online."

"Whoever repents will compensate the other party 100 million in cash;"

"But if you think this price is not suitable, then you don't have to bargain with me,"

"We will stop the negotiation directly, you find another buyer, and I find another company!"

# Chapter 5695

Zhiyu's words scared Zayden into a cold sweat.

He didn't doubt the authenticity of what she said,

Because for him, he really couldn't think of any special significance for Zhiyu that his Zhicheng Group had what he wanted to achieve.

In his opinion, if he missed Zhiyu's acquisition,

He might have to stay in this position until he was seventy years old and then let his son take over.

And even he himself doesn't know what his business will look like when he is 70 years old.

He still doesn't know whether the industrial scale of the entire group,

And his entire family will increase or decrease in the next few years.

But there is one thing he knows very well,

If he sells the company now, takes 500 million in cash,

And calculates income tax at 20% for the transfer of equity, he will still have 560 million left.

This 560 million is enough for himself and his descendants to live comfortably.

Thinking of this, he gritted his teeth and made a decision,

And quickly said: "Since Ms. Su is so sincere,"

"I won't bargain with you anymore,"

"And you will pay the 700 million price you quoted!"

Zhiyu nodded in satisfaction, she opened her mouth and said:

"In that case, then I will immediately ask the financial manager to make a letter of intent."

"After the letter of intent is finished, the experts sent will visit your tea base."

"You must notify your on-site person in charge to stop working immediately,"

"And then I will have full authority and you will have to cooperate with my experts."

"No problem!" Zayden said without hesitation:

"Miss Su, don't worry, after receiving the deposit,"

"I will follow your instructions."

Basically, it means that the Zhicheng Group no longer belongs to him.

Since Zhiyu asked to stop work, then he should order the halt.

Zhiyu didn't hesitate, and immediately said:

"In this case, Mr. Lu arranges for the account information, and I arrange the payment here."

Zayden said flatteringly: "Okay, Miss Su, please wait a moment."

"I'll arrange it now!"

Soon, Zayden's secretary sent the group's collection account number and related information to Zhiyu's secretary.

A few minutes later, the 100 million yuan intent deposit was directly transferred to the Zhicheng Group's account.

At the moment when they received the money,

Zayden and his son were so excited that they wanted to open a bottle of champagne to celebrate on the spot.

Afterward, Zhiyu gave Charlie's license plate number to Zayden,

And asked Zayden to immediately notify the person in charge of the base to greet him at the door in person.

Zayden used the money to do business, so he called the person in charge of the base himself,

And told the person on the phone that he had sold the company to the Su Group,

And specifically told him that the new owner would send a representative to visit the site soon.

Although the person in charge of the base was shocked,

He quickly came to his senses.

Anyway, he is a wage earner.

As long as the salary remains the same, it doesn't matter who he works for.

So he also knows that his top priority is to make the people of the Su Group absolutely satisfied with him,

Otherwise, once they take over the company and initiate large-scale layoffs, wouldn't he be unemployed?

So, he just got into the car and was about to go home after work.

After hanging up Zayden's phone, he immediately went to the gate of the base to wait.

At the same time, Charlie also received a call from Zhiyu.

As soon as the call was connected, Zhiyu said respectfully:

"Mr. Wade, Zhicheng Group has already accepted my intention money,"

"And the acquisition has already been completed."

The final transaction price is 700 million yuan."

"I have asked him to notify the person in charge of the base and your license plate number."

"You can go directly. He will wait for you at the door and obey your orders."

## Chapter 5696

Charlie was amazed at Zhiyu's efficiency,

In his opinion, it's really rare for a girl of her age to handle things so neatly.

So he said to Zhiyu: "Thank you for your hard work, Miss Su,"

"I owe you this money, but now that the situation is special,"

"I will not transfer the money to you for now."

"When I finish my work, I will think about it."

"There is no other way to give you the money."

Zhiyu hurriedly said: "Mr. Wade, why are you being polite to me?"

"Zhicheng Group treats it as a little gift from me."

"It is my honor that you can accept it."

Charlie smiled slightly: "I owe you this favor."

Zhiyu was overjoyed. In her opinion, Charlie could say such a sentence,

Not to mention spending 700 million, even 70 billion would be worth it.

Charlie didn't say anything more to her at this time,

He just said that he had something urgent to go to the tea base of Zhicheng Group, so he hung up the phone first.

After he hung up the phone, he started the car, turned around and walked back,

And said to Maria beside him, "It's all done,"

"We can go to the plantation now."

Maria was so happy that she couldn't add anything, and said with red eyes,

"Thank you, master..."

Charlie waved his hand: "You don't need to thank me for this little thing,"

"After all, you saved my life."

Then, Charlie said again: "Oh yes, you like Pu'er tea so much."

"The company will be given to you in the future."

"If you feel that it is inconvenient for you to come forward to manage it,"

"I can ask someone to help you build a team and directly entrust it to the team to take care of it."

"You can come here whenever you want to pay homage to your father."

"What kind of tea is planted here, in short everything is up to you to decide."

Maria said emotionally: "Young master can give me a chance to worship my parents,"

"I am already very grateful, how can I ask for the master's property."

Charlie said: "I don't know much about tea."

"If this company is given to me, it will basically be a waste."

"If it doesn't work, I will find a way to bankrupt this company."

"After bankruptcy, I will seal up the entire Erlang Mountain, suspend tea planting,"

"And prohibit all outsiders from going up the mountain, so that your parents will not be disturbed."

"No need..." Maria said seriously: "Master's kindness is appreciated,"

"But my father never liked the extravagance."

"He knew that for the sake of the quietness of his grave,"

"He will absolutely not accept that a company or a tea plantation should be destroyed."

Charlie said with a smile: "Since you don't want this place to be abandoned,"

"Then everything is up to you. You can do whatever you want."

Maria hesitated for a moment, then nodded lightly,"

"Then she wiped away her tears and said with a smile:

"Then after we return to Aurous Hill, I must think about how to run this company."

"In fact, I know Pu'er tea very well. Breeding Pu'er tea is also very knowledgeable,"

"If I have this opportunity to make my family's experience useful,"

"I think it will be a very fulfilling thing!"

Charlie thought of the painting that Maria had shown him at the beginning,

And regarded it as his own. When he immersed himself in that painting,

He realized that Maria at that time was quite respected by tea growers.

Even people in their 70s and 80s would ask her for advice on how to cultivate Pu'er tea.

About Pu'er tea, she must have a very profound understanding.

At this time, Maria who was on the side couldn't help sighing and said:

"The Pu-erh tea that I had hardly drunk exclusively in these years, which can make my eyes shine,"

"I think it was the branches that those tea farmers cut off from the mother of Pu-tea."

"In the process of multigenerational reproduction, the original good genes of the mother of Pucha are gradually lost."

"If this is the case, I am afraid that the taste of the mother of Pucha will never be reproduced..."

# Chapter 5697

Although Charlie doesn't understand tea,

He can understand Maria's special feelings for the mother of Pucha.

In his opinion, the mother of Pucha is a kind of spiritual sustenance of Maria,

And it is a spiritual sustenance spanning three hundred years,

So he also understands why she longs to reproduce the taste of the mother of Pucha one day.

So he said to her: "After the handover of Erlang Mountain is completed,"

"You can use this place as your cultivation base in the future,"

"And use your experience to see if you can breed better tea varieties."

Maria nodded and said:

"Breeding is a very troublesome thing,"

"I don't know much about technological breeding, but artificial breeding,"

"I'm afraid it will take at least ten years to be effective."

Charlie said in relief: "It's okay if you can breed it, time doesn't matter if you can't cultivate it,"

"Anyway, you have already tasted the taste of the mother of Pucha,"

"And its taste will always remain in your memory."

"Well..." Maria smiled slightly: "Young Master said That's right."

While speaking, Charlie had already driven back to Zhicheng Group's production base at the foot of Erlang Mountain.

At this time, although the factory was off work,

At the gate, a gentle middle-aged man wearing glasses was waiting nervously and anxiously,

And beside him was the security guard who had just communicated with Charlie.

The security guard looked at the middle-aged man,

And asked with some doubt: "Director Wang, who are you waiting for here?"

"Is the chairman coming to inspect the work?"

The middle-aged man called Director Wang, named Jasper Wang,

He is the person in charge of this processing plant.

Hearing the security guard's question, Jasper waved his hands and said,

"I'm waiting for two distinguished guests."

Jasper is Zayden's confidant man.

The two most important businesses of Zhicheng Group,

One is the production of Pu'er tea and the other is the sale of Pu'er tea.

The latter is handled by Zayden himself, and the former has always been under the sole responsibility of Jasper.

A few years ago, in order to make Jasper loyal, Zayden gave him three shares.

Now, the Su Group intends to wholly acquire the Zhicheng Group.

In addition to Zayden being able to cash out,

Other equity owners can also take advantage of this opportunity to cash out together.

Therefore, Zayden had informed Jasper of the Su Group's acquisition on the phone,

And Jasper was naturally extremely excited.

He has worked with Zayden for many years, and he has been looking forward to the listing of Zhicheng Group,

So that he can find opportunities to cash out his shares.

However, Zhicheng Group failed to go public repeatedly,

Which dealt blows to Jasper again and again.

In the next few years, he didn't even take these three points of shares seriously.

After all, if it cannot be listed, it is doomed that this share is useless,

It is just a name in the industrial and commercial registration.

The reason why he never left was also because Zayden treated him really well.

Although the long-term benefits of shares were hopeless,

Jasper was very satisfied with the short-term and medium-term benefits such as wages and bonuses.

But today he suddenly heard that the Su Group bought the Zhicheng Group at a price of 700 million.

Jasper was so excited that his legs couldn't stand still.

His three points of shares, based on the price of 700 million, were worth 21 million before tax.

After deducting 20% personal income tax, the net income is more than 16 million.

If one bet is 4 million after tax, this time is equivalent to winning the lottery four times.

For him, he definitely became rich overnight!

But Jasper didn't get excited for a long time,

Zayden told him that the tea experts sent by the Su Group would arrive soon,

And in order to avoid any trouble, he specifically told Jasper that he must confess to the experts of the Su Group as if they were his ancestors.

Let them not have any complaints.

## Chapter 5698

Without saying a word, Jasper immediately ran to the factory gate and waited,

In order to let the "experts" of the Su Group be satisfied with his service and attitude.

When Charlie drove the car to the gate of the factory,

Jasper had already seen Charlie's license plate number clearly,

And knew that this was the car of the two experts,

So he was fully prepared to deal with it.

At this time, the security guard walked to the middle of the road first,

Stopped Charlie's car, and said,

"Young man, why are you back again?"

"Didn't I tell you, you have to go to the group to make an appointment first!"

Unexpectedly, the security guard went up to communicate with the VIP first,

And it seemed that the two of them had already been here once before.

So, he immediately stepped forward to pull the security guard aside, and asked Charlie,

"Hello, are you an expert sent by the Su Group?"

Charlie pointed to Maria beside him, and said with a smile:

"I am not an expert, this lady is a real expert."

The security guard said with a puzzled look:

"Boy, when did you two become experts?"

Jasper hurriedly said: "Old Li, how do you talk to a VIP?"

"They are here for the inspection work, and you standing here to dictate, open the door quickly!"

The security guard was surprised, but after all, the factory manager had spoken, so he hurriedly opened the door.

Jasper hurriedly said to Charlie: "I am Jasper Wang, the director of our factory."

"I am in charge of all the big and small affairs here."

"You two should investigate some things today."

"Just tell me, I will definitely do my best to cooperate and never hide anything!"

Charlie nodded and said, "Well, you can arrange a place first,"

"And let's sit down and chat for a while."

Jasper blurted out: "No problem! Then please move over with me. Let's go to the office!"

Charlie asked him: "Is Director Wang driving?"

Jasper nodded quickly: "It's on me!"

"Okay." Charlie said: "Then you lead the way."

"Okay!"

Jasper got into a black Audi car and brought Charlie to the office building of the factory.

Afterward, he courteously invited Charlie and Maria to his office,

And while making tea, he said, "The two of you are here so late today,"

"What do you mainly want to know about us?"

Charlie asked casually: "I heard that your tea base is based on Mount Erlang, right?"

"That's right!" Jasper nodded heavily and explained:

"Our tea base itself was built around Mount Erlang."

"Here are all privately contracted tea mountains,"

"But due to the poor planting and management of these tea farmers,"

"The quality and output of tea here have been declining year after year."

"With careful cultivation, the quality of tea has been greatly improved at present."

Maria heard the keywords of the Erlang Mountain Pucha mother plant,

And she became excited immediately, so she asked:

"Director Wang, may I ask,"

"What do you have to say about the mother plant of Erlang Mountain Pu'er tea?"

Jasper explained: "You honored guests, there is a Pu'er tea tree with a history of more than a thousand years on Erlang Mountain,"

"And there are many tea trees in a radius of tens of miles."

"They were all grafted from it, and we have done a certain degree of breeding work since we took over,"

"And the basis of our breeding at that time was this thousand-year-old Pu'er tea tree."

Maria was even more excited, and asked quickly:

"I don't know if Mr. Wang can take us to see this thousand-year-old tea tree?"

"Maybe it will be of great help to our future breeding direction."

Jasper nodded and said straightforwardly:

"Since the two distinguished guests want to inspect, then You can do it anytime!"

After that, Jasper said again: "It's just that the sky outside is getting darker now,"

"And it will probably be dark when we go up the mountain."

"I don't know if the dark will affect your understanding or judgment?"

Maria said without thinking, "No, I'll know when I see it!"

## Chapter 5699

In Jasper's eyes, Charlie and Maria are his angels of Wealth.

Since they want to go up the mountain, of course, he must fully cooperate.

So, he immediately said to the two: "Please wait a moment,"

"I will gather some people and bring more lighting equipment to go up with you!"

Charlie waved his hand and said: "No need,"

"We are still in the stage of secret investigation,"

"I don't want to let the wind leak, you don't need to deliberately arrange a lot of people,"

"If possible remove all the staff and security guards on the Mountain,"

"And let the security guards stop all monitoring, we just want to go up and have a look."

In the past, if someone made such a request, Jasper would never agree to it.

Although the mother tree on Erlang Mountain is not the best Pu'er tea tree,

It is at least the best Pu'er tea tree in southern Yunnan.

Being famous is also the core competitiveness of the entire Zhicheng Group.

If someone steals the branches and goes back to graft and breed,

It will be a great threat to the Zhicheng Group.

But now Jasper doesn't need to think about this level anymore.

As long as he takes good care of the two in front of him,

The entire Zhicheng Group will be the property of the Su Group after the contract is signed tomorrow,

The mother tree on Erlang Mountain will naturally become the asset of the Su Group,

What else does he have to worry about?

So, he immediately agreed and said with a smile,

"You two wait a moment, I will arrange it!"

Soon, the security guards who were on duty to guard the mother tree 24 hours a day on Erlang Mountain were withdrawn.

All surveillance cameras on Mount Erlang were also cut off from the power supply.

After doing all this, Jasper said courteously:

"The two of you may not know much about the situation of Zhicheng Mountain."

"It may be inconvenient to go up the mountain at night without a guide."

"How about I accompany you two up?"

Charlie and Maria exchanged a glance, Maria seemed reluctant, so she said to Jasper:

"No need for Director Wang, we have already learned about the situation of Zhicheng Group,"

"Thank you for your hard work at the foot of the mountain."

"Just hold on, don't let anyone other than us go up the mountain."

Jasper said without hesitation: "No problem, no problem!"

"You two feel free to go up the mountain, and I will arrange the rest!"

Jasper took two bright flashlights for Charlie and Maria,

And brought them up the mountain at the intersection,

He did not follow the two of them up the mountain.

Charlie and Maria went up all the way,

And there was indeed no trace of other people along the way,

And all the monitoring probes were indeed cut off.

Since Erlang Mountain has been operated by Zhicheng Group for many years,

The Group has built the entire Erlang Mountain into a layer-by-layer terraced field model,

And a large number of tea trees are planted on each layer.

In addition, the Group also built a stone step road up the mountain,

And a freight cableway specially used to transport fresh tea.

When the tea harvest season comes, the workers walk up the mountain to pick it.

After picking a certain amount of each layer,

The tea is collected and transported down the mountain by cableway for processing.

On the way up the mountain, Maria would often pick a leaf from the tea tree at hand and chew it gently in her mouth.

Seeing her tasting all the way, Charlie couldn't help asking:

"How's the quality?"

Maria smiled slightly, and said to him: "The higher the level of the tea here,"

"The better the quality, but the overall level is still poor."

"Quite a few, not high quality, but the new teas seem to have this problem."

"For so many years, the good Puer tea I have drunk,"

"Except for the tea produced by the mother of Pucha, the rest of them are tea cakes with a history of not more than a hundred years without exception,"

"And the newly released teas in recent years are actually not very good."

## Chapter 5700

After speaking, Maria continued: "I think that this should also be inseparable from the development of science and technology."

"In other words, the output of the current tea varieties is at least three times that of before;"

"Apparently, each piece of tea leaves is very plump and has a very good color."

"What's more, it can control pests very well, so the yield rate is also very high."

"There are more growths and less damage, so the overall yield is much stronger than in ancient times."

"In recent years, the same is true of tea breeding ideas."

"The higher the yield, the better the appearance, the better the appearance, and the stronger the pest resistance,"

"Combined with chemical fertilizers and pesticides, the output per unit area will naturally increase geometrically. ;"

Speaking of which, Maria changed the subject, and said again:

"However, with the continuous cultivation of new varieties in this direction,"

"The yield and yield rate have increased, but the taste of tea is actually declining."

"If there is a chance, you can try it in the future."

"Cultivate new varieties in the opposite direction to see if you can get back the taste of the tea of the past,"

"But the premise is to find a good planting tree first,"

"And the good planting tree that I said is to inherit as much tea tree genes as possible."

"It is not a variety that has been improved by technology."

Charlie nodded and said, "Aren't we still going to Banna?"

"Where the mother of Pucha grew up, we should be able to find her offspring, right?"

Maria couldn't help but say: "I also think so. When I was in Banna,"

"I once taught the local tea farmers must have used the mother of Pucha for grafting and breeding."

"I just don't know if so many years have passed. If there any tea farmers in the area."

"People continue to breed the new plants of the mother of pucha,"

"And if we can find them in Banna this time, we will bring some back and cultivate them here."

The two walked and chatted, getting closer and closer to the mountain peak.

As the huge tea tree got closer, Maria became more and more excited.

Although more than three hundred years had passed, she still recognized the tea tree.

Seeing that her body was trembling slightly, Charlie couldn't help asking her:

"Is it here?"

"It's here..." Maria nodded heavily, and said softly:

"I can recognize this tree. Even I still remember the scars on its body."

As she spoke, she couldn't help feeling: "Hundreds of years is an unimaginable time span for people,"

"But for a tree, there is almost no change. In this year, it is still here,"

"Although it was more luxuriant and thicker, but its appearance did not change much."

Immediately, she pointed to a bowl-sized scar on the tree trunk and said to Charlie:

"I used this scar as a mark at that time, and buried the ashes of my parents three steps away from the scar."

After finishing speaking, she took three steps along the direction of the tree scar.

After standing still, she did not shed tears, she just bent down silently,

Gently stroked the soil on the ground, and murmured:

"Father, mother, Maria has come to see you."

After such a long time, for the first time, she was in front of her parents' spirits,

Maria was in a very complicated mood, but she was not very sad. She stroked the ground and said,

"Thank you for the protection from the sky, allowing me to live so many years without any danger,"

"But I'm weak against Victoria, so I haven't come to visit you for so long,"

"And I hope you don't blame me..."

Seeing this, Charlie only wanted to solve all the problems for Maria as much as possible, so he said:

"Miss Lin, don't worry, I'll ask the Su family to build a helipad here and buy a helicopter later."

"If you want to come over in the future, take the private plane of the Su family from Aurous Hill to Poole Airport, and transfer to the helicopter directly after leaving the airport."

"Here, it's the same when going back, let the whole traffic process form a closed loop, even if Warriors Den will stop dormant, it will be impossible to find you,"

"And then you will be able to come from Aurous Hill often."

Maria was slightly taken aback and said:

"I thought that the young master spent a lot of money to buy this place for me so that I can live here in the future."

Charlie hurriedly said: "Don't worry, I'm afraid I won't be able to deal with Victoria and the Den by myself."

"Ms. Lin has a deep understanding of the two. If you can stay in Aurous Hill, you will definitely be able to provide me with a lot of help."

"As for this place, I will let people seize the time to renovate it."

"At that time, I will replace a batch of people here to ensure safety. You will be able to come here often."

Maria was overjoyed, she couldn't help smiling, and said softly:

"Thank you for your trouble, my lord!"

"It's my blessing to be able to share my worries with you!"

# Chapter 5701

For Maria, she has always been a little puzzled.

From that moment on, Charlie treated her unexpectedly well.

Not only did he give her a share of all his elixirs,

But he also promised Old Zhang and others a longer lifespan,

And even put down all the affairs in his hands and accompanied her all the way to southern Yunnan.

And she just wanted to come to Erlang Mountain to pay homage to her parents,

But she didn't expect that Charlie would directly buy the Zhicheng Group that owns Erlang Mountain,

And even want to carry out large-scale renovations here,

So that she can worship her parents in the future.

Maria herself has countless wealth, but what Charlie did,

In Maria's view, can no longer be measured by money.

He must care about her very much to be so attentive and careful.

Maria's guess is not wrong, Charlie really cares about Maria very much,

The grace of saving life is one of them, on the other hand,

The more Charlie gets in touch with her,

The more sympathy he has for her three hundred years unconsciously.

Her years of ups and downs.

And this kind of sympathy can easily turn into distress.

For Maria, who has lived for more than 300 years,

The most important thing in worshiping her parents is to be able to come to the place where her parents are buried,

Touch the soil here with her own hands, and have a few words with her parents.

There is a place for everything and missing.

Maria knelt on the ground and confided to her parents silently for about half an hour,

Then she stood up, looked at the black ground under her feet,

Smiled knowingly, turned around and said to Charlie:

"Master, let's go!"

Charlie said: "It's getting dark if you want to spend more time with your parents,"

"Should we rest here for the night? I can go to the car and get the tent up."

"Young master, don't bother," Maria said softly:

"Although I want to spend more time with my parents,"

"I can't let you accompany me to eat and sleep here."

"What's more, I am nameless, so how dare I let you accompany my parents to guard the coffin?"

"Let's talk about it when Tiannu's family comes alone."

Charlie didn't think about it but just said:

"You don't have to be so polite with me, and I don't need to rest,"

"It's the same everywhere, and it's getting late,"

"We always have to find a place to spend the night,"

"Either go to Poole to find a hotel, or find a place to pitch our tent and camp."

Maria suddenly remembered something, looked at Charlie expectantly, and asked:

"Young Master, this place is not far from Banna, why don't we go to Banna now,"

"And camp tonight by the Tianchi Lake in Banna, where the mother of Pucha passed the catastrophe!"

Charlie was full of anticipation when he saw her.

Immediately nodded without hesitation, and said: "Then let's go to Banna, it's only a two-hour drive!"

After that, Charlie said to her again:

"After Miss Su completes the acquisition, I will ask her to gradually replace all the employees here with her own people she can trust,"

"And then I will transfer a group of soldiers from the Cataclysmic Front to take care of the safety issues."

Maria nodded gratefully and said: "Everything is up to you, Master!"

Immediately, the two came down from Erlang Mountain together.

Jasper had been waiting at the foot of the mountain for a long time.

Seeing the two people coming back, he hurriedly stepped forward and asked,

"Are you satisfied with our tea tree?"

"It was not bad."

"As it gets older, the quality can be considered very good,"

"You must not slacken your security work these two days,"

"And this tea tree must not be damaged in any way before the acquisition is completed."

"Don't worry about that!" Jasper said without hesitation:

"We originally have two security teams working in two shifts 24 hours a day,"

"And we will never let the tea trees have any problems!"

Charlie said, "Okay, Director Wang, I will leave it to you here, we will leave it to you."

"The two of us have other important things to do, so let's go first."

Jasper asked in surprise: "Both of you, it's getting dark now, so don't rush on your way."

"I'll have someone prepare good wine and food in the cafeteria."

"Why don't you two have something to eat first,"

"And I'll arrange two dinners in the evening."

"There is no question about accommodation!"

"No." Charlie smiled slightly and said, "Thank you, Director Wang, for your kindness,"

"But the two of us really have to hurry, so we won't waste time here."

## Chapter 5702

Jasper saw that the two of them were leaving. It had been decided,

So he had no choice but to nod and say: "In this case, I will not keep two distinguished guests."

Charlie shook hands with him, took Maria into the car,

And drove the car away from the Zhicheng Group in the dark.

Now the car is headed towards Banna.

It is not difficult to find the Tianchi Lake where Maria lived.

They can easily find it on the map. Now it has become a tourist attraction in Banna.

However, since the popular tourist spots in Banna are major forest parks and nature reserves,

The Tianchi is a relatively unpopular attraction.

Due to its low popularity, the development of Tianchi is relatively slow.

Several ancient villages have not been relocated, so the tourism development here is even more lagging behind.

After two hours of driving, Charlie and Maria came to the foot of the Tianchi Lake.

There is a winding road here, and they can drive directly up the mountain to several villages on the north bank of Tianchi Lake.

This road is also the only road leading to the outside world from those villages.

Banna is located on a plateau, with an average altitude of 1,500 meters.

The two drove up the mountain, and the altitude quickly reached about 2,000 meters.

Almost star-studded, beautiful.

Maria was in a particularly good mood.

She opened the car window, leaned on the window, and poked her head out to look at the starry sky.

She looked like a little girl returning to her grandmother's house in the countryside after her summer vacation.

She had a happy smile on her face, and her expression was particularly intoxicated.

Charlie couldn't help being overwhelmed by the scenery.

Living in the reinforced concrete city for a long time,

When he looked up every day, he could only see dozens of stars, sometimes even a few.

But here, there are countless stars in the sky, and the outline of the Milky Way is particularly clear and fascinating.

After the car turned a series of sharp turns, Tianchi surrounded by several mountains suddenly appeared in front of them.

The sparkling Tianchi Lake is like a mirror, reflecting the stars all over the sky,

Making this quiet night sky seem to come alive all of a sudden.

Although it is already night, Charlie can still clearly feel that the scene in front of him is not the same as that of Maria at the beginning.

The scenes in the secondary painting are almost exactly the same in both appearance and charm.

Maria was very happy. Looking at the outline of Tianchi, she couldn't help sighing to Charlie:

"Tianchi doesn't seem to have changed at all, even the outline hasn't changed much, it's still the same as before!

"Can you find the location of the mother of Pucha?"

"Yes!" Maria nodded, pointing in the distance, and said to Charlie:

"The mother of Pucha is on the north bank of Tianchi, about a hundred feet away from the edge."

As she spoke, she pointed to the high place on the north bank of Tianchi Lake and said to Charlie:

"The village with the vague outlines of houses over there is the old village."

"It seems to be still there now, but there are almost no houses with lights on. It's almost time to go."

Charlie nodded and said: "Then let's park the car at the entrance of the village and walk down."

"Okay!" Maria couldn't wait any longer. What I like and miss the most is this place."

Following Maria's guidance, Charlie parked the car on the side of the road hundreds of meters away from the entrance of the village.

Then he took the camping equipment and walked down the hillside from the road with Maria to the edge of Tianchi below.

Maria took advantage of the moonlight and starlight to walk about two miles beside Tianchi Lake and finally found the exact location of the mother of Pucha back then.

At this time, she pointed to a piece of bare yellow land a little higher on the shore and said,

"That location should be where the mother of Pucha grew."

Charlie looked around, under the moonlight, there were green grass and trees all around,

But this piece of land with a diameter of more than 100 meters is bare as if alopecia areata.

He couldn't help asking: "Strange, why doesn't anything grow there?"

"Let's have a look?"

"Okay." Charlie agreed without thinking, and together with Maria, they came to the empty land.

Standing still here, Charlie felt even more strange.

He couldn't help saying to Maria: "Miss Lin, the climate here is supposed to be tropical,"

"So it should be comfortable all year round, and the altitude in this mountain is higher,"

"And the temperature is relatively lower, so the climate here should be like spring all year round. Coupled with the high altitude and sufficient sunlight, this climate is unique for plant growth."

Charlie said, "If I remember correctly, half of China's flowers are produced in southern Yunnan."

"It can be seen from this that in a place like southern Yunnan, it is impossible for any piece of land to grow without flowers and plants,"

"So how come this piece of land that has bred the mother of pucha in front of me does not grow anything?"

Maria shook her head in surprise and said: "To tell you the truth, I also find it very strange."

"In the past, the vitality here was extremely vigorous."

"The land beside the Tianchi Lake could not see the color of the soil all year round."

"All the places where plants can grow are covered by various plants."

"Overgrown, the mother of pucha had a radius of 100 feet, and the plants were even more exuberant than usual."

"I didn't expect that there is no grass growing here now."

Charlie sighed: "Maybe it used up all the nutrients in the soil here. Is it all gone?"

Maria shook her head: "Even if it was all used up at the time,"

"It has been more than three hundred years, and even the barren soil can let plants grow."

"So can't be that there is no grass."

As she was speaking, the sky suddenly darkened.

The two of them were looking at the barren yellow land under their feet by moonlight and starlight,

But in the blink of an eye, they felt that everything around them was rapidly darkening.

The two looked up at the sky at the same time, only to see dark clouds coming from nowhere, covering most of Tianchi Lake.

Charlie could see with the naked eye that the speed at which the dark clouds gathered was beyond ordinary,

Which was completely unmatched by the dark clouds in nature, and more like the scene before he activated the Thunderbolt and induced the thunder.

Charlie was startled, and couldn't help but say,

"Why does it feel like someone is doing something?"

Hearing Charlie's words, Maria immediately frowned,

Staring at the dark clouds in the sky that were getting thicker and bigger,

Feeling very Counting quickly with one finger, she murmured:

"It seems that someone did it... more like... more like..."

## Chapter 5703

Charlie saw Maria's horrified expression and her rare nervousness when speaking,

So he quickly asked her, "Miss Lin, what do you think this looks like?!"

With some nervousness, she said: "This... the dark clouds seem to be chaotic and disorderly,"

"But there are vaguely complex laws... It feels..."

"It feels like the image of the Zhen Gua in the sixty-four hexagrams of the Book of Changes..."

"Zhen Gua?!" Charlie listened Shocked,

He couldn't help exclaiming: "Is this cloud really a hexagram image?"

Maria nodded, and murmured: "Zhen hexagrams are always complicated."

"The ancients said that when the shock comes, the smile is hoarse,"

"Not mourning the dagger (chàng), when this hexagram comes out,"

"It is the main hexagram and the guest hexagram overlapping, implying something unexpected,"

"And it must be an earth-shattering event!"

Charlie was even more surprised, and couldn't help asking:

"What? People have the ability to use the clouds in the sky to make divinations?!"

Maria looked blank, "I don't know...but...but this divination seems to have just begun, the moment we came here."

"I think that this should not be artificial."

"It is not artificial..."

Charlie asked her:

"If it is not artificial, then could it be a natural formation?!"

Maria shook her head: "I have not yet understood the mystery..."

While they were speaking, The dark clouds in the sky were still changing rapidly,

And the thick clouds seem to have dug an inexhaustible well in the sky,

Continuously gushing out from among themselves for no reason,

And quickly covering the entire valley where the Tianchi Lake is located.

Maria frowned, stared at the sky with wide eyes, and whispered to herself:

"The hexagrams change too fast... I... I can't understand..."

"What exactly are you trying to tell me? Can you explain it clearly?"

The dark clouds in the sky couldn't understand her murmurs, they just continued to change non-stop.

Maria was already a little impatient, she said anxiously:

"There are too many variables, each of which takes a long time to understand,"

"Such a rapid change, there is just another hexagram in the blink of an eye,"

"I...I really can't see it through....."

Hearing this, Charlie quickly took out his mobile phone and turned on the video recording, and said,

"Miss Lin, don't worry, I'll take pictures of all these changes,"

"And if it doesn't work, you can slowly understand them when you go back."

Maria shook her head and said: "The hexagram image has undergone repeated drastic changes,"

"And everything is framed in the situation of the shaking hexagram,"

"Which indicates that the main hexagram and the guest hexagram are restrained and trapped in each other..."

"No matter who released the hexagram, they are all asking us for help..."

"Moreover, there is a bit of familiar feeling that I can't describe..."

"Help?" Charlie frowned: "You and I have just arrived here, who would suddenly ask us for help?"

Maria murmured: "It's not a person ... There is no one in the hexagram..."

Charlie rubbed his temples: "I am almost confused by you,"

"There is no one, what is it that is asking us for help?"

Maria stared at the ever-changing dark clouds and whispered:

"I haven't figured it out yet...it's not a person,"

"Who it would be, or...what it would be...just...just"

At this point, she suddenly exclaimed: "Ah! I see!"

Charlie hurriedly asked: "What is it, Miss Lin!?"

Maria burst into tears instantly,

She pointed to the bare ground under her feet, extremely excited,

And said extremely nervously: "I know who is asking for help! It's her! It's Mother Pucha!"

# Chapter 5704

Charlie was even more puzzled when he heard this answer:

"Didn't the mother of Pucha fail to overcome the tribulation three hundred years ago?"

"How can she ask us for help now?! And...and it is just a tree,"

"Can it attract the dark clouds in the sky to ask us for help?!"

Maria murmured: "Young master's doubts, I don't know the reason,"

"But I can feel it, that familiar feeling is the mother of Pucha..."

Charlie said: "Okay, assuming what you said is correct,"

"It is indeed the mother of Pucha who is asking us for help through the clouds,"

"But what exactly does she need us to do? How can we help her?"

Maria was also a little anxious: "I don't know... I can only see that she is asking for help."

"This ever-changing hexagram gives me the feeling that she is trapped in this shaking hexagram and cannot break free,"

"But there is nothing in it. It didn't tell me what to do to help her out..."

At this time, the dark clouds had become thicker and thicker,

And the huge dark clouds began to condense into a ball and began to sink slowly.

The air is already full of moist water vapor,

And the air pressure seems to have begun to drop rapidly,

Making people's breathing a bit dull, just like the feeling before the super thunderstorm in summer.

Maria has no cultivation base, so her breathing feels a little difficult at this time,

And her expression is becoming more and more anxious.

It is rare for her to lose her composure and keep stomping on the spot.

If she is about to be devoured by it,

If she can't think of a countermeasure, she may never be able to save her...

"What to do... What to do..."

Charlie was even more confused, and even Maria couldn't figure it out.

He couldn't figure out the hexagram, so seeing Maria anxious, he could only stand there and worry.

The dark clouds are still thickening and sinking at this moment,

Forming a strong low-pressure area above the entire Lake.

Maria already feels that she is not breathing well.

She can only take deep breaths while constantly turning her brain to think about the problem.

Charlie couldn't understand the hexagrams,

But he analyzed them rationally, and said, "Miss Lin,"

"If she is really asking us for help, it must be within our capabilities."

"Where can we help her? Could it be that we need to help her disperse this dark cloud? We can't do it either!"

Maria nodded, and said anxiously: "Master is right..."

"If we need to disperse there is really nothing we can do about this dark cloud..."

"Master's supernatural powers can attract thunder, but the thunder is only effective on real objects."

"The dark cloud is the companion product of thunder and lightning."

"It is more like water and fish."

"I'm sure we won't be afraid of thunder and lightning... Then what else can we do?"

Charlie's eyes suddenly lit up when she said this, and he blurted out:

"I understand!"

Maria hurriedly asked: "What did you find, Master?!"

Charlie asked her: "Miss Lin, did you find that there is only something missing in such a thick dark cloud and such a strong low pressure?"

Maria suddenly widened her eyes: "Lack of lightning!"

"Yes!" Charlie nodded heavily: "If it was normal, this kind of heavy dark cloud would have thundered and flashed long ago,"

"But although this dark cloud is very thick, there is no trace of thunder and lightning."

"My soul-piercing blade was destroyed when Jermo blew himself up last time,"

"And the only magic weapon that can be released from a long distance right now is the re-refined Thunderbolt."

"I should give it a try!"

Maria said happily, "Master's re-refined Thunder Token,"

"Is it made from the piece of lightning strike wood that I gave you?"

"Yes!"

Maria became more excited and clenched her fists excitedly and said:

"The lightning strike wood is the broken branch of the mother of Pucha!"

"Maybe, she hasn't disappeared in the past three hundred years since she failed to overcome the catastrophe."

"Seems she has been waiting for this day!"

# Chapter 5705

Maria's words inspired Charlie too!

He also felt that there were many coincidences in this.

Why is there such a strange dark cloud suddenly overwhelming?

Why does the dark cloud still show the image of shaking hexagrams?

Why did the dark clouds lack thunder and lightning?

Why did it appear in the place where the mother of Pucha failed to cross the catastrophe?

In addition, he just prepared the lightning strike wood formed by the failure of the mother of Pucha to cross the tribulation and created a brand new thunder order.

Many puzzling elements are gathered together,

Maria's conjecture is the only answer that can answer all doubts!

Thinking of this, Charlie blurted out without hesitation:

"In this case, then I will lead to a thunderstorm for the dark clouds in the sky!"

Maria nodded heavily, her eyes were full of expectation, and said:

"The mother of Pucha and me are also counted."

"There is a good chance of help!"

Charlie took out the Thunderbolt, held it in the palm of his hand,

Fixed his eyes on the black cloud that was getting lower and thicker above his head,

And instantly stopped his heart that was covering up the aura.

Immediately afterward, he shouted: "Thunder is coming!!"

All of a sudden, the spiritual energy in his body quickly gushed out from the eight extraordinary meridians,

And frantically poured into the Thunderbolt in his hand.

In just the blink of an eye, the dark thunder order even began to overflow with white light from the inside out,

And most of the aura in Charlie's body was absorbed by the thunder order.

He felt that the thunderbolt in his hand became more and more trembling,

The light became stronger and stronger, and there was even the sound of an electric current inside.

At this moment, he felt that what he held in his hand was no longer a thunderbolt,

But spherical lightning mentioned in science fiction for a long time!

Maria had never seen such a scene before, and her intuition told her that the light in Charlie's hands was getting stronger and stronger,

If she didn't make a move in time, she might be in danger of hurting Charlie herself,

So she subconsciously shouted: "Master, Quickly cast the spell, don't wait any longer!"

Charlie shook his head, and said, "When to cast the spell, it's not up to me anymore!"

If it was normal, when Charlie thundered, the sky would be covered by dark clouds,

And the thunder would roar and would soon descend from the clouds.

But this time, Charlie shouted with a thunder,

But the Thunderbolt in his hand didn't immediately generate lightning,

But kept accumulating energy, as if it was controlling the strength of the spell itself.

In other words, it made him feel that the aura he had accumulated was not enough!

At this time, the dark clouds in the sky had become unbelievably thick, and it was a bottomless darkness!

Maria was horrified, and asked him blurted out:

"Isn't this Thunderbolt controlled by the young master?"

Charlie raised his right hand with some difficulty, and seeing the light getting stronger,

He said with difficulty: "You guessed right! This must be The mother of Pucha calling,"

"And the Thunderbolt in my hand was originally a part of her,"

“And now I think it has been controlled by her, and it is no longer up to me!”

Just as he was speaking, the Thunderbolt in Charlie’s hand suddenly lost its light

And the next moment, an invisible and powerful energy shot out from the Thunderbolt,

Rushing straight towards the dark cloud!

Charlie felt as if his body was emptied in an instant,

And most of his aura was exhausted by this blow.

And the next moment, the inside of the dense black cloud in the sky suddenly rolled at an extremely high speed,

And immediately after that, rumbling thunder was heard from inside,

And the lightning inside was frequent, complex lightning like plant roots, splitting the black cloud into countless small pieces of different sizes and shapes.

What’s even more strange is that these roaring sounds seem to be intensifying,

And the lightning that keeps shining in the cloud seems to be getting thicker and brighter.

It’s as if Charlie’s lightning strike just kicked off a performance.

Right now, the thunder and lightning in the clouds are constantly pushing the performance to a climax.

Then, the black cloud began to slowly move from above the lake to where Charlie and Maria were.

Seeing that the lightning and thunder were getting closer,

# Chapter 5706

Charlie quickly took Maria's hand and led her to run backwards several hundred meters.

When the two stood in time, the center of the thunderbolt and the black cloud had already hung above the bare yellow land.

At this moment, a thunderbolt with the thickness of a bowl descended from the black cloud and struck the yellow ground directly.

In an instant, the sky suddenly brightened like daylight,

And the thunderclap sounded as loud as tons of explosives detonated in the ears,

It was deafening.

And as this bolt of lightning fell, the black clouds that had accumulated for a long time suddenly poured down rain,

And the rainwater formed a line from the sky to the ground.

Charlie and Maria had nowhere to hide, and were completely drenched by the rain from top to bottom in an instant.

Maria didn't care about the fact that she was already drenched,

And ran towards the piece of yellow land where Pucha mother failed to cross the tribulation.

Charlie was caught off guard by her action, and shouted: "It is dangerous, don't go there!"

After saying that, he wanted to chase Maria back.

But Maria didn't flinch at all, while running recklessly, she said to Charlie:

"Master, I feel her!"

Charlie subconsciously asked: "What did you feel? The mother of Pucha?"

"Yes! "Maria's voice was trembling, and she said repeatedly:

"It's her! It must be her! She came back to life!"

Charlie was puzzled in his heart. Can it come back to life?

However, right now the black cloud has stopped lightning and thunder,

And all that remains is torrential rain,

And there is no breath of thunder and lightning in the black cloud, presumably they have already withdrawn.

Seeing that there was no risk of lightning strikes,

Charlie did not pull Maria back but followed her to the yellow land.

At this time, the yellow land was already muddy from the impact of the rain.

Maria kept wiping the rainwater from her eyes and face with both hands,

And at the same time looked around carefully, as if she were looking for something.

Charlie also looked around, but the yellow land was muddy except for the rain, and there was no sign of anything else at all.

So he asked Maria: "Miss Lin, where did you feel the mother of Pucha?"

Maria stared at the ground and said loudly, "This is it!"

After finishing speaking, Maria pointed to the center of the yellow earth,

Feeling extremely excited shouted: "Master, look!"

Charlie looked in the direction of her finger,

And suddenly saw a scene that he had never seen in his life.

In the yellow land washed by the torrential rain,

A piece of tender green sprouts stubbornly emerged from the muddy soil against the torrential rain.

Moreover, the speed at which this sprout grows seems to be watching a time-lapse photography that condenses a video of more than ten days.

After this sprout emerged from the soil, it grew rapidly at a speed visible to the naked eye.

In the blink of an eye, It grew from a height of one or two centimeters to seven or eight centimeters,

And the originally curled shoot, which was not the size of a fingernail, quickly grew to the size of a thumb.

Immediately afterward, a new sprout the size of a needle tip emerged from the tail of the sprout,

And the sprout also grew and grew in size at an extremely fast speed.

Charlie stared dumbfounded, while Maria at the side was ecstatic,

And even knelt on the ground subconsciously, using her body to block the rainwater for the bud.

And the bud quickly grew into a seedling. In just a few minutes,

It grew from a height of a few centimeters to a height of about 20 centimeters.

The previous two leaves also gradually increased to more than ten leaves,

And three were even pulled out with new branches.

At this moment, the torrential rain stopped abruptly,

And the black clouds in the sky continued to rapidly collapse toward the center,

And disappeared in less than half a minute.

The bright moon and the sky full of stars reappeared above the Lake.

What's even more strange is that the loess land had already turned into a piece of mud during the torrential rain just now,

But at this moment, all the rainwater seemed to disappear out of thin air.

And the water on Charlie and Maria's bodies disappeared without a trace.

The clothes on the two of them were extremely dry, and there was no trace of being wet by the rain at all.

Everything was back to how Charlie and Maria were when they first arrived here.

The only difference is that in the center of the bare yellow land,

A very delicate seedling with a faint tea fragrance has emerged...!

# Chapter 5707

At this time, Maria was concentrating all her thoughts on the seedlings in front of her.

Looking at the seedling, her face was full of excitement.

And Charlie, who was standing by the side, looked at the emerald green seedling, and he was nothing but dazed.

He felt that his brain circuit was not enough.

He couldn't understand why all traces of rain disappeared after a heavy rain.

The nine-year compulsory education he had received left him with only four words in his mind at the moment: this is fucking unscientific.

He looked at his whole body, stretched out his hands from the top of his head to his chest,

Then from his chest to his back, and then from his back to his ankles.

He couldn't help taking off his shoes and reached into them for a long time.

However, the places touched by the fingers are very dry, and there is no trace of being drenched in rain at all.

The same goes for Maria.

Charlie clearly remembered that just now Maria's hair was wet from the heavy rain and stuck to her cheeks, she was somewhat embarrassed.

The trendy T-shirt on her body, because of the water, clearly showed traces of innerwear.

But now, not to mention watermarks on her oversized t-shirt, not even a wrinkle can be seen.

"It's so fcuking weird!" Charlie muttered to himself.

Immediately afterward, he asked Maria again: "Miss Lin,"

"Did it really rain just now? This shouldn't be my hallucination alone, right?"

Maria nodded lightly, and said softly: "Young master, there was indeed a heavy rain just now."

"I have lived for so many years, and I have never seen such a heavy rain."

"Yes." Charlie also nodded slightly, and then Staring at her closely, he asked,

"But where is the rain? Where did it go?"

Maria shook her head, "I don't know."

Charlie put his hands on his hips, and said inexplicably,

"This is really unscientific. People say that geese leave traces."

"Such a heavy rain, how can it be gone? The soil is not even wet, what a dream..."

Maria smiled and said: "Young master cultivates the Tao, and in front of you is a strange woman who has lived for nearly four hundred years. Why are you still obsessed with science?"

Charlie said seriously: "I think Tao can also be explained by science,"

"But the current level of technology has not yet grasped the principle,"

"And aura is nothing more than a higher-level energy, just like it is atomic energy."

"When people have not mastered it, they feel incredible."

"Presumably at that time, no one would believe that the energy released by one kilogram of nuclear fuel would be equal to thousands of tons,"

"That is, millions of kilograms of coal. Reiki It may be an invisible energy similar to nuclear fuel."

Maria smiled, and said seriously: "What you said makes sense, maybe aura is just like what you said,"

"It is another kind of energy that has not been mastered by most people,"

"Nor has it been accepted by most people to research out the principle for a higher level of energy."

Charlie said again: "Even spiritual energy must follow the law of energy conservation?"

"It rained so much just now, the rain stopped, and the water is still there. This is energy conservation."

"But where did the water go now?"

As he spoke, Charlie continued: "Also, I used up most of the spiritual energy in my body with a lightning strike, so where did my spiritual energy go?"

Maria pointed at the seedling in front of her, and smiled as she said,

"Master your aura is here! If it weren't for the thunder from you, how could the mother of Pucha be reborn?"

Charlie was stunned, and asked her: "Wasn't the mother of Pucha turned into coke more than three hundred years ago?"

Maria nodded, and said seriously: "Indeed, I saw her being smashed into coke by the lightning."

Charlie pointed to the seedling, and asked: "How can this be explained?"

Maria said very seriously: "Master, although the mother of pucha is just a tree,"

"She is also a tree that survives the catastrophe. Not a human being, but think about it differently,"

"If a person can live to overcome the catastrophe, how terrifying is his strength?"

"Similarly, among the trillions of trees in this world, the mother of pucha is probably the one of the best,"

"And her ability is probably far beyond our imagination."

Charlie asked in surprise: "You mean, how can she save herself after the failure of crossing the catastrophe?"

Maria nodded and asked Charlie: "Master, have you ever heard of Sanxian?"

Charlie shook his head subconsciously: "I have never heard of it."

Maria said: "In the past legends about cultivating Taoism, there is such a saying that if you can successfully survive the catastrophe, you will become a fairy."

"To become an immortal, if you fail to cross the tribulation, you will be wiped out,"

"But in addition, there is actually another possibility, that is, when you fail to cross the tribulation, you will be disbanded and become a loose immortal."

"In this way, you can reshape the golden body and regain Cultivation,"

"It's just that there will be no chance to ascend through the catastrophe in this life."

## Chapter 5708

Charlie asked in surprise: "So powerful? Does that mean that as long as the cultivation level can be raised to the level of transcending the catastrophe,"

"It is equivalent to a guarantee to become a fairy, and lose the soldiers and become a loose fairy?"

Maria covered her mouth with a smile, and said, "What are you thinking, young master? Let's not talk about whether the legend of Sanxian is true or not,"

"Even if it is true, it is also noted in the legend. There are very few people who solve the war, and it is hard to find one out of a hundred."

"The success rate is even lower than the success of crossing the catastrophe."

"Out of a hundred people, ninety-nine are smashed to pieces by the lightning, and only one is lucky enough to survive."

As she said that, Maria said again: "Let's say the university entrance exam as an example, then I will compare all the monks who have passed the calamity to the fresh graduates."

"Those who become immortals are basically equivalent to being admitted to Tsinghua University and Yanda University."

"Or Harvard and Cambridge, as long as candidates who are not admitted to these top universities will be eliminated in principle,"

"They will be directly expelled from the high school campus and assigned to the society, and they will not have the opportunity to step into the campus in this life

"The unlucky guy who is only 0.1 point away from the admission scores of these top universities, after he became a Sanxian, although he lost the opportunity to go to university in this life,"

"He has one advantage, that is, he is allowed to continue his studies;"

"It's just that he has to start from the first grade and study until the third year of high school;"

"But after the third year of high school, he has to stay in the third year of high school for the rest of his life, and he will be a third-year student all his life."

"If a person fails the college entrance examination at the age of 18, then starts to study again in the third year of high school, and then repeats the grade in the third year of high school until he is 100 years old,"

"The classmates around him will always be a group of 18-year-old young people,"

"They will either enter the university and leave, or be sent directly to the society,"

"Never to see him again, only him, who will stay here forever, Sanxian almost feels like this."

Charlie was slightly startled, gave Maria a thumbs up, and sighed:

"Miss Lin is really talented and intelligent, with your explanation, I basically can understand what Sanxian is."

After speaking, Charlie looked at the seedling again and asked her:

"Miss Lin, are you sure this is the mother of Pucha?"

Maria nodded heavily: "Sure! Her aura is exactly the same as that of the mother of Pucha."

"In addition to the many coincidences just now, I can conclude that this is 100% the mother of Pucha."

Charlie nodded slightly and murmured: "If Really, does that mean that the mother of pucha has become a loose fairy in the tree?"

Maria said without thinking: "It's almost the same meaning, but the loose fairy is just some rumors I heard before,"

"And I haven't had a chance to prove it. So all this is just the inference of mine."

Charlie nodded, squatted down beside her, looked at the seedling, and murmured fascinatedly:

"This seedling looks ordinary, nothing special, it's just that the tea smell is stronger,"

"But the slightest bit of aura is not there I can't feel it."

Maria saw that he was suspicious, and said very firmly:

"Young master, everything I said is true, and I believe that she must be the mother of Pucha!"

"Tsk..." Charlie smacked his lips while standing still. Nodding, he murmured:

"There is such a miraculous thing, it's unbelievable and unheard of."

Then, he asked Maria curiously: "It grew so fast just now, why isn't it growing now?"

Maria Also with a dazed look on her face: "Master, this I don't know..."

Charlie rested his chin with one hand, looked at the seedling, and sighed:

"It's interesting, it's really interesting."

After finishing speaking, he smelled the refreshing scent of tea, subconsciously, he stretched out his hand and grabbed a young leaf from the seedling,

And while putting it in his mouth, she muttered: "Let me taste it, what would such an awesome tea tree taste like!"

Seeing him tearing off a young leaf, Maria immediately felt distressed. Shouting: "Master, you must not do it, ah!"

Before Maria could finish her "ah",

Charlie quickly reached out and grabbed a piece, handed it to her mouth, and said seriously:

"It's better to have fun alone than to have fun with others."

"You should try it too, you have drank so many tea cakes from her, you must be the most familiar with her taste, try it and see if it is the same taste."

Maria was about to cry, and said with red eyes: "Young Master, she waited for more than three hundred years and just broke the ground today."

"There are only a dozen young leaves in total, and the young master picked two of them off. It's so pitiful..."

"It's okay." Charlie said seriously: "Look at her vitality is so strong,"

"The leaves that are pulled out will definitely grow back soon, you and I will treat it as a pruning for her,"

"Don't people say, the tree will not be straight if it is not pruned?"

Maria was wronged incomparably when she said: "Young master, she has just sprouted, why can't she just cultivate at this time..."

Seeing that her eyes were flushed, Charlie reluctantly handed the two leaves to her, and said,

"Look, I've pulled them all, and I can't put them back for her."

"At worst, I'll only pull these two leaves, and I won't pull any more leaves."

"Is it okay?"

Maria sighed resentfully, and muttered angrily,

"Young master, taste it yourself, I can't bear it..."

## Chapter 5709

“How can I? You are the only one who understands the mother of Pucha,”

“It’s useless to judge by me, you have to taste it to be sure!”

He said, handing one piece to

Maria’s mouth and the other side putting a leaf in his own mouth, he said,

“Come on, let’s taste it together.”

Seeing his insistence, Maria knew that she couldn’t hold him back,

So she gave him a faint look, and said, “Okay... just let me taste it.”

After finishing speaking, she opened her red lips lightly,

And gently bit the delicate green leaf.

Charlie saw that she had eaten it, so he put his piece in his mouth and chewed it with confidence.

He originally thought that this thing smelled very fragrant of tea,

And the taste should be very good, but he never dreamed that after the green leaf was in his mouth and chewed by him,

It would release a small burst of rich and pure aura!

With one sip, the aura instantly lifted his spirits.

Although the content of the aura is not much, it is extremely pure.

Moreover, this is fresh tea without any refinement.

This kind of plant itself has an aura, and Charlie has never seen it before.

Maria also tasted the strangeness of this piece of tea at this time,

The tea leaf was chewed and she felt neither astringent nor bitter,

With a slight sweet taste, what was even more strange was that this tea had a kind of taste that makes people feel comfortable and refreshed.

She has tasted countless teas in her life and knows a lot about the tea produced by the mother of pucha,

But she has never tasted such a miraculous tea.

She asked Charlie with a look of surprise: “Young master,”

“Why does this tea have such obvious effects? It seems that after tasting a piece,”

“All the fatigue disappeared in an instant!”

“I remember that the tea that is the mother of pucha did not have this effect... ..”

Charlie said seriously: “That’s because the leaf contains spiritual energy.”

“There is spiritual energy?!” Maria exclaimed, “How is this possible?”

“I have heard from my father before that everything in the world can be used to refine spiritual energy.”

“There are many kinds of medicinal materials for elixir, and these medicinal materials need to be mixed with other medicinal materials,”

“And they must be refined by a special person to have an aura,”

“This leaf has just grown, how can there be aura?”

Charlie said: “Perhaps this is caused by the experience of the mother of Pucha’s failure to cross the catastrophe and being reborn after encountering thunder.”

“Just like the Sanxian we talked about just now,”

“Maybe the mother of Pucha has really become a Sanxian in the field of plants now.”

Charlie said again: “Except for the mother of pucha, I have never encountered a plant that has aura in itself.”

Maria said excitedly: “Then I feel that she must not be a Sanxian who left.”

“Because she originally had no aura, but now she has an aura just after sprouting,”

“And for a Sanxian it is said that there is a chance to rebuild,”

“Which means that her room for improvement is limited,”

“And her strength will not bring about a qualitative change.”

Charlie asked her: “Then what’s her situation now?”

Maria shook her head: “I don’t know, but I feel that she is more like a rebirth from Nirvana,”

“Which has caused a qualitative change! I think when she passed the catastrophe three hundred years ago,”

“She was given a chance and saved, and she waited for three hundred years,”

“And finally waited for you to come here, after the storm and lightning just now,”

“She can be regarded as a fortunate being comparable to a weathered dragon!”

Maria frowned and said: “It’s just that I really want to know more and it doesn’t make sense,”

“How did she bypass the way of heaven and left a glimmer of life for herself under the thunder of heaven.”

Charlie was not interested in how the mother of Pucha left this glimmer of life back then,

But just looking at this Seedling couldn't help sighing:

"If you take this back and raise it properly when she grows into a big tree several meters high,"

"You will become a peerless expert just picking leaves and eating every day?"

Maria asked in surprise: "Young master will take her away?"

"Of course!" Charlie said firmly: "If we leave her here, not to mention that I don't want to part with it,"

"If she falls into the wrong hands, or is shoveled by someone who doesn't understand, wouldn't it be a waste?"

"But..." Maria couldn't bear it, and said: "But...she has grown here for tens of thousands of years...this is her root..."

Charlie waved his hand: "No, no, she didn't know what to do last time." She has lived here for ten thousand years and failed to overcome the tribulation,"

"Which means that this place is not suitable for her."

"A person cannot fall twice in one place, and the tree is the same,"

"So she has to change to another place and we should take good care."

Maria asked: "Young master, where do you think it is appropriate to change her?"

Charlie said: "I think the small courtyard on the top floor of Zijin Villa is quite good,"

"We dig her back, and you can plant her by the side of your hot spring pool. Okay?"

"You know how to plant Pu'er tea trees, so I'm sure you can take care of her."

Maria subconsciously said, "Pu'er tea trees can only grow in the climate of southern Yunnan,"

"Where the altitude, climate, sunlight, temperature, and humidity are most suitable for Pu'er tea trees."

"Aurous Hill is too cold in winter, and Puer tea trees can't hold on!"

Charlie said: "Puer tea can't adapt to Aurous Hill,"

"But she is not an ordinary Puer tea, she is the mother of Pucha, and she has survived the catastrophe,"

"And now With aura, her adaptability must be very strong."

"Your other courtyard is very good, and no one disturbs it at ordinary times."

"As long as the tree does not grow too high, no one will see it."

"If it really grows taller after a few years, Let's just change her place."

Then, Charlie said again: "In case she really doesn't adapt to the climate of Aurous Hill,"

"We can build her a greenhouse and simulate the climate of southern Yunnan?"

Maria said quietly: "Master, you want to raise her so that you can pick her leaves every day, right?"

Charlie said frankly, "Of course, planting tea trees means picking her leaves."

"Isn't it just to plant an apple tree just to make her bear a few apples?"

"Otherwise, what do you do to raise her? It is said that this thing can grow to more than ten meters high, so I can't keep it as a green plant just to see it?"

What Charlie said was straightforward, and Maria couldn't find any reason to refute it.

After thinking for a moment, she said seriously:

"If the young master wants to take her back, I only have one request."

"I wonder if the young master can agree?"

Charlie said with a smile: "You just have to say it."

"That is, the young master can no longer pick her leaves at will,"

"At least until she grows bigger and the leaves are denser, what do you think?"

Charlie nodded readily and said: "No problem, to be honest, the aura in her leaves is really very strong."

"Very pure, but the content is too small, I really want to have an effect comparable to that of pills,"

"So I have to use her a lot, let's raise her!"

Maria breathed a sigh of relief and said: "It's okay to dig her out. It's not impossible,"

"As long as you don't hurt the roots when you dig, and you can bring more soil when you remove it,"

"It's not a big problem, but I'm afraid that if the delay on the road is too long,"

"It will affect her state, even if she is the mother of pucha. And now it's just grown out, it's too delicate."

## Chapter 5710

Charlie nodded and said, "Well, you and I will stay here, and I will arrange a plane to wait at the airport in Banna."

"When the plane arrives, we will dig her out, and then go directly to the airport to fly back to Aurous Hill!"

Maria asked: "What about Victoira? She should have reached the Hundred Mountains by now!"

"It's okay." Charlie waved his hand: "Don't provoke her, let her go,"

"After she's gone, we'll find a way to review her route and see if we can find out the exact location in the Mountains."

Charlie suddenly said that he wanted to leave, and she didn't have any regrets in her heart.

What's more, this time she came to South Yunnan,

She actually had an unexpected harvest. Before that, she managed to get to the limit under Victoira's nose,

And now she accidentally got the young plant of the mother of pucha, which has been reborn.

However, Charlie said that he would bring the mother of pucha back to Aurous Hill, which made her very nervous.

Originally, she thought that the young plant that was reborn from the mother of pucha should continue to grow here.

But Charlie's words moved her again. In any field, she followed the path of failure invariably, and the result was only failure.

The mother of Pucha's past life was like a protracted physical experiment.

It's like a scientist who struggles all his life to find a room-temperature superconductor.

Seeing that all the data are infinitely close, but they just can't break through the last layer.

If it takes another lifetime to do the wrong research again, the result will definitely not change in any way.

Perhaps tens of thousands of years later, the mother of pucha will have to endure the lightning strike of the reincarnation of the heavens here again, and then fail to cross the catastrophe again.

However, by that time, I'm afraid there won't be another Charlie to help her rebirth from Nirvana.

Thinking of this, Maria accepted Charlie's decision to take this young plant back to Aurous Hill.

She has lived with the mother of Pu-erh tea for many years, not only has a very good understanding of it,

But also has far-reaching experience in the cultivation of Pu-erh tea.

But even so, she was still worried that transplanting the newly grown seedling rashly would bring the seedling a near-death risk.

Charlie saw that she had been hesitating as if she didn't know where to start,

So he comforted her and said, "Miss Lin, don't worry, she has already conceived spiritual energy,"

"And she will definitely not die so easily."

"Let's take her back and cultivate her well."

"Maybe I can use her tea leaves to make tea next year."

Maria nodded slightly, and asked him, "My lord, when will the plane arrive?"

Charlie said, "Wait a minute, I'll make a call to arrange it."

After finishing speaking, he immediately called Issac.

Since the two of them came to southern Yunnan, they asked Issac to use the business jet rented by the company,

So it was not so convenient to arrange.

Because Charlie didn't set a return date before departure, and Issac didn't dare to pay for the plane to wait at Lijiang Airport,

So he just booked a one-way trip. The plane returned to the eastern region on the day it arrived in Lijiang.

Now If you want to dispatch a plane, you can only temporarily negotiate with the business jet company.

The company that operates the business jet is urgently dispatching a Gulfstream business jet that is currently parked in the provincial capital Chuncheng.

This business jet will not arrive at Banna Airport until 8:30 a.m. at the earliest.

Issac called Charlie back, and after explaining the situation, he said very apologetically,

“Young Master, I’m sorry, I didn’t think carefully. If you are in a hurry,”

“I can immediately coordinate a Wade family’s plane to go there, within two hours at the fastest. It will arrive.”

Charlie said: “It’s not your problem, I didn’t expect to go back in such a hurry.”

Then, Charlie said: “But don’t be in a hurry, coordinate the business jet of the third party to come over,”

“I will go to the airport at 8:00 tomorrow morning.”

Seeing that Charlie had already made a decision, Issac quickly said:

“Master, if this is the case, then I will confirm the itinerary with the business jet company now,”

“Do you think there is anything else you need me to do now?”

“No more.” Charlie said: “After you make arrangements for me,”

“Don’t tell anyone that I’m going back to Aurous Hill,”

“Because I may just stay in for a day or two when I go back,”

“And will come out again soon. This time I won’t see anyone when I come back.”

Issac didn’t ask why, and said without hesitation: “Okay young master, I understand!”

Originally, Charlie didn’t intend to return to Aurous Hill in such a hurry.

He originally thought that he would let Victoria go to Hundred Mountains (Shiwan Dashan) first,

And he would stay with Maria in southern Yunnan for two more days.

After all, she lived here since she was a child, but she hasn’t come back for more than three hundred years.

This kind of homesickness, other people can’t understand or experience it at all.

After Victoria has almost left from Hundred Mountains, he and Maria will return to Aurous Hill.

After arriving in Aurous Hill, he will ask Ethan for help.

Using his connections and background, he will get all the surveillance videos of Victoria after she arrives in China.

They can replay her approximate route.

And when the route is resumed, he will immediately go to Shiwan Dashan and retrace Victoira's route to see if he can gain anything.

But now, the mother of pucha suddenly appeared,

And Charlie didn't dare to let her grow up here,

So he could only poach her first and take her back to Aurous Hill so that Maria could settle it properly in her top-floor courtyard.

It just so happened that he could also take this opportunity to review the current surveillance data to see if he could figure out Victoria's route.

After Maria settled down with the mother of pucha and he has sorted out Victoria's route,

He will go directly from Aurous Hill to Shiwanda Mountain.

The intelligent Maria listened to the call between Charlie and Issac,

And already guessed Charlie's next plans and arrangements.

So, she asked Charlie: "Young Master, when I go to the Shiwan Dashan, can you take me with you?"

Charlie said: "Even now, most of the Shiwan Dashan are uninhabited."

"I don't know if it is safe for you."

Maria pursed her lips, and said in a low voice: "My lord, you think that I will hold you back?"

"It's not..." Charlie comforted:

"I just think that you, a girl, are really not suitable to go to such a dangerous and primitive place."

Maria said seriously: "If I am with the young master,"

"As long as there is no direct conflict with Victoira,"

"The young master will definitely protect the safety of mine."

Then, Maria said: "To be honest, my father once told me that. However, the master's closed-door retreat has complicated formations and many traps."

"If you don't know the essentials, it will be difficult to find the cave where the old man retreated in a lifetime."

"Although the young master is very talented, things like formations are ever-changing."

"I may also be able to help the young master if I am there."

Charlie naturally understood this truth.

Taking Maria with him is equivalent to bringing a super think tank.

She is not only smart but also well-informed.

He may not be able to see through the mysteries of many things, but Maria may be able to see through them at a glance.

However, Maria has no strength to restrain a chicken, and she is a weak woman whose biological age has always remained at the age of seventeen.

The depths of the Shiwan Dashan are comparable to primeval forests.

He is afraid that she will have to suffer a lot when following along with him.

Seeing Charlie's hesitation, Maria said very frankly: "Master,"

"I said before that Jermo once mentioned that your parents may have found the secret of longevity."

"I feel that my father once practiced with the master in the Shiwan Dashan."

"Your parents once explored the mysteries left by the master in Shiwan Dashan,"

"So I, like you, have a fate with the Shiwan Dashan. I want to take this opportunity to take my father's spiritual tablet and go back to Shiwan Dashan,"

"If I can find the place where he practiced with Master back then, it will be considered a fulfillment of his wish."

# Chapter 5711

Maria's request gave Charlie no reason to refuse.

The Shiwan Dashan are certainly difficult and dangerous for a weak woman like Maria,

But as long as he was there, the hardships and dangers would be nothing.

Thinking of this, Charlie agreed and said:

"In that case, then we will go together."

Maria nodded happily and said excitedly: "Thank you, Master!"

"I will try not to cause trouble to the Master!"

Charlie slightly said With a smile, he sat down on the ground next to the Mother of Pu Tea and said,

"Let's wait here for a while. We will dig up this young plant and go to the airport at dawn."

Maria nodded and hugged her knees on the other side of the Mother Pucha.

She sat down on his side, looked at the sparkling and extremely quiet Tianchi water surface,

And asked softly: "Master, do you think the heavy rain just now was an illusion or reality?"

Charlie thought for a while: "It should be an illusion, right?"

"What do you think?"

Maria pondered for a moment and said:

"I feel that it seems to be between reality and illusion."

Charlie frowned slightly: "Shouldn't the two be a choice?"

Maria shook her head and said: "It always feels like half true and half false, true and false, false and true."

Charlie smiled and said: "Tomorrow morning you can ask the nearby villagers,"

"If they heard thunder and rain last night."

"The noise just now was so loud."

"If it is real, then it is impossible for the villagers to not feel it."

Maria nodded slightly and murmured: "It doesn't seem to be that simple..."

After that, she looked at Charlie and said with a smile:

"I have thought about the problem. It's complicated."

Charlie nodded without thinking much, looked at the camping equipment he brought when he got out of the car, and asked her:

"Miss Lin has been running around for so long and hasn't even had time to rest."

"Do you want me to set up the tent and you go to sleep first? For a while?"

Maria asked Charlie, "Master, are you tired?"

Charlie said casually: "I won't be tired even if I don't sleep for a month."

"Besides, I have to keep an eye on the mother of Pucha."

"If someone digs this up, I'm afraid I will regret it to death."

Maria said shyly: "I don't feel tired at all."

"I just ate that leaf. I feel refreshed and relaxed. I'm not tired at all."

Charlie nodded. Although Maria didn't master spiritual energy,

She still had spiritual energy. This extremely pure energy has an effect on anyone.

Judging from the aura contained in the leaf of the mother of Pucha tea just now,

Its efficacy is almost equivalent to a quarter of a Heart-Saving pill.

It is not a big problem for ordinary people to live for a year or a half after taking one piece,

And their health condition will also be significantly improved,

And no matter what kind of disease they are suffering from, they can see great improvement.

The Evergreen Pill that Maria took is the ceiling of her current lifespan.

She will not even get sick before she is five hundred years old.

Therefore, in this case, the leaves of the Mother of Pucha cannot extend her lifespan,

Nor can it eliminate her ailments.

But it made her body feel like it was on infinite clockwork, and she did not feel tired at all.

Since neither of them was sleepy at all, Charlie stopped assembling the tent.

He and Maria sat on the edge of Tianchi, immersed in looking at the stars in the sky and chatting about their respective past events.

Charlie enjoyed chatting with Maria very much.

Since his parents passed away, he had reservations about everyone.

He hid his identity and strength from his wife,

But also kept it secret from those who followed him and several others.

As a confidante, although Charlie gradually disclosed his identity and strength to them,

He never told anyone about his adventure in obtaining the "Nine Mysterious Scriptures".

Only Maria knew all of Charlie's secrets.

The same goes for Maria.

Over the past three hundred years, she has adopted countless orphans,

But she has only confessed the secret of her immortality to the few people she trusts most.

Except for the children she raised,

She has not told any outsiders her secret. Charlie is the first.

Therefore, deep down in their hearts, both of them regard each other as their true confidant and the only confidant.

Since Banna is located in the southwest,

The actual daybreak time is an hour later than in the eastern region,

So the two of them chatted until nearly seven o'clock when the sky finally gradually lightened up.

# Chapter 5712

At this time, Charlie's life experience of just over twenty years has been almost covered,

While Maria has just talked about the beginning of the 20th century.

Seeing that the sky was already bright, Maria said to Charlie:

"Master, it's almost time for us to leave, right?"

Charlie nodded and said, "You haven't elaborated yet on how you were ambushed by Victoria on Hong Kong Island and escaped death.

"My experience." Maria smiled and said,

"Young master, you want to hear it. I will tell you in detail after I return home."

"Okay." Charlie stretched out and said,

"It's almost time to go to the airport."

After that, he pointed to the mother of Pu'er tea and said:

"Miss Lin, you have experience in growing tea trees. Come and dig out the mother of Pu'er tea."

Maria nodded and was about to dig out the mother of Pu'er tea with her bare hands.

But as soon as she stretched out her hand, she suddenly stopped and exclaimed:

"Master, look! The leaves picked last night have grown out!"

"Really?" Charlie looked at it intently while wondering.

And sure enough, he found that the two places he had pulled out yesterday had now grown two extremely fresh young leaves that were even covered with dew.

Charlie couldn't help but marvel:

"This speed is so fast, I didn't notice that she actually grew the leaves quietly!"

Maria was also very surprised and said:

"It's not unusual for the leaves to grow again after being picked,"

"But it grew out so quickly. It's really rare to see it grow."

"It seems that the vitality of this mother of Pu tea is really tenacious."

Charlie smiled and said: "With her repair speed, even if we pull off all her leaves,"

"It won't take long. She will definitely be able to recover as before."

Maria said quietly: "Young master,"

"Don't worry about her leaves for the time being, because you have to let her grow longer."

Charlie nodded and said with a smile:

"Don't worry, Miss Lin, I won't catch all the benefits."

Maria stretched out her hands, carefully peeled away the loess around the mother of Pucha,

And wrapped her roots as big as volleyballs together. All the soil was dug out together.

After digging it out, she immediately used the mineral water she brought to wet the lump of soil intertwined with roots,

And then said to Charlie, "Master, let's hurry up and leave."

"Okay!" Charlie agreed. When he came down,

This time he did not take the previous camping equipment.

Together with Maria, he took the Mother of Pu Tea back to the parking place.

After getting in the car, Maria wrapped the rhizome of the Mother of Pu Tea in a plastic bag and carefully placed it at her feet.

Then she said to Charlie, "Young master, it's ready."

Charlie was about to start the car when he suddenly saw a man in his sixties.

The old man walked out of the village carrying his head.

Seeing an off-road vehicle parked at the end of the village,

The old man was a little confused and kept staring at the car.

Charlie lowered the car window and asked him:

"Uncle, we are staff of the meteorological department."

"Did you hear the sound of thunder and rain last night?"

"What thunder and rain?" The old man said dissatisfied:

"Your meteorological department doesn't know whether it's raining or not?"

"Why do you still come to ask me?"

Charlie said with a smile: "That's right, sir."

"Yesterday we fired rain cannons, and some people did hear thunder at that time,"

"So this morning Just come over and ask about the rain last night."

"Did you hear it?"

The old man waved his hand: "No."

Charlie asked him: "You were asleep. Is it because you didn't hear it?"

The old man said angrily: "I wake up seven or eight times a night."

"Even the neighbor next door can wake me up by fa.rting. Can I still not hear the thunder?"

After that, the old man added: "I just hope it will rain soon."

"It hasn't rained for a month, and the water level in Tianchi has dropped a lot!"

Charlie nodded and said quickly: "Then let's go back and report it to the director."

"And see if we can seize the time to arrange another round of artificial rainfall."

The old man ignored him and walked away.

Charlie closed the car window and said to Maria beside him:

"It seems like it was indeed an illusion."

"Maybe that hallucination was only valid for you and me."

"Probably."

Maria nodded, but her brows kept frowning slightly and never relaxed.

## Chapter 5713

Charlie and Maria's return journey went smoothly.

The plane took off on time at 8:30 and arrived in Aurous Hill at 11 a.m. sharp.

At noon, the two hurried back to Maria's Villa.

Along the way, Maria held the young plant and did not dare to relax for a moment.

After returning to Zijin Villa, Maria asked everyone in the villa to avoid temporarily,

And went to the top courtyard with Charlie, and immediately started to replant the young plant.

And she looked in the yard and found that if other trees in the yard were not cut down,

Then the open space next to the hot spring pool would be the most suitable.

She pointed to the open space and said to Charlie:

"According to the normal growth speed of tea trees, the space here is probably enough for a tea tree to grow for ten or eight years,"

"But I don't know how fast the mother of Pucha grows."

"If it grows to a certain scale, the soil space here is not enough, we have to change the place."

Charlie said with a smile: "Don't worry about it, just put it here for the time being."

"Set it here first, and maybe change it to another place in the future."

"After you take over Zhicheng Group and transform Erlang Mountain, maybe you can also transplant it to Erlang Mountain."

Maria shook her head and said: "This tree belongs to the young master,"

"And I am only taking care of it on behalf of the young master."

"If it can't be planted here in the future, and the young master says to move it, then I will move it there."

Charlie said seriously: "She has been with you for the longest time, so it is up to you to decide where to plant in the future."

Maria nodded, "I listen to you, Master."

As she spoke, she brought a small shovel for gardening and started to move the soil on the edge of the hot spring pool.

She dug a hole about the size of a basketball, carefully put the roots of the mother of pucha into it, and filled it with some of the excavated soil.

Then she took a wooden scoop and placed it next to the hot spring pool.

She scooped some room-temperature water into the water tank and poured the water down carefully along the edge.

At this time, the midday sun shone on the delicate green leaves, making the green leaves translucent.

Maria looked at the perfect green leaves with a face full of admiration.

Charlie looked at the seedling, and said suspiciously:

“Last night, it grew so fast, and the two missing leaves also returned to their original state without knowing it.”

“Why doesn’t it seem to have changed?”

Maria said: “Maybe her accumulated energy has been used in the link of breaking out of the ground,”

“And then it will enter a long and slow growth period,”

“After all, it takes thirty years for a Pu’er tea tree to mature.”

Charlie nodded: “The few leaves she has now are very suitable for ordinary tea trees.”

“The efficacy of it is equivalent to a blood-scattering heart-saving pill, and it is a rare treasure for ascetics.”

“After all, no matter how much blood-scattering heart-scattering pills are eaten,”

“It is impossible to transform them into spiritual energy in the body; But the leaves of this tea tree naturally contain aura, which is especially rare;”

“Even though I can refine many elixirs, so far, only Cultivation pill can increase aura, and other elixirs can only treat injuries, or prolong life;”

“However, the refining of Cultivation pill is too troublesome, and the demand for various materials is relatively high.”

“It is not realistic to really want to refine in batches and have a stable supply;”

“If this tea tree becomes useful, Pu’er tea trees will be normal. The production capacity is at least hundreds of thousands of buds every day.”

“If she can still retain the attribute containing aura by then, it will definitely be a great wealth.”

“With such a steady stream of aura as a source, we can establish a school.”

Maria asked excitedly: “Doesn’t that mean that with it, the young master will definitely be able to defeat Victoria and break Warriors Den in the future?”

Charlie said seriously: "Victoria is very strong personally, after all, she is already The one who opened the Niwan Palace,"

"I am not in the same realm as her at all, and if I am given another 20 or 30 years,"

"I may not necessarily be her opponent, but with this tea tree, at least a batch of people like the Big Four can be cultivated in batches."

"Ascetics with good strength like the Earl, if they can't win in quality, they will fight for quantity."

"Although the crowd tactics are a bit behind, it is not impossible to win."

Maria nodded lightly, looking at the seedling, and sighed and said:

"Now let's see if she can grow up quickly..."

Charlie smiled slightly: "Just let it be normal, she has her own destiny."

With that said, Charlie said again: "By the way, Ms. Lin invited Mr. Sun to come over and talk to him about the monitoring."

Maria stood up and said: "My lord, wait a moment, I'll call him."

Soon, Ethan, who was in much younger physical condition, jogged all the way to the top-floor courtyard.

As soon as he entered the courtyard, he said respectfully,

"Miss, Mr. Wade, what do you two want me to do?"

Maria said, "Is there any way to mobilize all the people in southern Yunnan these days without alarming anyone for monitoring?"

Ethan said: "Miss, as long as it belongs to the monitoring of the municipal government, it can be found in the system."

"I have high authority and information can be retrieved without trace."

"You just need to tell me where the monitoring needs to be mobilized."

Maria nodded, recalling that Victoria appeared at Shuanglang at 10:00 yesterday morning, so she said:

"First call the surveillance of Shuanglang."

"Okay." Ethan said: "Miss, wait a moment, I will Just arrange for people to prepare,"

"And they will use a dedicated line to transfer all the video content to a cloud server."

"After the transfer is completed, you can view it on the server at will."

Maria nodded slightly with satisfaction and said, "Hurry up. Do it, I'll wait for your news."

Ethan immediately said: "Okay, miss, I'll make arrangements right away."

...

## Chapter 5714

At the same time.

In the middle of the Shiwan Mountains, a highway winds like a long dragon, interspersed between countless mountains, and an off-road vehicle is driving through the mountains at high speed.

The woman driving the car had a serious expression, her hands clenched on the steering wheel, and she was obviously nervous.

But she was nervous not because of lack of driving experience, but because of the growing sense of familiarity given to her by the surrounding environment.

The woman driving was Victoria.

Although she has not been to Shiwandashan for many years, she still knows the place well.

Back then, this place was a huge maze created by nature's miraculous craftsmanship.

It blocked the Qing soldiers who surrounded her and Warren and also brought them a rare opportunity.

But now, this mountain that was once difficult to walk has been completely connected by this highway. Countless tunnels and bridges have closely connected this place with the outside world.

However, although the expressway can change the traffic in Shiwandashan, it cannot change the special landform of Shiwandashan.

Since ancient times, this place has been lined with mountains, vast and sparsely populated, and the transportation is extremely inconvenient.

You often have to climb several mountains to see one human. People in some villages have never left the mountains where they live.

In recent years, with the continuous development of the economy and the advancement of urbanization, many mountain people who have lived in the mountains for generations have gradually moved out of the mountains.

The population in the mountains is now smaller than that of Victoria and Warren's times.

At this time, Victoria's car had just passed a service area, but she did not choose to stop.

Instead, after driving for more than ten kilometers, she pulled over and parked the car in the emergency lane.

After parking the car, she slowly got out of the car, stood on the roadside looked into the distance for a moment, and murmured: "This is it...Master, Victoria is back to see you..."

At this time, there are few vehicles on the highway.

Occasionally, cars passed by, but they didn't pay much attention to the woman who parked her car in the emergency lane.

Although emergency lanes theoretically do not allow parking, highways in the mountains are less monitored, and the traffic volume is not large and the scenery is beautiful.

Therefore, drivers who are tired from driving often choose a section of the road with beautiful scenery to stop.

The vehicles passing by in a hurry were not surprised by Victoria, but Victoria was troubled by the 100-meter-high bridge that spanned two mountains and connected two tunnels.

She knew that this was the closest point on the entire highway to the place where Master had retreated.

However, since there are almost no people living in this area, there are no highway exits for dozens of kilometers before and after.

In other words, if you want to reach your destination as quickly as possible, you can only jump from here.

Otherwise, you can only get off at the highway exit dozens of kilometers away, and then spend at least a day or two walking on the mountain road.

For Victoria, it is easy to jump from here.

However, if the car remains here after she leaves, it will inevitably cause unnecessary trouble.

Any enthusiastic driver who sees a car parked on the edge of a bridge with no one inside or outside would probably think that someone has committed suicide here.

Once he calls the police, the police will rush to the scene as soon as possible.

They will first try to confirm whether there are any traces of someone falling or even bodies under the bridge.

And if she jumped from here, it would be impossible to pretend that there was no trace at all.

If the police discovered that someone had indeed jumped from such a high bridge, and the person did not die, but she also disappeared without a trace. They will definitely try to find out the truth.

In this way, they will determine the appearance of the driver through various photos of the car taken on the highway, and then continue to work back through the clues.

Victoria also knows very well that since she entered the world, even if she has great abilities, she cannot escape the various surveillance systems in modern society, So her idea is to not leave behind image data. There are more than one billion people in China, and her own image information here is like a drop in the ocean, And it is not dangerous. As long as you don't attract the attention of the domestic police or even higher-ups because of certain things, you can escape unscathed. Therefore, what she wants to achieve now is how to disappear from this bridge with this car.

She is familiar with the car.

Even on the island on the edge of Antarctica, she often drives various vehicles. Although she has not left there for so many years, it does not prevent her from knowing the technology of this world well.

Because she was very familiar with cars, Victoria came up with a countermeasure after thinking for a moment.

Immediately, she closed her eyes slightly, and powerful spiritual energy surged out of her body and immediately merged into the off-road vehicle.

Immediately afterward, she released her spiritual consciousness to explore the surroundings and waited silently.

It wasn't until no other people or vehicles appeared within the coverage area of her consciousness that she suddenly opened her eyes,

Pushed the off-road vehicle with her empty hands, and shouted: "Get up!" As soon as she finished speaking, the off-road vehicle seemed to be caught up by a blowing wind, it rolled and soared into the sky.

A strange scene also happened at this moment.

The off-road vehicle, which weighed more than two tons, seemed to be turned into paper at this moment, rolling and falling slowly.

Victoria's spiritual energy has always tightly wrapped the off-road vehicle, causing the off-road vehicle to sink slowly at an extremely slow speed.

However, this pure use of spiritual energy to control an object weighing several tons in the air also consumes a lot of Victoria's spiritual energy,

So when the off-road vehicle fell below the bridge deck, she immediately changed the aura that wrapped around the entire vehicle to only wrap around the off-road vehicle's fuel tank and battery.

At this moment, the vehicle's falling speed suddenly accelerated,

And then it hit the ground with a loud bang, breaking many branches along the way.

Fortunately, the fuel tank and battery were protected by spiritual energy,

So although the car was completely deformed and the glass was shattered, it did not catch fire or explode.

Therefore, after the crash, the valley quickly became calm again.

Then, Victoria jumped up and slowly landed on the ground.

There are many kinds of trees in the valley, and the off-road vehicle directly made a gap in the dense woods.

With a thought in Victoria's mind, the spiritual energy wrapped around a large number of broken branches and covered the off-road vehicle tightly.

Then, she straightened her clothes and walked toward the depths of the mountain without looking back.

...

At the same time.

All Shuanglang's surveillance videos have been transferred to a special cloud server by Ethan's subordinates.

After Ethan gave Maria the address and key to the cloud server, Maria watched the surveillance video with Charlie in her boudoir.

Although there was no surveillance in Guibei Mountain, Maria looked for surveillance at the mountain pass based on the time Victoria went up the mountain and soon discovered Victoria's figure.

Starting from this surveillance probe and working backward to Shuanglang Ancient Town, all of Victoria's routes are within the surveillance range.

As a result, the two easily found the off-road vehicle driven by Victoria in the parking lot.

In China, it is possible for people to escape surveillance, but it is basically impossible for cars.

As long as it is a road where cars can pass, I dare not say that it will be monitored throughout the entire process, but there will definitely be major entrances and exits.

Moreover, road traffic monitoring has the function of license plate recognition, which can identify license plate numbers.

Therefore, seemingly large amounts of video and image data can be converted into data with clear labels and retained in the system.

With this layer of transformation, as long as you enter the license plate number, you can retrieve the videos, images, and corresponding time nodes of the car that appear under all road surveillance.

Victoria never thought that someone would predict her going to southern Yunnan, and she never thought that Maria would dare to act under her nose,

So she never expected that someone would bite her at this moment, and began to look for clues along her own tail.

After only a few minutes, Charlie and Maria obtained detailed data, which included the time and place where Victoria's car had recently appeared in all traffic monitoring systems.

Charlie ignored all the previous information and looked directly at the last one.

The last information showed that half an hour ago, this car drove through the highway leading to Shiwanda Mountain in southern Yunnan at a speed of 120 kilometers per hour through the sub-service area.

The surveillance that captured the vehicle information is the main road surveillance outside the service area.

This surveillance is just between the entrance and exit of the service area.

In other words, being captured by it means that the car directly skipped the Dashanzi service area and continued to drive towards the main road.

Charlie looked at the previous monitoring node information again and found that what was strange was that the car was driving on the highway at a speed of 120 kilometers and was monitored and recorded about every 5 minutes or so.

Representative, the monitoring distance of this highway is about ten kilometers.

Victoria passed the last recording point half an hour ago.

Based on her speed at that time, she has now continued to drive 60 kilometers.

However, no new records can be seen on the system, which proves that Victoria's driving status has most likely changed.

So Charlie immediately checked the next monitoring location from west to east in the Dashanzi service area and found that the next monitoring location was 22 kilometers away.

If Victoria had maintained a speed of 120 kilometers, she should have passed this surveillance area ten or twenty minutes ago,

But her vehicle did not appear there, which means that she either reduced her speed to 50 kilometers per hour. below, or the car has been parked on a certain section of the 22 kilometers.

Charlie took a screenshot of this section of the road on the satellite map and said to Maria on the side: "Let's wait and see. If Victoria doesn't show up at the next monitoring point for a long time,

Then there is a high probability that she is already in the middle of this section of the road. Leaving the expressway."

Maria said: "This 22-kilometer expressway has no service area and no exit. If she leaves from here, the only possibility is to leave the expressway on foot."

Charlie nodded and said: "Here Almost all of them are viaducts and tunnels. The only way for her to leave here is to jump directly from the viaduct."

Maria agreed and said: "It is impossible for the expressway to be built to the place where Master used to retreat by such a coincidence."

"Victoria must have First found the nearest point via the highway, and then abandoned the car and walked."

Charlie said: "So the place where your master retreated back then should not be too far from the 22-kilometer highway."

Maria asked him: "Young Master, what do you think we should do next?"

Charlie said: "The most enthusiastic answer is to find her whereabouts but from the actual situation,"

"I am not as strong as her, and she has already seen us, if we go again Appearing in front of her once will inevitably lead to suspicion,"

"So my suggestion is to wait! If Victoria abandons the car here, then we will no longer be able to track the car. We will wait in Aurous Hill for Victoria to enter our sight again!"

Charlie knew very well that what he was looking for this time was not Victoria,  
But the place she was going to visit.

After he released Meng Changsheng's portrait,  
Victoria immediately silenced the Warriors Den,  
Which proved that she was indeed very frightened.

But the more frightened she became, the more she secretly came to China alone  
and went to Shiwanda Mountain,

Which proved that she must be feeling very urgent about something now.

Charlie speculated that she was most likely looking for the secret left by Meng  
Changsheng back then,

Perhaps the secret of longevity was mentioned by Jermo before.

Therefore, after Victoria leaves Shiwan Mountains,

He will go in to search for it, regardless of whether there will be gains or not,  
At least it will not increase the risk.

And at the same time.

In Shiwan Mountains.

Victoria is like a heroine in martial arts movies who hangs wires and flies over walls.

She is quickly shuttling between the dense forests in the mountains.

In the eyes of ordinary people, the mountains and old forests are like walking on  
flat ground in front of her.

Although she walked deeper and deeper into the mountains, her progress became  
smoother and smoother.

When she got away from the highway and gradually entered the mountains,

She found that the mountains in front of her had not changed much from three  
hundred years ago.

The green mountains here are still there, and they are still deserted.

Victoria relied on her memories of that year to walk from dawn to dusk in the  
mountains.

In the mountains and forests at night, you can't see your fingers.

The moonlight and starlight are almost blocked by the dense trees.

Moreover, due to the increasing air humidity after nightfall,

The mountains and forests are already shrouded in fog.  
It is difficult for ordinary people to move here,  
But Victoria seems to be able to see through the darkness and fog and keep moving forward without slowing down.  
At this time, she was surrounded by insects, snakes, rats, ants,  
And all kinds of animals and beasts, but wherever she went,  
All the animals scattered, and they wished she could stay as far away from them as possible.  
After Victoria walked through the fog for nearly half an hour,  
She came to the bottom of a very low valley.  
The fog here was already surprisingly thick,  
And the humidity in the air was so exaggerated that it could squeeze out water.  
Because the terrain of the valley is too low, a large amount of moisture and carbon dioxide are deposited here,  
So that the oxygen content at the bottom of the valley is very low.  
It is impossible for ordinary people to survive here for too long.  
What's even more frightening is that the air here is not only moisture and carbon dioxide,  
But also toxic components similar to methane emitted from a large number of rotten trees and swamps.  
After countless years of fermentation and various natural chemical reactions,  
It has formed a harmful substance to lactation. A miasma that is highly toxic to animals.  
Moreover, although there is no human habitation here, wild animals often come here accidentally for food.  
After the animals come in, they soon fall into a coma and die due to lack of oxygen and toxic components in the air.  
After death, their bodies are left in the rotting corpses are decomposed by microorganisms,  
Making the air here more dangerous.  
If someone were to go blind and climb countless mountains to get here, they would basically never return.  
However, when Victoria came here, her expression was not nervous at all.

Instead, she became more and more excited.

She walked into the fog without thinking.

Although the dirty and toxic fog would not cause any real harm to her, it made her a little nauseous, so she held her breath and walked all the way to the lowest and deepest place.

At this time, there was no light at the bottom of the valley.

Victoria's consciousness filled the surroundings, and everything around her became clear to her.

When they reached the deepest point, many thick stone pillars five to six meters high and two to three meters wide appeared in front of Victoria.

Although these stone pillars appear to be natural and without any trace of artificial processing,

They do not seem to appear here in large numbers.

It seems that someone deliberately collected these stone pillars and placed them here.

Moreover, there are a large number of these stone pillars,

And they are arranged in a disorderly manner like a stone forest.

Seeing these seemingly irregularly arranged stone pillars.

Victoria was not surprised at all.

Instead, she stroked the stone pillars with some emotion and murmured:

“Master, senior, Victoria is back.”

After that, she walked in.

In the stone forest, people keep walking left and right according to specific rules.

This stone forest is the Nine Palaces and Bagua array set up by her master Meng Changsheng during his lifetime.

The mystery of this formation is that if you don't know how to crack the formation, You will never be able to find a true exit no matter where you walk into the stone forest formation.

The only way for outsiders to crack this formation is to destroy all the stone pillars, leaving no one behind.

However, this formation was originally used by Meng Changsheng to protect the cave.

According to his plan, once someone breaks in,

He will know it immediately before the other party has destroyed all the stones;

If the other party is not as strong as him, then he can secretly kill the opponent;

If he encounters someone stronger than him, Meng Changsheng was not afraid,

Because the stone forest composed of these stone pillars is large in scale and numerous in number,

And each stone pillar is extremely thick and heavy.

It would take a lot of time and energy to destroy them all,

So he would have enough time to escape.

In this way, by the time the opponent destroyed the stone forest, he would have already escaped.

Back then, Meng Changsheng relied on this formation to hide in the cave where he practiced.

For hundreds of years, no one could break into it.

The only two people who had ever entered were Victoria and her senior Warren.

Victoria, who returned here again, chose a route that was familiar to her,

And then quickly walked left and right in the stone forest.

After traveling several times, she suddenly dodged,  
And the exit of the Bagua Array appeared in front of her, a man-made arched stone door.

On both sides of the stone gate, a pair of couplets were engraved in wild cursive calligraphy.

The first couplet is about practicing in seclusion for eight hundred years,  
The second couplet is about wearing stars and wearing the moon for nearly a thousand years.

The upper and lower couplets are ordinary, but the horizontal lines are very different.

In other people's couplets, the horizontal lines usually have four characters,  
But the horizontal lines of this couplet have four words: Can I live forever?

Victoria was very familiar with this couplet.

She looked up at the four words in the middle and murmured:

"Master, what is immortality? Five hundred years or a thousand years?"

"You have lived for a thousand years and changed your name."

"Cultivating here for five hundred years, but in the end still couldn't escape death?"

"Is there a way in this world that can make people live as long as heaven and earth?"

At this point, Victoria smiled sarcastically, shook her head and said:

"Yes I am overthinking, how do you know the answer?"

"If you had known, you wouldn't have died three hundred years ago."

Then, without looking at the couplet, she raised her hand and pushed the arched stone door open.

The door opened, and inside was a stone room of about forty square meters.

Victoria was very familiar with this place.

Back then, she and her senior Warren practiced here all day long.

At this time, there was still a futon in the stone room where the two of them had meditated on,

There were even dark, long-dried blood stains on the ground, which were left when she stabbed Warren with her sword.

Victoria was in a trance and a little stunned.

She stretched out her hand to touch the blood that had dried for more than three hundred years and murmured:

“Senior, the sword that I stabbed into your heart back then still makes my heart hurt.”

“If you had agreed back then, how could you and I be separated by three hundred years?”

“If you and I had joined forces back then, we might have driven Qing out of the customs long ago.”

“Wouldn’t the world belong to both you and me? It’s only my fault.”

“You didn’t know the current affairs, and you won’t be able to enjoy it.”

As she said that, she couldn’t help but mutter in a low voice:

“Compared with three hundred years ago, everything in front of me seems to have not changed at all,”

“Except that my senior’s blood has dried up, that is,”

“That no one has ever come back here in the past three hundred years...”

So she paused slightly and frowned: “So, the person who took out the portrait of Master has never been here,”

“The Wade couple have never been here, so who is that person?”

“Where did Changying and his wife find the secret of immortality?”

Confused, Victoria immediately stepped towards the inner stone chamber. Originally, Meng Changsheng's stone chamber only had the outer one. At that time, Meng Changsheng had already started his second 500 years of cultivation.

He had already achieved fasting and meditated all day long without needing to sleep, eat, or go to the toilet.

After bringing Victoria and Warren back to the cave, Meng Changsheng used his sword to open two bedrooms for the two of them, as well as a kitchen and toilet.

In order to not disturb his practice, Meng Changsheng opened a stone room for himself to use for his practice and meditation.

As a result, there were five more stone rooms here.

Victoria looked at all the first four stone chambers.

When she came to the fifth stone chamber, there was no sign of the fifth stone chamber.

The original entrance to the fifth stone chamber has now turned into a smooth and traceless stone wall.

She touched the smooth stone wall and said: "Master when your time was approaching,"

"You called senior and me here to take care of the funeral arrangements."

"I said a few words from the bottom of my heart in a hurry, and you sent me out with the senior,"

"And since then, your stone room has disappeared."

"At that time, my cultivation was weak, and I couldn't tell whether this was a blind trick or a great supernatural power..."

As she said that, Victoria pulled out a ribbon from her waist and flicked her wrist.

The ribbon instantly became hard and straight, like a long sword made of silk.

This ribbon is Victoria's magic weapon.

At this moment, the blade of the long sword made a low cry due to resonance.

Victoria pointed the sword at the stone wall, gritted her teeth, and said in a cold voice:

“Today, I will destroy your cave to see if you are playing tricks on me!”

Then, she gathered her spiritual energy at the edge of the sword,  
And the surging spiritual energy instantly transformed into a fierce offensive,  
Slashing towards the hard stone wall in an instant.

Today’s Victoria is no longer the Victoria who was kicked out by Meng Changsheng that day.

Now she has successfully opened the Niwan Palace,  
And her strength is more than a hundred times stronger than before!  
Back then, Meng Changsheng could use his sword to carve out several stone chambers in the mountain.

Today, Victoria also has the same confidence and can completely destroy the stone walls!

She confidently swung her sword at the stone wall.

She thought she could easily split the stone wall, but she didn’t expect that the moment the sword tip struck the stone wall,

The stone wall seemed to be suddenly wrapped tightly by a powerful force,

So much so that as soon as the tip of the sword touched the stone wall, it bounced back on the spot!

The extremely strong rebound force was several times the amount of spiritual energy Victoria expended when slashing at the stone wall.

It knocked Victoria’s sword away for a moment, and her arm was in excruciating pain and she was unable to lift it up.

At this moment, she was horrified!

She didn’t expect that this stone wall, which seemed to have no mystery, could be so powerful!

She couldn’t hide her horror and couldn’t help asking herself in her heart:

“Is this the formation left by the Master?!”

Thinking of this, she quickly and respectfully said loudly:

“Master! Disciple Victoria is back to visit Master!”

After finishing, she looked around vigilantly,

I wanted to see if there were any changes.

But what disappointed her was that everything around her was still the same, and nothing unusual could be seen.

She secretly thought suspiciously: "The old guy has reached his thousand-year lifespan,"

"So he must be dead. There is a high probability that this is the formation he left behind,"

"To prevent others from finding his stone chamber and discovering that his death was approaching!"

Immediately, she turned around and picked up the blown sword again, saying coldly in her heart:

“Huh! Since it is a formation, no matter how powerful it is,”

“It will be exhausted sooner or later.”

“One day, I will smash this stone wall of yours to pieces today to find out what’s going on!”

After saying that, Victoria swung her long sword with her left hand,

And slashed at the stone wall with all her strength!

The flash of lightning was heard, and there was only a bang.

Before Victoria had time to react, she felt her left hand was numb by a huge force,

And the long sword tightly held in her hand was knocked out again!

This time the stone wall bounced back with no less force than the blow just now,

Which made Victoria’s expression instantly full of panic.

She can understand that a formation is very powerful,

But what she cannot understand is that this formation has obviously consumed a lot of power in the first rebound,

So why does the second rebound not reduce in strength at all?

In this way, she could not guess how strong the spiritual energy contained in this formation was.

Victoria was shocked and angry, feeling as if she had been tricked and humiliated by the formation left by Meng Changsheng.

She gritted her teeth and shouted sternly: “Did you set up such a powerful formation just to guard against me?”

“I am your disciple!”

“Why didn’t you pass me what you had learned and the magic weapons?”

“You kept saying that you have to wait for the Ascension to the Dragon Category.”

“Where is there any explanation for the Ascension to the Dragon level?”

“Besides, what if there is the Ascension to the Dragon level?”

“You have never met him, why do you want to spend your whole life collecting treasures for him?”

“What happened to me?!”

Victoria roared in anger, mainly to vent her resentment,  
But the moment she finished speaking, a strong man's voice suddenly sounded in the cave:

"Evil disciple, I told you that you are not allowed to step into this place again."

"What are you doing here?!"

This voice instantly scared Victoria out of her wits!

Because she was very familiar with this voice.

The owner of this voice was her master Meng Changsheng.

At this moment, her brain almost short-circuited.

She came back to her senses after a while, knelt on the ground with a bang, and said in panic:

"Master, disciple... I don't mean to be disobedient,"

"But I hadn't come back to pay respects to you for many years."

"I came here especially to pay homage today, and I didn't mean to offend you..."

After saying this, Victoria immediately began to carefully test the answer of the voice.

The sentence just now was a cover-up, but it was also a temptation.

She deliberately mentioned that she came to pay homage today just to see how the voice would respond.

Because although she was now sure that the voice was Master's,

She still didn't understand whether the voice came from the formation or from reality.

If it comes from the formation, it proves that the master guessed that she would come back one day before the deadline was approaching,

So he specially set up a puzzle for her to let her retreat in the face of difficulties.

But if this voice comes from reality, that would be terrible, because it means that her master is still alive.

So she said this specifically because she wanted to hear how the other party would answer.

If the other party talks about her, it proves that the first possibility is more likely.

If the other party directly says, "I don't need respect from scoundrels like you,"

It will prove that the master is indeed still alive.

Therefore, while Victoria was extremely vigilant, she was also silently and anxiously waiting for the other party's answer.

At this time, she heard the voice scolding in a cold voice:

“For the sake of our relationship as master and disciple,”

“I will not make it difficult for you today,”

“But you just remember, never return to Shiwanda Mountain again in this life!”

Upon hearing these words, Victoria felt a chill rush from the soles of her feet to her scalp.

Ever since she was accidentally rescued by Meng Changsheng in Shiwanda Mountain more than three hundred years ago,

She has never felt so frightened and overwhelmed.

The last time she panicked, she saw Meng Changsheng's portrait on the Internet.

But now, she suddenly discovered that her master,

Who had reached his end and headed west more than three hundred years ago, might still be alive!

This impact on her was absolutely unprecedented!

Victoria could not suppress the fear in her heart at all,

And said with a trembling voice: "Master...disciple...disciple knows that I was wrong..."

At this time, an angry shout rang in Victoria's ears,

And an extremely cold voice scolded: "Get out of here!"

This scolding hit Victoria's heart like thunder.

At this moment, she didn't dare to hesitate or delay anymore.

She quickly stood up, bowed to the stone wall tremblingly, and said:

"Master, I will atone for my sins. This disciple will get out of here..."

After that, she turned around impatiently, dragging her soul hardly along with her body.

Those legs felt as if they were filled with lead, but still, she staggered out of the cave.

After coming out of the cave, she did not dare to stop.

She walked quickly towards the outside of the mountain.

Her heartbeat was faster and heavier than ever before.

After escaping for more than ten miles in one breath,

She couldn't help but mutter: "How is this possible... How is this possible..."

"That old thing didn't he reach his end more than three hundred years ago?"

"Why is he still alive today?"

As she said that, she couldn't help but question:

“No! It’s not clear yet whether he is dead or alive!”

“Maybe he is really not dead. Or maybe his consciousness is still there after he died,”

“Or maybe he died long ago, and what is left is nothing more than a formation to tease me...”

Victoria couldn’t find anything in her heart that could make her feel better.

A convincing answer she struggled to get.

Although she felt that all three scenarios were possible,

She still didn’t dare to take risks.

Right now, she just wanted to escape from this place, escape from Shiwan Mountain, and escape from China.

...

While Victoria was fleeing hastily in the mountains,

Charlie and Maria were constantly switching the real-time images of all surveillance cameras within dozens of kilometers around the place where Victoria disappeared.

This place is located deep in the mountains.

There are only two small towns on the edge of a nearly 100-kilometer highway,

And the number of surveillance cameras is pitiful.

However, in order to improve the screening efficiency, Maria called Mr. Zhang, Ethan, and Larry.

Four octogenarians, nearly 100 years old, each used a computer to help the two share the workload,

Constantly switching surveillance screens to look for Victoria.

Charlie originally thought that Victoria would most likely not appear so early,

But for the sake of caution, he still kept a close eye on the screen for fear of missing something.

In order to prevent the elderly people and Maria from being too tired,

Charlie also used an enhanced blood-dispersing heart-saving heart and soaked them in some refreshing water,

Which could also add one or two years to the lifespan of elderly people.

From night to dawn, no one felt tired, and no one even had symptoms of dry eyes.

At this time, Maria suddenly pointed at her computer screen and said loudly:

“It’s Victoria!”



Charlie quickly moved over and looked at the picture on the surveillance camera. A woman was walking quickly and expressionlessly on the rural road in the early morning.

Walking in the direction of the surveillance camera.

Charlie asked in surprise: "Where is this surveillance?"

Maria said: "The section of highway where Victoria disappeared is more than 20 kilometers away from the exit,

And there is a town called Erdaoshan."

Charlie asked: "She disappeared halfway. I guess she left the highway in some way,"

"And why did she suddenly appear here again?"

"If her destination is here, why not just drive there?"

Maria shook her head: "I don't know either."

Just as she was saying this, Victoria in the picture stopped a van passing by.

After talking to the van driver for a few words,

The driver waved his hand to her, seeming to reject her offer.

Victoria's expression was a little anxious.

She quickly took out a stack of red banknotes and handed it to the other party.

After the other party accepted the money, Victoria immediately stepped into the van and sat in the back seat.

Charlie was even more confused: "Where is Victoria going?"

Maria said: "Master, I can't understand it anymore."

Charlie then said: "Just keep an eye on her first and see where this car is going."

"Okay."

In extremely underdeveloped mountainous towns, monitoring is mainly concentrated on traffic roads,

So Maria can directly track the movements of this van by constantly switching road monitoring.

Soon, the car left the town and headed towards the entrance of the highway.

At this moment, in the van that was leaking air everywhere.

Victoria couldn't wait to leave China as soon as possible,

So she sent a message to her crew and asked them to apply for a route as soon as possible to fly directly from Myanmar to the nearest airport.

Victoria smuggled herself in.

According to her original plan, after leaving the Shiwan Mountains,

She had to smuggle out of the country along the same route,

And then take a flight from Myanmar to return to Warriors Den's base.

However, a sudden change made her unwilling to stay in China for one more minute and she just wanted to leave here as soon as possible.

Ten minutes later, the van drove out of a tunnel.

Victoria recognized that this was the bridge where she had abandoned the van before,

So she deliberately asked the driver:

“Master, if a vehicle does not leave the highway for a long time, what will it happen?”

“Will someone look for it?”

The driver said without looking back: “Who has the spare time?”

“Just issue cards at the entrance and collect money at the exit.”

“Who will worry about which car gets off the expressway?”

Victoria added: “Every car is issued a billing card at the entrance.”

“If this card is never settled from the exit, won't the highway operator investigate?”

“Check the fa.rt...”

The driver curled his lips and said: “There are so many cars driving on the highway every day,”

“And the road administration can't catch them. How can they have time to care who gets off the highway or not.”

When Victoria heard this, she was completely relieved.

The vehicle that fell into the gorge would definitely not be discovered for a while,

And she had enough time not to be exposed and escape from China in an easy way.

...

At this time, Charlie and Maria did not expect that the van Victoria stopped on the road would actually drive in the direction Victoria came from after getting on the highway.

Charlie frowned and asked:

“Victoria is leaving?”

Maria nodded: “It seems so, but it seems to be too fast.”

“She went all the way to Shiwanda Mountain, why did she only stay?”

Charlie said: “I can’t figure it out, and I feel like she was a little embarrassed when she left in this car.”

Maria said doubtfully: “With Victoria’s strength, even the young master has to avoid his sharp edges. What can make her embarrassed?”

Charlie said: “I don’t know.”

Saying that Charlie said excitedly: “No matter what, let’s keep an eye on this car,”

“As long as Victoria leaves Shiwanda Mountain, we can hurry up and get over it!”

# Chapter 5721

Judging from Victoria's return behavior alone,

It was difficult for Charlie and Maria to judge her intentions.

Maria, in particular, was worried that Victoria was not really leaving Shiwan Mountain when she left the place,

But needed to find a new destination.

Therefore, she said to Charlie: "Master, my father once said that the stone room where the master drove to the west later disappeared without a trace."

"He guessed that the master must have used great magical powers to remove that room."

"The stone chamber was hidden or moved elsewhere."

"Victoria came to Shiwan Mountain this time,"

"Most likely to find the whereabouts of that stone chamber."

Charlie nodded and said:

"I also think it is unlikely that Victoria would leave Shiwan Mountain so soon."

"It seems, maybe she has found some new clues."

Maria said with a worried expression:

"If Victoria can really find a way to make her stronger from the relics left by her master,"

"Or find a way to make her stronger with certain elixirs and magic weapons that are useful to her,"

"Wouldn't her strength be even higher?"

Charlie said: "Back then if Meng Changsheng could pass that ring to your father before the deadline,"

"Presumably, he has already known what kind of character Victoria is,"

"So he would have definitely tried his best to be on guard."

After saying that, Charlie added:

"Victoria failed to get the relics and inheritance left by Meng Changsheng back then,"

"But now even though three hundred Years have passed,"

"But I believe she still cannot break through the shackles Meng Changsheng left to guard against her."

Maria nodded lightly and murmured: "I hope so..."

At this time, Victoria was still there All the way to the west with no intention of stopping.

At the same time, Charlie received news that the Boeing 777 Victoria took to Myanmar had taken off.

The civil aviation software showed that the destination of this plane was Yong,

Which is almost 200 kilometers away from Shiwanda Mountain State Airport.

Considering that the van Victoria was commuting in was also driving towards Yongzhou,

Charlie suddenly exclaimed: "Victoria is leaving China!"

Maria asked in surprise: "Why did she leave in such a hurry?"

"Has she already found the things left by her master?"

Charlie shook his head: "I don't know either,"

"But Victoria left in a helter-skelter and hurried way."

"It didn't look like a big deal. Not the normal behavior after having gained something."

After saying that, Charlie added: "And as I just said, Meng Changsheng must have been guarding against her before she was alive."

"There is no reason for her to find her relics so quickly,"

"So I feel that she suddenly wants to leave, and there must be something hidden."

Maria was puzzled and murmured: "Master,"

"I feel that there is something unreasonable in this,"

"And there seems to be something that cannot be justified logically."

Charlie: "We are just sitting here discussing."

"It is impossible to find out the true context of the matter."

"The best solution is to go there in person and look for clues that we do not have."

After that, he stood up and said impatiently:

"Since she wants to leave! Her plane will arrive in Yongzhou in almost two hours."

"Let's rush to the airport and fly to Yongzhou now!"

"Maybe we can still cross paths with her again at the airport!"

Seeing Charlie's anxious expression, Maria said without hesitation:

"Everyone here obeys the master's arrangements!"

Charlie said, "I will notify the plane to prepare now."

An hour later, Charlie and Maria took a plane to Yongzhou.

This time, he did not ask Issac to change his shell and rent a business jet.

Instead, he directly used the Wade family's private jet in the city.

The reason why he didn't cover it up any more was because he felt that there was no need to worry about Victoria finding out about this situation.

At this moment, Victoria passed the security check and customs with a passport with Chinese identity that she had prepared long ago,

And sat in the lounge of the VIP building, waiting for her plane with anxiety.

Nervous and panic made her legs muscles still twitching even now.

And in her mind, Meng Changsheng's deafening words kept repeating over and over again!

These four words filled her soul with a great fear.

She couldn't help but review the whole thing in her mind,

She raked her brains to analyze the possibility that Meng Changsheng was still alive.

She recalled every detail of how she became a disciple of Meng Changsheng and thought to herself:

"Actually, now that I think about it,"

"Master actually didn't think much of me and my senior back then."

"If we hadn't been hunted down by the Qing army, Master would have been killed."

Your Majesty will not show up in front of us..."

"Now that I think about it, Master accepted me and him as disciples,"

"Partly to learn about the outside world from us, and partly because he hoped that we could do something for the Han people,"

"And he himself, it seemed that they have never regarded us as true disciples..."

At this thought, Victoria's thoughts were pulled back to more than 300 years ago,

The scene when she and Warren were chased into Shiwan Mountain by the Qing army came to mind.

Beyond the Shiwan Mountains, tens of thousands of Qing cavalry attacked overnight,

Chasing down the remnants of rebels.

These cavalymen wore Qing army armor, held Qing army flags, and had money rat tails that were very different from those of the Han people in the Southern Ming Dynasty.

They drove the remaining defeated generals into the Shiwan Mountains.

The remnants of Nanming and Warriors Den suffered heavy losses.

They fought and retreated all the way, and the casualties became more and more heavy.

## Chapter 5722

In the end, Warren and Victoria had no other comrades around them.

The leader of a Qing army team led hundreds of cavalry in hot pursuit.

However, due to the steep mountains and dense trees, they could only dismount and pursue on foot.

The leader shouted loudly: "Listen you people inside!"

"If you come out and accept surrender, I can give you a happy life."

"Otherwise, if I catch you, I will send you to the capital to be executed!"

At this time, Victoria was being pulled by Warren and running wildly in the forest.

However, she still had a broken arrow stuck in her shoulder.

This was injured by a Qing army's cavalry archer during the retreat.

Because the Qing army was good at riding and shooting,

And they especially smeared the rotting corpse water on the arrowheads,

The arrowheads carried a lot of viruses and bacteria.

Victoria's wound was already black and smelly pus continued to seep out of it,

And the body's every shock would bring severe pain to her shoulders,

And every time the severe pain struck,

Her whole body would become weak and she would fall to the ground almost uncontrollably.

Fortunately, Warren grabbed her hand tightly and pulled her with all his strength,

So that she would not be overtaken by the enemy.

Victoria knew that the Qing army's bows and arrows were extremely vicious.

Even if the injury was not fatal, within a few days the wound would cause ulcers all over the body and take away the person's life.

Therefore, Victoria now also knows that his time is running out.

Seeing that Warren was obviously much slower in order to save her,

She couldn't help but choked and said:

"Warren, give me a good time and escape by yourself."

"I can't survive anymore. You can't take me with you."

"It will only drag you down..."

Warren said firmly: "I promised your brother to protect you, even if I die in battle,"

"I will die with you, otherwise how will I face Zagron in the future."

Victoria cried and said: "Warren, Qing Gou was inhumane and slaughtered countless people in the Ming Dynasty."

"If you and I fall into their hands, our lives will be worse than death."

"It's better for you to give me a happy life than if I fall into their hands. I will be tortured by them!"

Warren gritted his teeth and said sternly: "Victoria, you don't have to be afraid."

"If you and I really have no way to escape, I will give you a happy life,"

"And fight to the death with those dogs."

"I will never let you fall into their hands!"

At this time, Galtu and his men were chasing closer and closer.

Seeing the black blood stains left by Victoria, he laughed coldly:

"Since you don't accept the toast, you will be punished with wine."

"Then don't blame me, Galtu, for being ruthless!"

"When you two fall into the hands of our brothers, I and the brothers will definitely make that little beauty happy!"

Victoria was frightened and angry, and roared: "Even if I'm a ghost,"

"I won't let your dogs go! One day, our Ming Dynasty will kill you all and drive your dog emperor out of the country!"

Galtu said coldly: "Your Ming Dynasty? Your Ming Dynasty is about to be completely destroyed by us now!"

"From now on, this will be the world of ours! All people like you who do not submit to our Manchu Qing Dynasty will be destroyed by us!"

At this time, a loud voice asked: "What? You even want to kill me?!"

As he spoke, an old man in blue robes floated down from above the woods, holding a silver handle.

The long sword is indescribably majestic and solemn.

This person is Meng Changsheng.

Galtu didn't expect that this old man could fall from the forest more than ten feet high without any sign of injury.

He asked him warily for a moment: "Who are you?"

Meng Changsheng said coldly: "Wild ass, who are you qualified to ask me for my name?"

"You disturbed my Qing Dynasty and made such nonsense, just leave your life here to atone for your sins today!"

Gartu sneered and said: "You old man seem to think you have a long life! Come here, Kill him for me!"

As soon as he finished speaking, a group of Qing soldiers raised their bows and arrows and aimed their arrows at Meng Changsheng.

Meng Changsheng sneered disdainfully: "How dare you show off your power in front of me with just a bow and arrow?!"

After saying that, the long sword in his hand suddenly shook,

And instantly turned into dozens of rotating sword blades, heading towards several Hundreds of Qing troops roared away.

Before these Qing soldiers could figure out what was going on, they all had their heads chopped off, leaving no one alive.

Not far away, Warren and Victoria were both stunned.

They had never seen such a powerful person in their lives, and they thought they had met a god.

At this time, Meng Changsheng put away his long sword, came to the two of them, and asked:

"Why are you two being chased by a group of Tatar soldiers?"

Warren came to his senses first and said quickly: "Junior Warren, Thank you for saving our life!"

"The junior and my sister fought against the Qing Dynasty together,"

"But we were not strong enough and were chased all the way by the Qing army."

"Thank you for saving us, otherwise, the two juniors may not have survived today..."

Meng Changsheng frowned and asked, "Don't the Tatars always move in the north?"

"This is the Shiwan Mountains, almost to the southernmost point of the Tang Dynasty."

"How did the Tatars get here?"

"The Tang Dynasty?"

Warren blurted out: "Master, it is no longer the Tang Dynasty."

"The current court is the Ming Dynasty, and the Ming Dynasty has unified China for more than two hundred years."

"It's just that the traitor Revnos put the Qing army into the pass."

"Now, the Qing army has invaded China. Almost most of the country..."

Meng Changsheng scolded coldly: "Today's Han people can't even defend their own country?"

Realizing that the old man in front of him did have great supernatural powers and was also a Han,

Warren knelt on the ground almost without thinking, and begged with choked sobs:

“Master, now the Han people have been invaded by the Tatars, and our people are in ruins and suffering.”

“It is unspeakable that the younger generation may have limited ability to resist the Qing Dynasty for many years,”

“And can only watch the Han people’s country continue to fall.”

“Since Master, you are also Han,”

“I request the Master to take action to drive away the enemy and restore the Han Dynasty!”

Victoria also came to her senses, hurriedly knelt down kowtowed, and said respectfully:

“I beg the Master to take action!”

Meng Changsheng was slightly shocked by the actions of the two, and then he laughed mockingly and said:

“I have been in seclusion here for hundreds of years, who owns the kingdom outside, and who does not.”

“It has nothing to do with me anymore.”

“The Han people becoming the emperor, the Mongols becoming the emperor,”

“Or the Manchus becoming the emperor is not my concern.”

Warren and Victoria suddenly looked desperate.

They thought that with the strength of this Master, who could easily kill hundreds of Qing troops with a snap of his fingers,

It would be easy to go to Imperial City to get Shunzhi’s head.

However, they overestimated the Han integrity in Meng Changsheng.

In fact, when Meng Chang lived to this age,

He had already forgotten the justice of the country and the integrity of the nation.

Therefore, he said with an indifferent expression:

“This is my place of seclusion and cultivation.”

“You two should not stay here to disturb my cultivation.”

“I have killed all the Qing troops chasing you, so you can leave.”

Warren knelt down and said, “Master, if you can drive the Qing dogs out of the pass and save the people,”

“It will be a great merit and it will definitely be of great benefit to your practice.”

“And This kind of thing should be just a piece of cake for you, so please think twice!”

Meng Changsheng said disdainfully: “Merit?”

“Merit is like a chastity memorial arch.”

“No matter how much you have, what can you do with it?”

“If you have more merit, can you live forever?”

Warren was a little stunned. Changsheng was still a very unfamiliar word to him.

He had no idea what the meaning behind these words was.

Seeing that he was stunned, Meng Changsheng said calmly:

“Don’t think that I am the only one with such strength in the world.”

“Anyone who can sit on the throne has the right time, place, people, and harmony.”

“How can the Manchu Emperor Entering the Pass and seizing the imperial city of the Han Dynasty prove that his destiny, the dragon vein of his clan,”

“And the national destiny of the Manchu Qing Dynasty is far superior to those of the Han Dynasty at this stage,”

“And there must be expert help around him!”

At this point, Meng Changsheng paused for a moment and continued:

“I advise you not to use your arms as a chariot.”

“With the abilities of the two of you, it is basically impossible to defeat a nation with a rising national destiny.”

When Warren heard this, he suddenly looked extremely depressed

He lowered his head, his tone was firm, and at the same time he said with a bit of tragedy:

“Even if I am unable to help the Han Dynasty,”

“I will never give up the fight against Qing Gou to the end!”

“Qing Gou’s population is only one million. , but it can occupy most of our country.”

“If every Han man treats it indifferently, the Han people will never be able to take back the country!”



Meng Changsheng smiled calmly and said:

“Your so-called ideals and ambitions are just not enough years to live.”

“That’s all. If you can live to my age, what does it matter who becomes the emperor, the Tatars or the Han people?”

Seeing that he was unmoved, Victoria on the side said quickly:

“Master, the Qing army is now heading south. The momentum is overwhelming.”

“They have already reached Huguang. They will soon enter the Shiwang Mountains.”

“After the Shiwang Mountains, they will reach southern Yunnan.”

“Once they take southern Yunnan into their hands, China will be completely subjugated.”

“By then, you, the old man, will not only lose this treasure land for cultivation,”

“Even if we look at the entire Central Plains, we probably won’t be able to find a place to live!”

Meng Changsheng’s brows unconsciously twitched when he heard this.

Victoria keenly caught his change, and immediately hit the mark while the iron was hot:

“Master, you have a strong character and extraordinary bearing,”

“Especially the long hair tied into a bun, which is the finishing touch!”

At this point, Victoria spoke up. Turned around and said loudly:

“Master, in order to unify the Central Plains, Qing Gou forced all Chinese people to shave their heads and leave money rat tails that are less than the thickness of a little finger.”

“If you don’t shave your head, you will be beheaded.”

“If you have nowhere to practice in the future and are forced to join the world.”

“If you don’t want to suffer death, you have to shave off your long hair, can you accept it?”

Meng Changsheng’s expression suddenly became particularly ugly.

He has been cultivating here for hundreds of years.

Over the past few hundred years, almost no one has come to the cave where he was spared.

But today, a group of ignorant Qing soldiers rushed in, shouting and killing, disturbing his solitude.

He thought it was just a coincidence, but now when he heard Victoria say this, He suddenly felt uneasy in his heart.

At this time, Meng Changsheng remained silent for a long time.

At this time, flames suddenly burst into the sky at the foot of the mountain.

In order to completely drive away the rebels, the Qing army began to set fire to the mountain.

Seeing the raging fire, Meng Changsheng suddenly changed his mind and said,

“Well, since you two want to help the Han Dynasty,”

“I can give you a chance to see if you are willing.”

Warren was overjoyed and said quickly: “Master, please speak!”

Meng Changsheng said calmly: “Today you two will accept me as your teacher.”

“I will teach you some skills in fighting Chang Shadi.”

“After you leave Shiwan Mountains, you will continue to fight against the Manchus to help the Han Dynasty to the end.”

Warren immediately said excitedly: “Disciple Warren Lin, thanks you Master!”

Victoria on the side also immediately knelt down and shouted:

“Disciple Victoria Wu, Thanks you, Master!”

Back then, Victoria didn't know why Meng Changsheng suddenly changed his mind. However, when this scene from more than three hundred years ago reappeared in her mind,

She suddenly understood the reason.

At that time, it was 1650 AD, and there were still 13 years left before Meng Changsheng's deadline.

The reason why Meng Changsheng accepted the two of them as disciples.

Was probably so that they could delay the Qing army's attack on Shiwan Mountains after they completed their studies.

In other words, Meng Changsheng had his own plans for everything.

He accepted Warren and Victoria as his disciples,

Presumably for his own sake and so that he could spend the last thirteen years without being disturbed by the Qing army.

Thinking of this, Victoria thought more firmly in her heart:

“Think carefully, Master has always been extremely eager to prolong his life.”

“How could he accept the death limit so easily?”

“The only reasonable explanation is that he had found a way to fight against the death limit!”

“But he has been hiding it, and even pretended to say goodbye to me and Warren.”

“I’m afraid he is playing a big game. Maybe Warren and I are just his flags!”

“Master, for I will do whatever it takes to seek immortality.”

“I exposed myself in front of him today.”

“What should I do if he asks me to bring the entire Warriors Den to surrender to him in the future?!”

At this moment, Victoria felt extremely regretful,

Regretting that she should not have come to the Shiwan mountains,

She regrets even more that she should not have come to China!

But now it’s a done deal, the only thing she can do is hide as far away as possible!

# Chapter 5725

After Victoria's special plane arrived at Yongzhou Airport,

It was ready to fly directly to Australia without much preparation.

According to the flight plan, they had to replenish fuel in Australia,

And fly to Buenos Aires in one go as they had come.

When Victoria's plane was taxiing to take off on the right runway of Yongzhou Airport,

The private planes taken by Charlie and Maria landed on another runway of Yongzhou Airport.

A Mercedes-Benz SUV has been parked in the airport parking lot.

After leaving the airport, Charlie and Maria went straight to the parking lot.

After finding the SUV, Charlie touched the car from the top and inside the left front wheel, there was a key.

Then, he unlocked the door with the key,

Got into the car with Maria, and drove straight towards Shiwan Mountain.

Maria, who was in the passenger seat, was feeling a little uneasy.

She felt that Victoria suddenly left the Shiwan Mountains in a hurry,

Which proved that Shiwan Mountains must have risks that neither she nor Charlie had encountered.

However, Maria did not persuade Charlie to give up.

Because she knew very well that ever since Charlie met his grandparents,

He had always wanted to know what his parents discovered and experienced back then,

And how it was related to his later acquisition of the Nine Mysterious Heavenly Scriptures.

Therefore, for Maria herself, since Charlie wanted to find out,

She would accompany him without hesitation.

At this time, Charlie was somewhat worried.

However, the connection between his parents and the secret of immortality and the sequence of the Nine Mysteries was the key that he had always wanted to explore,

And he couldn't wait to find out everything hidden in it.

And Shiwan Mountains are most likely the source of all of this.

Therefore, even if it is dangerous, he must go to Shiwan Mountain to find out.

Victoria drove to the Shiwan Mountains yesterday,

But the car disappeared when she left,

And there was no video recording of the car exiting the highway,

So Charlie deduced that she was most likely at a certain node on that section of the highway.

Where she hides the car while the person exits the highway at that node.

Therefore, Charlie's plan was to drive to the section of the highway where she disappeared.

To see if he could find any traces left by her.

When approaching the section of highway where Victoria disappeared,

Charlie began to release spiritual energy to sense the surroundings,

Especially the valley under the viaduct.

A car weighing two to three tons cannot disappear out of thin air.

The most likely possibility is to hide it in a valley.

After passing through countless tunnels, Charlie suddenly slowed down the car.

He leaned the car on the emergency lane after exiting the expressway,

Pointed to the opposite lane, and said to Maria:

"Victoria should have gone down there, that way."

Maria asked curiously: "How do you know that master?"

Charlie said: "Her car is below there."

Maria was slightly startled, and asked,

"Did she jump from here?"

Charlie nodded: "The car should have been dropped first,"

"And then she jumped off."

Maria quickly asked: "Young master, should you jump from here too..."

Charlie said with a smile:

"Otherwise, you can drive Get off the highway at the next exit,"

"And wait for me in the town, I'll go down here."

"No..." Maria subconsciously grabbed Charlie's hand, and said nervously:

"I want to be with you!"

## Chapter 5726

Charlie smiled helplessly, opened the map on the central control,

Pointed to the location of the two of them, and the location of the town when Victoria appeared again, and said to Maria:

"Now I only know that Victoria went down from here,"

"And then from here appeared in that town,"

"But the actual place Victoria went to is still uncertain."

"If the place she went to was relatively close to these two ends,"

"It would be easier to say; if it was farther away, then her route was probably an acute angle with a long side."

"The search area will become very large."

"If you really follow me, I'm afraid you won't be able to bear it."

Maria said firmly: "I am going! It's just that you may need to take care of me and accommodate me a little bit."

"But I still want to be with the young master..."

After saying that, Maria pursed her lips and whispered:

"I am afraid that if the master is still alive and the young master dares to disturb his cultivation,"

"It will cause trouble. Although I have never met the master,"

"But if I do, I could still use my father's relationship to get close to him..."

Charlie was silent for a moment, looked at her and asked,

"Do you think Meng Changsheng is still alive?"

Maria nodded her head: "Originally, I just thought that it was not impossible that the master was still alive."

"There is a certain small probability. The probability of living and passing away is about 80 to 20 at most."

Speaking of this, Maria said in a very serious tone:

"But I now feel that the probability of the master living or passing away is about 20 or even 80."

Charlie asked in surprise: "Why do you believe he is still alive now?"

Maria said: "Because I have seen it. I have obtained all the surveillance videos of the airport, watching Victoria arrive at the airport,"

"Go through security check, and customs, and then watch her waiting and boarding the plane."

"Her expression in the camera was always a little flustered."

"It can be seen that she must have been very scared."

"With my knowledge, there should be no other person in the world who can make Victoria so fearful, except the master."

Charlie frowned and said: "Although Victoria left in a very embarrassed manner,"

"At least If Meng Changsheng is still alive and Victoria came to the door this time,"

"How can Meng Changsheng let her retreat completely?"

After saying that, Charlie added: "Besides, whether it is from you or from the descendants of Meng Changsheng's earliest named disciple,"

"His life can be confirmed. He was born in 664 AD and died in 1663,"

"Which happened to be One thousand years,"

"If he is still alive now, doesn't it mean that he found a way to break through one thousand years more than three hundred years ago?"

"If that is the case, his current strength may have been superb."

"No one can match him. Victoria is so far behind him."

"He can create an organization 10,000 times stronger than Warriors Den."

"How can he be willing to hide in a mountain?"

Maria said with a worried look on her face:

"What the young master said, I can't figure it out."

"I can't figure out many of these things, so I am worried."

As she said this, Maria thought of something, looked at Charlie, and said nervously:

"Young master, think about the mother of Pucha, more than three hundred years ago."

"I watched with my own eyes her failure to overcome the calamity by the lake."

"For more than three hundred years, I had firmly believed that she had disappeared into thin air,"

"But who could have imagined that she could leave a glimmer of hope for herself,"

"And then after more than three hundred years,"

"It would find an opportunity to be reborn after the year?"

Charlie's face darkened, and he asked in surprise:

"You mean, Meng Changsheng might also be looking for such an opportunity?"

Maria said seriously: "I am not sure,"

"But I think, since the mother of Pucha can do it, then Master Meng may also be able to do it."

"Master, please do not underestimate people's desire to live."

"The older a person is, the stronger the desire to live."

"A person who has lived for a thousand years will definitely have a desire to live."

"It's unimaginable to ordinary people."

"In order to survive, I don't know what kind of efforts he would make..."



# Chapter 5727

Maria's words made Charlie seriously think about

"Whether Meng Changsheng is really alive" for the first time.

This question seemed a bit ridiculous at first glance.

In the Nine Profound Heavenly Scriptures, there is no record of allowing a person to live for more than a thousand years,

So this has already touched his blind spot in knowledge.

In fact, there is not even a record of the Everlasting Green Pill in the Nine Profound Heavenly Scriptures.

Even Maria belongs to Charlie's knowledge blind spot, let alone Meng Changsheng.

On this issue, although there is no direct evidence to prove Meng Changsheng's current life and death,

Charlie does not dare to rely on it at all.

The due caution must not be skipped or taken lightly.

So, he said to Maria: "I very much agree with the views mentioned by you just now,"

"But we are already here and there is no reason to retreat."

"Why not follow what you said and let's go find out together?"

Maria knew that Charlie would not give up easily,

And being willing to take her with him was already the biggest concession he had made,

So she nodded without thinking and said:

"Okay! I am with the young master!"

Charlie nodded slightly and then sighed softly and said:

"If the two of us are together, it is not realistic to go down from here."

"Let's turn around and go back into the mountain in the opposite direction from the town where Victoria appeared."

"Okay." Maria nodded obediently and said,

"As long as the young master is willing to take me with him,"

"And I will obey the master's arrangements for everything."

The two reached a consensus, and Charlie was no longer delayed.

He turned back at high speed at the next exit,

Passed the spot where Victoria jumped down, and continued to drive forward.

After walking for dozens of kilometers,

They got off the expressway in the town where Victoria left.

The map shows that apart from this highway,

This township has only one rugged mountain road leading to the outside world.

The end of the mountain road starts from the foot of a mountain called Qiandao Mountain not far away,

And goes down the mountain through the township and connects with the main road of the township.

And then continues to the entrance and exit of the highway.

If you don't take the expressway here and continue driving forward,

You can reach a national highway that crosses Yunnan and Guangxi.

The location where Victoria appeared was on the road from the starting point of Daoshan Mountain to the middle of the township.

Therefore, Charlie drove the car to the place where Victoria appeared,

And decided to walk into the mountain from there,

Generally heading in the direction where Victoria abandoned the car,

To see if he could find any clues left by her.

After all, she left in a hurry and in a panic.

Charlie speculated that she had no time to deal with the clues she left behind.

After the two got out of the car,

Charlie took the equipment for hiking in the mountains,

And headed towards the mountains with Maria.

After leaving the country road, it is not immediately a rugged virgin forest.

On both sides of the road, there are almost terraced fields reclaimed by local farmers,

So there are natural paths for people and livestock to walk, and for motorcycles to ride.

It happened that the direction of this path coincided with the direction that Charlie planned to search,

So the two of them walked through this path one after another,

And continued to advance into the mountains.

The two climbed over a low mountain that was almost completely covered by terraced fields and continued to go deeper.

At this time, there were fewer and fewer man-made traces on both sides.

When he climbed over the second mountain and started heading down the mountain,

Charlie saw that the rugged path had changed from a long khaki strip into a slender Y-shape in the valley ahead.

In addition, there is a winding stream more than one meter wide,

Flowing all the way down the valley to the lower ground.

The stream just passes through the intersection of three straight lines in the Y shape.

Someone has piled five steps of stone piers here.



## Chapter 5728

The stream flows slowly through the four gaps in the five steps of stone piers,  
Because these five steps of stone piers block the flow of water.

The speed was such that the water flow formed a buffer zone of about four to five square meters on the left side of the Y-shape.

The small stream that was originally one meter wide suddenly became nearly three meters wide here.

The path is divided into two at the foot of the mountain,

The one on the right goes deeper, and the one on the left leads to the top of another mountain in front of the left,

But that mountain is a little different from the mountain that Charlie and Maria are climbing.

It is much shorter, and on the top of the mountain, there is a small piece of brown-red low-rise buildings, whose purpose is unknown.

The Shiwan Mountains are low in the southwest, and even in the mid-autumn season,

It is still warm and humid, so the plants here are also extremely lush.

The hillsides, mountaintops, and valleys are all lush and green,

And they look extraordinarily pure in the sun. No modern labels appear.

Maria followed Charlie step by step, looking at the scenery in front of her,

She couldn't help but admire: "The ancients often said that winding paths lead to seclusion,"

"But I never thought that the scenery along the way,"

"Such as the Shiwan mountains that made people talk about it,"

"Would be so beautiful and quiet. If you live here for a period of time,"

"You will definitely be very comfortable!"

Charlie smiled and said: "When you no longer have to worry about the Warriors Den in the future,"

"I will buy you a few mountains here, and you can choose a mountain to build a house on. The rest can be used to grow tea trees."

Maria shook her head and said: "The climate here is not suitable for Pu'er tea trees,"

"But it is suitable for growing some green tea."

After saying that, Maria couldn't help but mutter:

"Master, although I like tea, but I don't plan to be a hard-working tea farmer for the rest of my life."

"There are so many tea trees in Erlang Mountain, and I don't even know how to plant them in the future."

"You have to buy land for me to grow tea."

"Will I have to deal with tea all day long in the future?"

Charlie smiled and said: "I didn't mean that,"

"I just saw that you really like it here, so I wanted to buy it for you."

Maria smiled shyly and said softly:

"If the young master has this kind of heart, I will be satisfied."

At this time, the two of them were standing halfway up the mountain.

They could see the left-hand side of the Y-shaped mountain road.

A bald woman wearing a gray robe also walked down the mountain.

She looked to be in her early twenties, with very delicate features,

Although her head was shaved. She's bald, but she's still pretty.

The woman held a wooden basin in her hands, which seemed to contain some clothes and a flat wooden stick.

Since the mountain was much shorter than the one where Charlie and Maria were,

The girl arrived at the Y-shaped intersection earlier than them.

The girl stopped at the intersection, leaned on the road on the left side of the Y-shape,

Squatted down on the side of the road, then took out a robe from the tub,

Wet it in the water, rubbed it, and then patted it hard with a wooden stick.

The wooden sticks slapped the wet clothes,

And the crisp slapping sound echoed gently in the valley.

Maria listened and saw, and couldn't help but say to Charlie:

"I used to wash clothes like this."

"I didn't expect that people would still use this method."

Charlie looked at the girl from a distance and muttered:

"She seems to be a nun, so the red-walled building on the mountain on the left should be a nunnery."

Maria nodded slightly and sighed:

"Being a monk here is more difficult than most monks."

The two walked along the mountain road. Continuing into the countryside,

After a while, they arrived at the Y-shaped intersection.

At this time, the nun was still squatting on the side washing clothes.

Since Charlie and Maria had agreed to pretend to be a couple in front of outsiders,

He stopped in front of the stone pier, stretched out a hand, and said to Maria:

"I'll hold you over there."

Maria nodded shyly, and immediately handed her little hand to Charlie's.

Charlie led her across the stone pier and was about to continue walking to the right of the Y-shaped intersection.

The young nun next to them who was squatting on the ground washing clothes suddenly stood up,

Clasped her hands and bowed slightly towards Maria, and said:

"Amitabha, this benefactor, the abbot of our family has been waiting for you for a long time,"

"And I would like to ask you to come to the nunnery to meet us."

## Chapter 5729

What the nun said surprised Charlie and Maria.

The two never expected that they had never exposed themselves in front of Victoria,

But they were being targeted in front of a nunnery in the Shiwan Mountains.

So, without waiting for Maria to speak,

Charlie asked the nun with a vigilant look:

"Who are you? Pretending to be a nun, washing clothes here just to wait for us to show up?!"

The nun clasped her hands together bowed slightly to Charlie and said:

"Master, this poor nun is not pretending."

"I am a bhikshuni in Qingzhao nunnery, became a monk and practiced in Qingzhao nunnery."

"It's just that the abbot knew that the two of you would pass by here today,"

"So he specially asked me to wait here."

After saying that, she looked at Maria again and said seriously:

"Madam, the abbot said that you have a deep connection with Buddhism and would like to invite you to the nunnery for a while."

"It won't take you too long."

Maria thought for a moment and nodded gently.

She nodded and said: "Okay, then I'll ask you to lead the way."

Charlie felt that this matter was a bit weird and not a very safe option, so he said:

"Then I'll go too."

The nun pointed at the road going up the mountain behind her.

She opened her mouth and said:

"Starting from here all the way to the top of the mountain it is the territory of the temple."

"Qingzhao Temple is the place where novices and bhikkhunis practice Buddhism."

"No men are allowed to enter. I hope the master understands."

Charlie said coldly: "What a joke if you don't let me in,"

"How can I ensure the safety of my girlfriend?"

The nun said respectfully: "A monk is compassionate and will not do anything to harm others."

"Please I ask you to don't worry."

Just as Charlie was about to refuse, Maria pulled his arm and said softly:

"Honey, wait for me here for a while. I'll come back as soon as I go."

Charlie advised her: "Don't be so impulsive, be careful of fraud!"

Maria smiled slightly and said softly: "It's okay,"

"As long as you are here, no one dares to do anything to me,"

"So just rest assured and wait for me here."

Maria didn't know the background of the abbot who was waiting to meet her in the nunnery.

However, her instinct told her that there would be no danger there.

She knew very well that the only people in this world who wanted to catch her were Victoria and her organization.

And when she came to southern Yunnan with Charlie this time, Victoria didn't notice anything.

From this, it can be inferred that the person in the monastery who wants to meet her must not be Victoria's person.

Since it is not Victoria's person, the probability of the other party being malicious is much smaller.

What's more, Charlie is waiting for her at the foot of the mountain.

If the other party really knows the details between her and Charlie,

They will definitely not be able to attack her under Charlie's nose.

What interests her the most is that she can't wait to find out the identity of the other party.

Since the other party knows her, they must have a certain understanding of her situation.

What's even more frightening is that the other party can actually calculate the whereabouts of her and Charlie.

This is even more remarkable.

After all, she and Charlie had only decided on this route an hour or two ago,

And there was no way the other party could know it in advance.

The only possibility was that the other party had calculated everything and was just waiting here.

Thinking of this, Maria couldn't wait to know the origin of the person behind this plan.

Seeing that Maria had made up her mind,

Charlie guessed that she would also want to go up to find out.

If he follows her forcefully, maybe the abbot will give up showing up.

In that case, he won't be able to explore the real reason behind it.

In desperation, Charlie had no choice but to nod his head and say to Maria:

"I'm watching you go up here. The timer starts from the moment you disappear from my sight."

"I will wait for you for twenty minutes."

"If you don't come out after that time, I'll come up and look for you!"



## Chapter 5730

Seeing Charlie relent, Maria nodded quickly and said,

"Okay! Just twenty minutes!"

Seeing this, the little nun once again clasped her hands to Charlie and bowed respectfully,

"Master, please wait a moment. Wait a moment."

After that, she said to Maria respectfully:

"Madam, please come with me."

Maria nodded, gave Charlie a reassuring smile, and whispered in his ear:

"Young Master, just wait here. I will come back."

Charlie nodded slightly and watched her go up the mountain with the nun.

Charlie watched the two of them walking further and further,

Watching the two of them step by step up to the top of the mountain,

Watching the little nun respectfully open the door of the nunnery for Maria,

And watching Maria turn around and wave to him from a distance before stepping in.

At this time, Charlie felt somewhat uneasy.

He felt that even if the other party was not a bad person,

The other party's accurate prediction of himself and Maria also made his back shiver.

Ever since he obtained the Nine Profound Heavenly Scriptures,

He had never felt so anxious and uneasy.

At this time, Maria had already stepped into the gate of Qingzhao'an.

Qingzhao Nunnery is not a big temple, it occupies a small area,

And there are not many bhikkhunis who practice.

Including the novice monks who are under 20 years old,

There are only a dozen or so people in total.

Moreover, the incense in Qingzhao'an was not very prosperous.

Maria came in and never saw any pilgrims burning incense and worshipping Buddha here.

She followed the little nun through the front yard,

And all the nuns bowed to her when they saw her, which made Maria even more curious.

The little nun led her through the front yard to the main hall at the back.

The main hall is not grand, but it can be seen everywhere that it has been maintained very carefully.

Although the Buddha statues are old, they are brightly colored and not stained with dust.

At first glance, it can be seen that they are often repaired and cleaned.

In the main hall, an old nun with gray hair was standing in front of the Buddha,

Carefully adding oil to the several ever-burning lamps in front of the Buddha statue.

The old nun seemed to be in her seventies or eighties.

She was already old, but her body was very strong.

She was holding an oil pot that weighed several kilograms,

And the lamp oil that was poured out did not move at all.

It could be seen that her hands were extraordinarily stable.

The little nun brought Maria in, and said respectfully:

"Master, I have invited that benefactor."

The old nun turned around, looked at Maria, folded her hands together, and said very respectfully:

"The poor nun has the audacity to bother you. Please don't take offense."

Maria also put her hands together to return the gesture, and said loudly:

"Master, you don't have to be so polite,"

"It's just that I came hiking with my boyfriend,"

"And he is still waiting at the bottom of the mountain,"

"So please I ask you to get straight to the point."

The old nun waved her hand to the little nun, who immediately turned around and left, closing the door of the main hall at the same time.

After she went out, the old nun suddenly sighed and said:

"There are all kinds of dangers and obstacles on the road ahead..."

"I would like to boldly ask Miss Lin to give Mr. Wade good advice and not let him go any further!"

Suddenly being called out by the other party, Maria was horrified,

But she looked at the other party with a calm expression on her face, and said calmly:

"Master, Mr. Wade is obsessed with the way forward,"

"I am just a weakling. How can I persuade him to return?"

As she spoke, Maria looked at the old nun, changed the subject, and said seriously:

"Unless the master can tell me, what are the dangers ahead?"

# Chapter 5731

Hearing Maria's question, the old nun explained seriously:

"To be honest with Miss Lin, fifty miles ahead of this place is where Miss Lin and Mr. Wade are going."

"However, this place can be visited by Miss Lin and Victoria,"

"But only Mr. Ye can't go."

"You... you know about Victoria?!"

Maria was even more horrified when she heard the old nun mention Victoria.

She really couldn't figure out the identity of this old nun,

Let alone why she was so powerful.

She not only knew Charlie and herself.

Even she knows Victoria.

The fact that she can name Victoria proves that she must know something about Victoria's life.

In other words, she must know that Victoria lived from the Ming Dynasty more than 300 years ago to today.

Maria looked at the old nun and thought to herself in horror:

"She knows Victoria's secret, does that mean she also knows my secret?"

The old nun stopped covering up at this time and said calmly:

"The poor nun and Miss Lin opened the skylight."

"To be honest, Victoria and Warriors Den are both enemies of mine,"

"And Victoria is very strong personally,"

"And Warriors Den has been in business for three hundred years,"

"So the overall strength is almost unmatched by anyone."

At this point, the old nun suddenly changed the conversation and said seriously:

"But compared with that person fifty miles away,"

"Victoria is just a clown who has lived for more than three hundred years."

The old nun's words frightened Maria.

In more than three hundred years, Maria has never been as nervous as she is now,

As if everything she has hidden for more than three hundred years has been seen through.

She suppressed the anxiety in her heart and asked the old nun calmly:

"Is it Meng Changsheng the master said this?"

"Could it be... is he really not dead?"

The old nun sighed noncommittally and said:

"Victoria has seen the coming and going in such a short period of time,"

"Someone as smart as Miss Lin must be able to see the whole story at a glance."

Maria was even more nervous. In desperation, she quickly asked:

"Lady, dare I ask you, what does all this have to do with Mr. Wade?!"

"Why can Victoria and I go, but Mr. Wade can't?"

The old nun clasped her hands together and said:

"Amitabha, Miss Lin, it's not that the nun doesn't want to make it clear,"

"It's just that Miss Lin should know the destiny."

"There are some things that can only be touched upon."

"Too much interference will cause uncontrollable changes."

"My original intention is to remind Mr. Wade that the road ahead is full of dangers."

"If Mr. Wade talks too much and goes that way, everything will be irreversible."

Maria pursed her lips and asked her:

"What do you think, lady, should I persuade him now?"

"Ask him to give up? With his character, without a clear explanation, will he agree?"

The old nun said seriously:

"This is why I asked my apprentice to invite Miss Lin instead of inviting Mr. Wade directly."

"I believe that Miss Lin is of irreplaceable importance in Mr. Wade's mind."

"It would be much better for Miss Lin to persuade Mr. Wade than for a poor nun to persuade him."

Maria said in embarrassment: "Master Wade is very concerned about this Shiwan mountain incident."

"He is looking forward to the trip very much."

"He still has many problems that have been bothering him for a long time."

"He wants to get an explanation during this trip..."

"I suddenly advised him to turn back, he probably wouldn't agree."

The old nun nodded and looked at Maria and said:

"Moving forward will bring unforeseen disasters to Mr. Wade and many innocent people."

"If Mr. Wade can temporarily put aside his hatred,"

"He can buy himself valuable time and gain more chances of winning."

## Chapter 5732

After that, the old nun looked at Maria and said sincerely:

"Miss Lin, the poor nun has made it clear to you that he has a powerful relationship."

"It depends on Miss Lin whether you can persuade Mr. Wade to turn back."

Maria looked at her and with a few words asked pleadingly:

"Kind lady, please make it more clear. Mr. Wade is my savior."

"If he is really destined to be so doomed,"

"I will try my best to save him even if I have to sacrifice my own life."

After saying that, Maria bent her legs and knelt down.

Seeing this, the old nun hurriedly stepped forward, supported Maria's body before she knelt down, and said:

"Miss Lin has seen all the vicissitudes of the world for hundreds of years,"

"And the poor nun dare not be arrogant in front of Miss Lin,"

"Miss Lin don't make such a big gesture."

As she spoke, she supported Maria, and said,

"Miss Lin must also know the mysteries of fate."

"It may be very different. If the poor nun talks too much, things may turn against me."

"If Ms. Lin really wants to help Mr. Wade, then reduce the variables as much as possible."

"The poor nun can clearly tell you that there is danger ahead for Mr. Wade,"

"And Ms. Lin just make sure that Mr. Wade can give up and turn back is the best result,"

"If you know too much, it will bring even greater changes."

Hearing the old nun's words, seeing the world for hundreds of years as the situations changed,

Maria knew that the old nun in front of her already knew her past very well.

And she also quickly realized her gaffe.

The old nun was right. There are indeed many extremely subtle variables in things like fate.

Knowing more is sometimes not a good thing.

At this time, she no longer asked the old nun for more details,

But weighed the credibility of the old nun's words in her heart.

She first ruled out the old nun as her enemy.

Because the old nun had successfully attracted herself to this nunnery,

If she was really her enemy, she would definitely do something to herself;

Then, she ruled out that the old nun was Charlie's enemy.

The old nun knew Charlie, she knew herself, she knew Victoria,

And she even knew the trajectory of the three of them.

If she was Charlie's enemy, she wouldn't need to be mysterious here.

She only needed to find a way to tell Victoria that Charlie was the son of Changying Wade and Margaret,

And then pass Charlie's information to Victoria,

And then Victoria would definitely kill Charlie.

Now that the old nun is ruled out as her and Charlie's enemy,

Her previous words are much more credible.

Maria also analyzed whether the old nun and Charlie would have any stakes.

For example, if the old nun also wanted to explore the relics left by Meng Changsheng,

Then she and Charlie would be competitors.

They would try to persuade their competitors to give up.

She does have advantages too.

However, if you think about it carefully, this possibility is slim.

After all, the other party was waiting for them here,

And she and Charlie hadn't even figured out where they were going.

If everyone is grabbing a treasure, it will naturally be first come, first served.

The other party is already in front and knows the location of the treasure.

The best option is to rush to dig up the treasure as soon as possible without exposing it as much as possible.

With her identity and her reputation of making a fortune,

How could she leave the treasure and not dig it out,

Instead, staying here to persuade the disadvantaged competitors to give up?

Therefore, this inference is untenable.

She is not an enemy, and there is no conflict of interest or interests.

In this case, the probability that the other party is sincere is even higher.

So, Maria looked at her and asked, "Lady, I have one last question."

"Why would you help Mr. Wade?"

The old nun said in a very solemn tone:

"More than 20 years ago, someone opened a Pandora's box."

"However, the magic box was only half opened at that time."

"If it is ignored, the magic box will gradually open by itself after a few years,"

"Which will inevitably lead to unforeseen disasters."

"Now, the magic box can be completely closed,"

"Mr. Wade is the only one who opened it directly!"

## Chapter 5733

Maria probably guessed the meaning of the old nun's words, so she asked:

"Lady is saying that Master Wade's future depends entirely on his actions?"

The old nun said noncommittally:

"The poor nun has already said that. There are too many,"

"And some questions should be digested by Miss Lin herself."

"However, remember not to let Mr. Wade know about these things."

Seeing that she was unwilling to say more, Maria quickly asked,

"I wonder if Lady has any other instructions?"

"No more." The old nun clasped her hands together and said respectfully:

"I have heard Miss Lin's name for a long time."

"Now that I could meet you today, my wish got fulfilled."

"Mr. Wade is still waiting at the bottom of the mountain."

"Miss Lin should leave."

"Please persuade him to return to Aurous Hill."

Maria saw that the old nun wanted to see off the guest,

But she was still a little unwilling to give up.

She hurriedly asked: "Master, what should Master Wade do next?"

"If we can't move forward today, I am afraid that Master Wade will be in trouble."

"Please tell me where to go in the future!"

The old nun's expression suddenly became very struggling, and after hesitating for a long time, she said:

"Miss Lin, please tell Mr. Wade to find an opportunity to open Niwan Palace as soon as possible."

"Only by opening the Niwan Palace can he barely fight against Victoria."

Maria became more and more confused about the old nun's identity.

She really couldn't understand why Charlie was so low-key and hiding his identity.

The old nun seemed to know him well, even knowing that Charlie had not opened Niwan Palace.

Maria wanted to ask her some more questions,

But the old nun had already opened the door of the main hall and shouted to the outside:

"Jinnie, see off the guests."

The young nun who had just brought Maria walked out of the side hall.

She respectfully said to Maria, "Miss Lin, please follow me out."

Maria had no choice but to nod her head,

Looked at the old nun, and said, "Lady, thank you on behalf of Master, for your advice."

The old nun nodded slightly and smiled and said:

"Amitabha, please take care of yourself, Miss Lin!"

Maria said goodbye to the old nun and followed the young nun out of the gate of Qingzhao Nunnery.

The young nun named Jinnie Chen said,

"Miss Lin, you can go down the mountain the way you came. I won't send you down."

Maria nodded and said, "Lady, please stay."

Jinnie bowed to Maria, and then slowly closed the door.

Maria looked at Charlie from a distance at the foot of the mountain,

Whose visual effect was no bigger than a grain of rice, and waved to him.

Seeing that Charlie seemed to be waving to her,

She quickly walked a few steps and hurried down the mountain.

...

At the bottom of the mountain, Charlie has been waiting here for a long time.

Seeing Maria coming down, he took a few steps forward and asked with concern:

"Miss Lin, what kind of medicine is that nun selling in the gourd?"

"What did the host ask you to do?"

Maria pursed her lips and said: "Master, they reminded us that there are dangers ahead and want to persuade us to turn back."

Charlie looked surprised and asked, "Does she know where we are going?"

Maria nodded lightly and explained: "It seems that the teacher is not a bad person."

"There must be dangers on the road ahead that we have not thought of..."

As she said that, she looked at Charlie and begged:

"Master, let's not go any further and go back to Aurous Hill, okay?"

Back to Aurous Hill?"

## Chapter 5734

Charlie frowned and said seriously:

"We are probably only a few dozen miles away from the place where Meng Changsheng practiced."

"My parents may have been here back then, and from the items he left behind they took the "Preface to the Nine Mysteries Sutra"."

"If I walk these dozens of miles, I might be able to figure out more details about their lives."

"How could I give up halfway..."

After saying that, Charlie said to Maria:

"Miss Lin, why don't you go back to town and wait for me, I'll go by myself!"

"Absolutely not!" Maria subconsciously grabbed Charlie's hand and begged:

"Master, since you already know that the place where Master passed away is right here."

"If we go back, then this time it will not be considered in vain or give up halfway, The young master can go back to Aurous Hill to continue preparations,"

"And it will not be too late to come back after the young master's strength has greatly increased!"

Charlie said: "You and I haven't figured out the identity of the other party."

"I can't let the other party make us give up everything I originally planned with just a few words."

Maria said anxiously: "Master, someone knew that we were coming here."

"And they had calculated the route in advance and are waiting here."

"This proves that the other party knows you and me very well."

"Even if she has no ill intentions towards us, we have to admit the fact that our identity has been exposed."

"If we still force forward in this situation,"

"Whether she is an enemy or a friend, the situation is probably extremely unfavorable to us."

Charlie was slightly startled.

Maria's words made him start to re-examine the matter again.

As Maria said, regardless of whether the nun is a friend or an enemy,

It is already a fact that he was exposed.

Since she knows, it proves that others may also know.

If he insists on moving forward, let alone whether he will encounter risks,

What if someone else knows his identity?

What should they do if it reaches the ears of Warriors Den?

Maria said again at this time: "Master, no matter what is dozens of miles away,"

"It can't change the fact that Victoria is also very afraid of it."

"If Victoria is also afraid of it, then why should we go to force it?"

Charlie suddenly fell into a struggle.

He knew very well what Maria said.

However, when he finally got closer to his parents' secret, he really didn't want to give up.

At this time, in the main hall of Qingzhao'an.

Jinnie returned to the main hall and reported respectfully to the old nun:

"Lady, Maria has left."

The old nun didn't look back and asked,

"Did you see her go down the mountain with your own eyes?"

"Yes." Jinnie nodded and said, "After I closed the door,"

"I watched her go down the mountain through the crack in the door and then came back to report to you."

The old nun asked again, "What are the two of them doing?"

"Conversation." Jinnie replied: "The two have been talking in place,"

"But they are not ready to set off yet."

The old nun nodded slightly and said:

"You stay here, I will report to the madam."

After that, without waiting for Jinnie's answer, she quickly walked towards the back of the main hall.

There is another door directly behind the main hall.

Generally speaking, this kind of place in the temple is no longer open to pilgrims,

Mostly monks and nuns. Now a place for her own use.

The old nun stopped outside the door, gently knocked on the door, and said respectfully:

"Madam, Maria is gone."

A pleasant and somewhat majestic female voice came from the room:

"Have they gone back?"

The old nun replied: "Not yet. The two of them seem to be still talking at the intersection at the foot of the mountain."

"It is not yet certain whether they will give up."

The woman inside the door smiled and said,

"There should be no problem."

With that said, the woman also said: "By the way,"

"Please hurry up and organize everyone to clean up."

"We should go. That Maria is so smart that she is almost a demon."

"I think she was too worried and ignored some details."

"I believe it won't be certain. How long will it take for them to come back again?"

"Keep us informed and don't leave any clues here."

The old nun said respectfully: "Okay madam!"

## Chapter 5735

At the foot of Qingzhao'an Mountain at this time.

Charlie still hasn't made the decision to give up on the trip.

If they just leave like this, he will really feel unwilling.

However, Maria's analysis was not unreasonable.

Some people take great pains to remind themselves that if they continue to have their own way, they will be a little too conceited.

Thinking of the word arrogance, Charlie suddenly realized that his current strength was actually far from enough in the face of the unknown.

After pondering for a moment, he smiled bitterly and said calmly:

"That monk should be right."

"My strength is not even as good as Victoria's,"

"So I shouldn't be too conceited."

"Moreover, that monk can know your and my information and movements."

"It comes naturally. She is not an ordinary person."

After saying that, Charlie looked at Maria and said seriously:

"Ms. Lin is smarter than me. On many problems, you think deeper than I can,"

"And you can see more clearly than I do."

"Since you also advised me to stop, I'd better listen."

"I advise you to eat enough and go back."

Maria, who was nervous, finally breathed a sigh of relief.

She was afraid that Charlie would lose his temper,

So she would stick to one goal and never waver no matter what others said.

Now that Charlie relented and wanted to go back, she was naturally relieved.

So, like a girl with high emotional intelligence coaxing her immature boyfriend,

She held his arm and said with a smile:

"Young master, although you have stopped here today, you will not stop here forever."

"Let's get back and have a good rest."

"After you are fully prepared, wait for a better time to come again."

"Experts often say that this is called a strategic retreat."

Charlie inevitably said a little depressed: "A retreat is a retreat,"

"There is no such thing as a strategic retreat."

She looked at him and asked with a smile:

"Master, you must have never climbed Mount Everest and K2, right?"

Charlie nodded and said, "I haven't climbed it, What about you?"

Maria smiled proudly. Said: "I have been there, more than once."

As she spoke, she eloquently said: "A few decades ago,"

"When mountaineering equipment was still very crude,"

"It was very difficult for people to climb Mount Everest and K2, especially K2."

"People had tried for more than 50 years without success."

"Climbing to the top, countless efforts had turned back somewhere in the middle,"

"But fortunately in the past fifty years,"

"There are always people who can push the turning point higher until they finally successfully reach the top."

Maria looked at Charlie and said with a smile: "Regardless of whether Master is still alive or not,"

"Based on his cultivation more than three hundred years ago,"

"He should be the strongest among all the practitioners known to Master, right?"

Charlie nodded: "As far as I know, Meng Changsheng is first and Victoria is second."

"That's right." Maria, who held Charlie's arm, pulled his arm down coquettishly and smiled shyly.

She said: "Young master, you just regard the two of them as Mount Everest and K2."

"Today, Qingzhao'an is the endpoint of the first summit."

"Next time, treat this place as the base camp for the summit."

"Move forward step by step. Eventually, you will reach the summit."

Charlie sighed softly, nodded, and said, "That's the only way it can be."

Seeing that Charlie was finally relieved, Maria felt relieved.

At this moment, she is just like a newly married young lady in ancient times.

She only has her "husband" in her eyes, and her "husband" is everything to her.

If her "husband" is happy, she doesn't feel hard even eating bran-thick vegetables,

But If the "husband" is unhappy, even the delicacies will make her feel like chewing wax.

She was most afraid that Charlie would not know how to retreat.

Now it seemed that although Charlie was somewhat unwilling to do so,

He had at least accepted her advice.

Although it can be seen that there is still some depression left,

## Chapter 5736

These depressions are left to her to enlighten and comfort.

So, she took Charlie's arm and turned around and walked on the way she came.

Charlie walked with his head down, and Maria beside him was thinking of ways to ease his mood,

And asked him expectantly: "Master, do you think the mother of Pucha has grown up and grown more leaves in the past two days?"

Charlie said casually: "It should have grown bigger."

"As for the leaves, it shouldn't be a big problem to pull out three or five more buds."

Maria said with a smile: "Then after we go back,"

"I will take out the new buds. Pick it off, dry the green leaves, and give it to the young master to have a taste."

Charlie asked curiously: "Isn't the process of making Pu'er tea very troublesome?"

"After processing, it needs to be stored and fermented, right?"

Maria smiled and said: "In fact, you can drink it after it is cured."

"It just lacks the fermentation taste, but it also has a fresh and soft flavor."

"Generally speaking, only freshly picked tea leaves can be cured immediately."

"The requirements for freshness and time are strict."

'So most people don't have the opportunity to taste it."

Charlie asked her with a smile: "Don't you treasure the leaves of the mother of Pucha,"

"Why are you so generous now."

Maria smiled shyly and said softly: "The mother of Pucha has such a strong vitality,"

"There should be no problem in picking a little. Isn't that what the young master said."

Charlie knew that Maria wanted to make him happy,

But he was not troubled by this matter all the time,

So he smiled and said: "Let her grow the leaves."

"If you pick too many, you may not be able to sleep."

Maria shook her head and said seriously:

"As long as the master is happy, there is nothing I can't bear to do."

Charlie smiled in his heart and nodded slightly.

He knew Maria's thoughts and was a little moved in his heart.

He always felt that it was a bit embarrassing for a big man to have a little girl to circle around and coax him, so he said to her:

"Yes. After Miss Lin, Victoria should not dare to touch down in China again in the short term."

"There will definitely be no risks in the future."

"What are your plans next?"

Maria saw that Charlie had changed the subject, so she smiled and said:

"I plan to go back to school, but then it will be a day school."

"Stay at the mountain Villa and will take care of the mother of Pucha every day."

"In addition, Mr. Qiu may need to prepare a plane and go to Erlang Mountain in southern Yunnan on weekends to take care of the tea garden there."

Charlie smiled and said, "That must keep you very busy."

Maria nodded and said seriously: "It's better to be busy."

"In fact, I haven't been so busy for many years."

"In the past, I was always worried about being caught by Victoria,"

"So I didn't dare to run around. In recent years, I have been staying at home all day,"

"Except for fiddling with some things, making porcelain, writing, and painting,"

"I can do almost nothing."

"In the future, Victoria's sense of oppression should be relaxed, and I can be busy more."

Seeing Maria's expectant look, he couldn't help but feel happy for her.

Charlie knows that for this little girl who has lived for more than three hundred years,

The next period of time may be the period of least pressure for her except for childhood.

For her, even if she is busy, she will definitely be more happy.

Thinking of this, he felt that this trip to southern Yunnan was not in vain,

And his mood eased a bit.

The two of them climbed up the second mountain step by step along the way they came.

When they were halfway up, the altitude had already exceeded the peak where Qingzhao'an was located.

Maria suddenly stopped and turned around.

Looking at Qingzhao'an in the distance somewhat absentmindedly,

She seemed to be thinking about something.

Charlie saw her stopping and looking back with a thoughtful look on her face,

So he asked her: "What is Miss Lin thinking about?"

Maria frowned slightly and whispered softly:

"I am thinking that the monk told me about Victoria and Warriors Den."

"Talked about hatred, fate, and even an ancient Greek myth, but...but..."

Charlie asked: "But what?"

Maria pursed her lips, her voice was a little louder,

With a hint of confusion, she said:

"But she only didn't tell me about Buddhism..."

# Chapter 5737

Maria's words made Charlie a little wary.

He couldn't help but ask her:

"Do you think there is a problem with her identity?"

Maria nodded lightly and said firmly:

"I have also come into contact with some masters and monks who have made great achievements in Buddhism in the past."

"One of these people's common characteristic is that they strictly use the Buddhist teachings to restrain themselves,"

"And they always quote scriptures and use the wisdom of the Buddhist teachings to guide their daily lives and speech and behavior."

"To put it more simply, even in their daily lives, they always speak without departing from the Buddhist teachings,"

"But that monk, except Amitabha, rarely mentioned Buddhism,"

"So I suddenly felt that she might not be a real monk."

Charlie suddenly became alert and said:

"If she is not a real nun, then she was waiting for us here disguised as a nun."

"Regardless of whether she is an enemy or a friend,"

"There must be another force outside of the Warriors Den behind her."

Maria nodded and said seriously: "But you don't have to worry too much, Master."

"I feel that they are definitely not enemies,"

"And there is a high probability that they will also have a grudge against Warriors Den."

"The enemy of our enemy is our friend,"

"But they are still a little wary of us,"

"Or there may be other reasons that make it inconvenient for us to know their true identity for the time being."

Charlie was silent for a moment and asked her:

"What Greek mythology did she mention?"

Maria didn't want Charlie to know too much,

So as not to let him guess the clues, she said:

"She just told me the story of Achilles,"

"Even if your strength is very strong, if you're not careful, you may be doomed."

Charlie didn't think much, and said with a firm expression:

"Let's go back and have a look!"

Maria asked in surprise: "Young master,"

"Are you planning to go to Qingzhao Nunnery to take a look?"

"Yes!" Charlie nodded and said: "I want to know who they are,"

"Why do they know so much about us,"

"And why do they deliberately disguise themselves as nuns and wait for us here?"

"Originally, they said that this is an important place for Buddhism and won't let me in."

"Naturally, I should respect it."

"But now it seems that there is a high probability that they are not Buddhists at all,"

"So it is better to go in and ask them face to face."

"This..." Maria hesitated for a moment and nodded:

"Since the young master wants to see what's going on,"

"I will accompany the young master."

"However, the young master must not be impulsive,"

"So as not to turn friends into enemies."

Charlie nodded: "I just want to go with you."

"I want to know who they are. If we can really become friends because of a common enemy,"

"We should at least be honest with each other."

"It would be too shameful to be secretive."

Maria also agreed with Charlie's point of view.

The other party already knew about her.

With Charlie's identity and background, they still hide their true identities,

Which really makes people feel a little uncomfortable.

So, the two of them turned around and went down the mountain again,

Heading straight to Qingzhao'an.

After passing the Y-shaped intersection,

Charlie and Maria walked up the road.

Halfway there, Charlie frowned and said,

"There is no one in Qingzhao Nunnery anymore."

"Ah?" Maria asked in surprise, "Young master you used spiritual energy to check?"

"Yes." Charlie nodded and said, "No one is there. They have probably left."

"This..." Maria frowned and said, "When I left just now,"

"I looked back many times, but I didn't see anyone coming down the mountain..."

After Charlie released more spiritual energy to investigate, he said:

"There is a path behind the mountain."

Maria said with some annoyance: "It's all my fault,"

"If I had thought of this earlier..."

## Chapter 5738

Charlie smiled lightly and said with relief:

"It's okay. Since everyone has left, let's go up and take a look."

"Maybe they have left some clues."

Maria asked quickly: "Do you want me to ask Ethan to help us check?"

"These people might leave surveillance information in nearby towns."

Charlie shrugged: "You can try it, but I feel like there won't be much gain."

"These people are different from Victoria, who is suspicious by nature."

"This time she came to Shiwan and acted alone. In this case, it is difficult to cover everything. But they are different at first glance. Not only are they acting as a team, but they have also been prepared in advance. In this case, it should not be possible. Leave us some clues."

"That's true..." Maria sighed and said: "It seems that they guessed that we were coming here in advance, so they prepared in advance in Qingzhao Nunnery." After saying that,

Maria thought of something and said: "We can Find out about the situation of Qingzhao Nunnery from the local area, maybe you can find some clues."

"Okay." Charlie nodded and said, "Let's go up and take a look first."

...

The two of them arrived at the main entrance of Qingzhao Nunnery.

By that time, the door was closed.

However, Charlie stepped forward and pushed gently,

And the door opened with a creaking sound.

He stepped in, looked at the thick wooden door bolt behind the door, and frowned:

"It seems they knew we were coming, and specially left the door open for us."

Maria looked a little horrified and murmured:

"Every step we take is counted..."

"Yeah." Charlie laughed at himself and said,

"I thought it was hidden very deep, but it turns out that everyone knows everything."

"The key is that everything can be calculated by them. I really can't understand it."

Maria also said with some dejection: "I have never had any cultivation in more than three hundred years."

"What I have always been more conceited about is my brain."

"Now it seems that I can't compare it with them."

Charlie smiled and said: "This is normal."

"Two fists are still hard to beat with four hands,"

"Not to mention that there may be a huge organization behind them."

"With so many people working together, how can they not understand the two of us?"

Maria sighed softly and said:

"Victoria has been after me for the three hundred years."

"She has never found me, so these people may not be able to match Warriors Den in terms of hard power,"

"But the people behind them must be smarter than Victoria and me."

Charlie comforted: "Fortunately, it is unlikely that they are enemies."

"If we can become friends in the future, it should be of great help to us."

Maria nodded slightly, but it could be seen that she was still somewhat shocked.

Charlie changed the subject and said to her,

"Let's go in and take a look."

"Okay," Maria responded and followed Charlie as she walked in.

Qingzhao'an is not big at all.

There are two courtyards in total, one in front and one in the back.

On both sides of the front yard are side halls,

And in the middle is the main hall.

There is also a small courtyard behind the main hall with three tile-roofed houses.

Charlie and Maria first looked at the side halls on both sides.

Apart from a few Buddha statues enshrined in the side halls, there was nothing special.

In the main hall, the evergreen lamp was still burning,

And in the incense burner, three sticks of sandalwood had almost burned to the roots.

Charlie looked at the incense burner, then guessed the length of the incense ash, and said,

"These three sandalwood sticks seem to be very long."

"They must have been burning for more than an hour."

Maria calculated the time and said,

"Coming down the mountain it has indeed been an hour since I met you and explained everything to you,"

"Plus the young master and I went up the mountain and then turned back."

Charlie nodded and said: "Then these three sticks of incense are from when you left the house."

"It was ignited at that moment."

As he spoke, Charlie closed his eyes, smelled the sandalwood scent carefully, and sighed:

"This sandalwood scent is so good, better than any other sandalwood scent I have ever smelled!"

Maria said in agreement: "I was just going to say... this sandalwood is indeed very good."

"I am also a lover of tea and fragrance, but the best old sandalwood I have ever come into contact with does not have this kind of sandalwood smell."

"The aroma is rich, deep, and slightly sweet."

Charlie couldn't help but sigh: "It seems that every step we take is indeed in their calculations."

"They must have calculated that you will notice the abnormality and that we will turn back."

"These three sticks of incense should have been lit for us."

## Chapter 5739

Looking at the three sticks of sandalwood that were about to burn out, Maria looked defeated.

She said to Charlie with some confusion:

“They can even calculate that we can come back, who are they...”

Charlie shook his head: “I can’t figure it out.”

As he said that, he walked through the main hall and was about to go to the backyard to find out,

But he was attracted by a wooden door at the back of the main hall.

He carefully opened the door and found a small room of about five or six square meters inside.

Charlie took a brief glance and found that there seemed to be nothing else in the room,

Except a simple wooden chair and a small wooden table less than half a meter wide.

In the room, there is a special aroma that makes people feel refreshed.

Charlie took a closer look and saw a string of bracelets,

Almost the same color as the wooden table placed on the small wooden table.

The bracelet is composed of wooden beads about one centimeter in diameter.

The whole body is dark brown in different shades, very shiny, and exudes a strong woody fragrance.

The bracelet is placed in the middle of the table,

And it looks like someone left it here on purpose.

Charlie stepped forward and picked up the bracelet.

He could feel the warm texture on each bead of the bracelet.

The overall lightness of the bracelet, coupled with the special aroma,

Charlie speculated that it should be agarwood-made.

Maria walked in at this time and asked in surprise:

“Where did the agarwood bracelet in the young master’s hand come from?”

Charlie looked back at her and smiled:

“I found it on this table.”

Maria came up and carefully Asked:

“Master, can you let me take a look?”

Charlie nodded and handed her the agarwood bracelet.

Maria carefully held the bracelet in her hand and examined it, exclaiming:

“This is the best variety of agarwood, Bai Qinan, and it is an out-of-print Hainan Bai Qinan.”

“It is even a unique one that has never been seen among Hainan Bai Qinan...”

“Excellent?” Charlie asked curiously: “Is this thing expensive?”

Maria said: “The best top-grade Bai Qinan bracelet that can be seen on the market, the auction price is about hundreds of thousands per gram,”

“But Compared with this, the quality is still a lot worse.”

“I have never seen such good materials...”

Charlie exclaimed: “You have been drinking tea from the mother of Pucha all the way to this day.”

“That day in Northern Europe. When I met you, your blue and white porcelain was the best of the best.”

“Is there anything good in this world that you haven’t seen?”

Maria slightly covered her red lips with her jade hand and said with a chuckle:

“Young master, you are too high-minded to me.”

“Yes, there are too many people in this world who are crouching tigers, hiding dragons.”

“Almost most of the things in this world that are known to the world are not the best,”

“So it is normal to encounter good things that you have never seen before.”

With that said, she handed the bracelet back to Charlie and said,

“Master, this bracelet should be a gift from them.”

“Please accept it and keep it safe.”

Charlie said, “Maybe it’s for you?”

“No.” Maria smiled sweetly and said, “If it were given to me, they probably wouldn’t be able to afford it.”

Charlie asked curiously, “Why do you say that?”

Maria smiled and said, “You count the bracelet, no more, no less, a total of twenty-eight beads.”

“If I remember correctly, you should have just celebrated your twenty-eighth birthday this year,”

“And you are not yet twenty-nine, right? Isn't that right?”

“They prepared it for the young master? If they were preparing it for me,”

“I will have to wear at least three hundred of them, which is really a waste.”

## Chapter 5740

Charlie was shocked and quickly lowered his head to count the beads on the bracelet.

There were indeed not many. Quite a few, twenty-eight.

Most bracelets actually have nineteen beads.

This is because most people who wear bracelets pursue not only the material, But also the profound meaning. In Buddhism, most beads have nineteen beads, Which have the same meaning. A Buddha head, plus eighteen different dharma. But this bracelet has twenty-eight bracelets in a unique style.

Because there are too many pieces, this bracelet is no longer suitable for wearing on the wrist,

But more suitable for twisting in the hand.

Charlie couldn't help but ask her: "Do you think this represents my age?"

Maria nodded: "Most likely it does."

Charlie asked again: "Maybe it's some kind of coincidence?"

Maria shook her head: "Put it outside, there is a possibility; here, it's impossible."

Charlie asked: "Why do you say that?"

Maria said seriously: "Master, you have to understand that everything here is prepared for you."

"The reason why they invited me in was just because I just happened to come with you."

"If I did not come with the young master, they would definitely meet you directly."

Charlie suddenly felt nervous.

He felt that what Maria said made sense.

However, he didn't understand who the other party was that would pay so much attention to him.

From the moment the nun took the initiative to talk to the two of them at the foot of the mountain,

Charlie had wanted to know who these people were,

And now, this question is getting stronger and stronger.

At this time, Maria suddenly remembered something and said:

"Master, when I just came in, I didn't see anyone entering or leaving this room."

“There are tables, chairs, and this bracelet in this room.”

“I think someone must have been here at that time.”

Charlie nodded: “That must be the mastermind behind them.”

After saying that, Charlie took the bracelet in his hand and twisted it for a moment, and then said:

“I don’t know why they are secretive, but it feels like It is indeed as you said,”

“Not like enemies. As for their background, we can only wait until they show up next time.”

At this point, Charlie looked at Maria and asked her:

“You said since they are just doing this If they don’t want me to move forward,”

“If I leave this door and continue walking deeper into the Shiwan Mountains, will they stop me again?”

Maria asked in shock: “Master... you... are you serious?”

Charlie said: “For now, we are just discussing the feasibility of this plan.”

Maria said tangledly: “Master, in theory, it should be this way,”

“I still do not recommend that you try...”

Charlie looked at the bracelet in his hand and smiled:

“Don’t worry, I just said it casually, not in a disrespectful way.”

After that, he put the bracelet away.

He got up and said to Maria: “Let’s go to the backyard and take a look.”

“If there is nothing unusual, let’s start back to Aurous Hill!”

Maria finally felt relieved and accompanied Charlie to the backyard of Qingzhao’an.

The backyard of this nunnery is not big.

There are only a few tile-roofed houses in total.

It seems that this is where the nuns in the nunnery live.

However, this place has been vacant for a long time,

And it seems that no one has lived in it for a long time.

This also further proved Maria’s guess that the two nuns she met were not real nuns.

Charlie even suspected that Qingzhao Temple had been abandoned for many years,

But they only temporarily opened it this time to stop him.

The two did not find any valuable clues in the backyard,

But they did see a path going down the mountain from the back outside the back door of the backyard.

Thinking about it, they evacuated through this mountain road.

Since more than an hour had passed,

Charlie could not see any clues along this road.

Out of respect for these people, he had no idea of chasing after them to find out.

Looking at the winding road,

Charlie sighed softly and said to Maria: "Let's go back to Aurous Hill."

# Chapter 5741

When the two came down from Qingzhao Temple,

Charlie kept holding the agarwood bracelet in his hand.

He wanted to know the meaning of the bracelet left for him,

But after thinking about it, he still couldn't figure it out.

He decided to believe what Maria said.

The twenty-eight beads on this bracelet represent her current age.

The other party put the twenty-eight beads into the bracelet,

Knowing that Maria would notice something unusual and return to Qingzhao'an to investigate.

After all, what message did they want to convey to him by deliberately leaving this bracelet to him?

In doubt, the two of them went down the mountain and climbed back up the mountain road again.

When they were going up the mountain again, they happened to meet some local old ladies.

They were walking together and slowly walking down the mountain.

Each of them was carrying a basket made of vines,

And there were still some things in the basket.

They had a lot of sesame oil, paper money, and earthen incense.

Seeing this, Maria stepped forward and asked politely:

"Where are you going old ladies?"

One of the old ladies said, "I heard that Qingzhao Temple has reopened."

"So we are going to the Temple to worship Buddha and burn incense."

Maria Asked curiously: "Has Qingzhao Temple been closed for a long time?"

The old lady nodded: "It has not been opened for about ten or twenty years."

"There are fewer and fewer people in the mountains, and there is no incense in the temple."

"All the former nuns have left."

"I heard from the villagers yesterday that a new nun has arrived."

"So we decided to come and pay our respects together."

Maria said quickly: "You guys better not go,"

"The new nun from Qingzhao'an has left already."

"Left again. What?" Several old ladies looked disappointed:

"Why did they leave just so early?"

Maria said: "Maybe they thought there was not much incense here."

Several old ladies were a little slumped,

And they were a little unable to move forward or retreat for a while. Feeling indecisive.

One of the old ladies said: "The nun is gone,"

"But the Buddha statue is still there."

"We have all come here, why not go and burn a few sticks of incense!"

The other old ladies thought that this was indeed the case, so they agreed one after another.

When Maria saw that several people were sincere,

She did not persuade them anymore and warned:

"Then please be safe, we are leaving."

After bidding farewell to several old ladies,

Maria said to Charlie: "It seems that they came to Qingzhao'an at short notice."

"So they probably just arrived yesterday."

Charlie agreed and said: "It's possible that they noticed that we were coming here,"

"Or they noticed that Victoria was coming here,"

"So they came over in advance to prepare."

As he said, Charlie added: "What is certain now is that they know us and Victoria very well,"

"Maybe they are also monitoring us in some way at this moment."

...

At this moment.

On the highway leading from Shiwan Mountain to the outside world,

Three inconspicuous Buick commercial vehicles were driving smoothly on the highway.

These cars all have license plates from Chuncheng,

The capital of southern Yunnan Province,

And belong to a well-known car rental company in the country.

Buick Business is the most well-known ordinary MPV model in China.

It has a large market share and is relatively popular,

So no matter where you see it, it will not be eye-catching.

It is very low-key, and no one will think of riding in this model.

People who own cars are associated with great wealth.

However, these three Buick Business vehicles have nothing to do with Buick except for the fact that they still have Buick logos.

The vehicles have undergone a systematic transformation,

And their power, safety, privacy, and comfort have all undergone qualitative changes.

## Chapter 5742

At this time, in the second Buick business car,

The driver was the young nun who stopped Charlie and Maria at the foot of the mountain before,

And the person sitting in the passenger seat was the elderly master's wife.

Sitting on the second row of seats behind the master was the middle-aged woman.

The bracelet that Charlie was twisting in his hand was the one she left at Qingzhao'an.

At this time, the master looked back at the middle-aged woman and asked respectfully:

"Madam, what are our arrangements next?"

The lady was looking out the window in a trance.

When she heard the question, she said:

"Let's go to Aurous Hill. As before, we will stay at Qixia Temple for the time being."

"You two will also come with me. After arriving at Aurous Hill, don't show your face."

"Okay!" The master nodded lightly and said, "Then I will inform the abbot."

With that said, the master asked again: "By the way, madam,"

"Which girl do you want to meet next?"

"Let me see if you can find an opportunity."

The madam raised her eyebrows and said with a smile:

"Who do you want to meet... I would really like to meet Nanako Ito."

"Among these girls, she is the one who has the most hope of becoming a Taoist."

The master smiled slightly and said, "Then I will try to arrange it."

The madam nodded and chuckled:

"She seems to be studying martial arts in the Champs Elysees?"

"Yes." The master said: "With her, there are Ruoli and Aoxue."

The madam said: "The talents of these two girls cannot be compared with Ito Nanako,"

"Unless there is a great opportunity, there is no chance to enter Taoism."

The master couldn't help but say with some worry:

"Madam, Ito Nanako is Japanese after all, if she really joins Taoism, will there be any risks?"

Madam shook her head and said: " Don't worry, it doesn't matter which country she is from."

"What matters is whether her character is upright and where her heart is."

"If her character is bad and her heart is heretical,"

"What does it matter if she is Chinese?"

After a pause, The madam added: "At present,"

"It seems that this girl's character is impeccable,"

"And her heart is no longer in Japan."

The master's brows widened and she said with a smile:

"Madam is right, she belongs to it. I worry too much."

Madam nodded and asked her: "By the way, how did you feel about Maria when you saw her today?"

The master sighed: "I feel that even if Maria stands in front of me,"

"I can't see any trace of time at all."

"She has lived for more than three hundred years and still looks and feels like a young girl."

"It is really enviable... .."

After saying that, the master's wife added:

"However, she can always give her subordinates a vague and unfathomable feeling."

The lady smiled and said: "Without any cultivation,"

"She was able to escape Victoria for more than three hundred years."

"While being hunted and still able to survive intact in a world of great changes,"

"Maria's mind must be far beyond ordinary people."

"Actually, I have known about her existence for a long time, but like Victoria,"

"I have never been able to find any trace of her."

"Until she was betrayed by servants in Northern Europe,"

"It can be seen that she is smarter than we thought."

The master couldn't help but ask:

"Then will she guess your identity in the future?"

Madam said: " Definitely."

"As long as we have contact with them later, it is just a matter of time."

The master quickly asked: "Madam, are you ready?"

The madam shook her head: "Not yet, so next we will be extra cautious and won't leave any clues."

The master nodded and said, "Madam, we will arrive at the airport in about forty minutes."

"The crew is on standby at any time. What do you think of the route arrangement?"

Madam looked slightly moved and asked: "Where are they?"

The master knew that the lady was asking about Charlie and Maria, so she quickly said:

"Their plane is also in Yongzhou,"

"And they will probably fly directly to Aurous Hill later."

The lady nodded, pondered for a moment, and spoke:

"Then we should be more cautious and fly to the capital first."

"After arriving there, change a plane and then go to Aurous Hill."

"We still cannot take it lightly in front of Maria."

'Contacting her directly this time is tantamount to telling them that we have always observed in secret,"

"And they will only be more cautious in the future."

## Chapter 5743

When Charlie and Maria arrived at Yongzhou Airport,

A private plane just took off from the same Airport and headed for Eastcliff.

Every day, many private jets and business jets from leasing companies fly to Eastcliff, the capital, from provincial capitals.

Therefore, this plane did not attract any special attention.

The Wade family's Gulfstream plane has also been waiting here for a long time.

After Charlie and Maria passed the security check and boarded the plane smoothly,

The captain immediately applied to the tower to take off with Aurous Hill as the destination.

When the plane took off, Charlie was still twisting the bracelet made of agarwood.

After the silence during the takeoff and climb, Charlie suddenly asked Maria:

"Ms. Lin, that monk you saw today? Besides persuading me to turn back,"

"Did she tell you when I can enter the Shiwan Mountains again?"

Maria shook her head and said, "She only said that the Shiwan Mountains are too dangerous and the young master must not go there."

"But she didn't say when the young master can go there again."

"Perhaps, to be on the safe side, the young master will never be able to go there again."

"Why?" Charlie murmured: "She said there is danger there, but no matter how high the risk is, there is always a danger limit."

"Now that I am not strong enough, that place is like a mountain of swords and a sea of fire to me."

"If I improve my strength in the future, it may be like walking on flat ground for me."

Maria said firmly: "Young Master,"

"I feel that in the future, for a long time, don't think about returning to the Shiwan Mountains."

"Instead of wasting your attention on the Shiwan Mountains,"

"You might as well think about how you can find the opportunity to break through and completely open the Niwan Palace."

Charlie asked back: "After the Niwan Palace is opened, can I go back to Shiwan Mountains?"

Maria shook her head: "I feel that even if the Niwan Palace is opened,"

"You can't come back, because you will have only opened the Niwan Palace with force."

"You are qualified to fight Victoria, and the chance of winning is extremely low."

"If you want to return to the Shiwan Mountains, you must at least surpass Victoria first."

In Maria's view, although the monk was fake, what she said, must be true.

Charlie couldn't go to the Shiwan Mountains.

It was most likely that Meng Changsheng had some conspiracy that had been brewing for hundreds of years and was waiting for him.

Perhaps Meng Changsheng was really like the mother of Pu Cha,

Who found another way to avoid the fate of death.

Maybe he was also like the mother of Pu Cha, waiting for a chance to be reborn.

Or maybe, the key to his rebirth lies in Charlie.

However, unlike the Mother of Pucha, the rebirth of the Mother of Pucha required the help of Charlie's Heavenly Thunder,

And after its rebirth, it will also be used by Charlie.

But Meng Changsheng will never be as passive as the mother of Pucha.

He has lived for a thousand years, and he deliberately leaves himself a chance to be reborn.

He will never let himself become a tool or foil for others.

Although the false master was too vague,

Maria speculated that the most likely possibility was that Master Meng Changsheng was looking for an opportunity to turn against the guest and seize Charlie's body, as in the legend.

Thinking back to what Charlie had said before, his father had studied the matter of Shenglongge back then,

But Maria herself only speculated about the existence of Shenglongge,

But did not understand the mystery, so she opened her mouth and said to Charlie:

"Young Master, I believe that the young master and I each have several urgent tasks when we return to Aurous Hill this time."

"I wonder if the master is willing to listen to me to elaborate?"

Charlie said: "Miss Lin, please tell me."

Maria said softly: "Victoria's retreat is temporary,"

"The master's top priority is to find a way to open the Niwan Palace,"

"And my top priority is to find a way to deduce what the meaning of Shenglongge is,"

"And why this word is always entangled with the young master."

"If we can figure out the reason, maybe many things can be solved with a reasonable explanation."

Charlie nodded in agreement, but couldn't help but sigh:

"Opening the Niwan Palace is easy to say, but I don't know how to get started."

"I don't have any good way to improve my cultivation now."

"There are many knowledge points and complicated content in "Nine Mysterious Heavenly Scriptures",

"But there is no truly systematic method of cultivating Taoism."

"Although I have continued to improve my strength through elixir refining,"

"The elixirs have now reached their bottleneck point."

"Although the Cultivation Pill is good, blindly taking it cannot systematically improve my cultivation and strength..."

Maria asked in surprise: "The "Nine Mysterious Heavenly Scripture" is so powerful,"

"But there is no cultivation method in it?"

"Yeah..." Charlie sighed and said: "The "Nine Mysterious Heavenly Scriptures" is more like a primary instruction manual for those who are new to the world of monasticism."

"There are too many things recorded in it, but a large part of it has to do with monasticism."

"It's not that big, but it has a deep relationship with martial arts."

"There are dozens or hundreds of complete martial arts mental methods,"

"But there is no complete cultivation method..."

# Chapter 5744

Maria heard this and couldn't help but said:

"It's like writing all the textbook knowledge and extracurricular knowledge from elementary and middle schools into one book,"

"And then adding some first-year college content."

"For elementary and middle school students, this book is unparalleled,"

"But for college students, It's not very useful."

"Yes." Charlie nodded and continued: "The key is, I only know about the first year of college,"

"And my horizons only reach the first year of college."

"I don't know how many grades there are in the university,"

"Nor do I know What is behind the university education?"

"There may be masters, doctors, academicians,"

"And even Nobel Prize winners behind the university, but I have no idea about these."

Maria murmured: "The person who can leave behind the "Nine Mysterious Heavenly Scriptures", it is definitely not just the first year of college,"

"But he deliberately did not write the content after the first year of college in it."

"It is probably intentional."

"Yes."

Charlie said: "Before encountering Warriors Den, I had always thought that the content in the "Nine Mysterious Heavenly Scriptures" is all about spiritual energy."

"As for opening the Niwan Palace, it only gives a vague general idea,"

"Which makes me feel like opening the Niwan Palace. It was like being able to ascend from the ground,"

"But after the Warriors Den appeared, I gradually understood that opening the Niwan Palace was just the first hurdle in cultivation."

"Just like Victoria, although she had opened the Niwan Palace,"

"She still could not transform herself,"

"Her lifespan has not continued to increase from five hundred years."

"From this alone, we can see that her strength is far behind Meng Changsheng back then."

Maria pondered for a moment and then said:

"It seems that Young Master wants to go further,"

"Then you need to take the initiative to look for other opportunities."

"Opportunities?" Charlie asked her: "You mean, I should go out and see more?"

"That's right." Maria nodded and said calmly:

"I feel that Aurous Hill is just a shoal to the young master."

"Although the young master has overcome the dilemma of the dragon trapped in the shoal,"

"The shoal is still a shoal, and the dragon is still in the shoal."

"However, you are not trapped here, but stayed here voluntarily."

"It must not be a good thing for the young master's path of cultivation."

When Charlie heard this, he couldn't help but think of Joseph.

Jackson, his master, and the story told to him by Mrs. Jiang about the five hundred years before Meng Changsheng began to practice Taoism.

Jackson was never able to break through the darkness,

So he decided to enter the world to look for opportunities.

Meng Changsheng also spent a long time looking for opportunities when his first five hundred years were approaching.

It seems that the bottleneck of cultivation is inevitable for both warriors and monks.

When you are unable to achieve a breakthrough in a fixed environment,

You need to change the environment to find a breakthrough.

At this time, Maria, who was standing by, saw that Charlie was silent for a long time, so she said,

"Master, although I do not have any cultivation,"

"I feel that the logic of finding a breakthrough is very similar to the gold rush in the United States."

Charlie asked curiously: "Why use such a metaphor?"

Maria said: "A gold digger will always be migrating before he finds gold."

"He cannot restrain himself in an unchanging small environment,"

"Because sooner or later, he will know everything about this small environment by heart."

"After he has panned every river and stream in this small environment,"

"And knows that there is no gold in his environment,"

"He must Leave this place and go to a new environment to continue searching."

After saying that, Maria added: "Looking for opportunities, in fact, sometimes it's more like you can only go to a strange environment after all the uncertain factors around you have been gradually determined."

"Look for some new uncertain factors, and then crack them one by one to see if you can get the results you want;"

"It's like the blind boxes in a store have been unpacked,"

"But you haven't found the style you want."

"You can only change to another store and continue to dismantle more until the purpose is complete."

Charlie nodded in agreement and said,

"I met Mrs. Jiang, got the Phoenix Bone Vine, met you, and got that ring."

"They were all opportunities I got after leaving Aurous Hill..."

Maria said: "In this case, the young master should go out and take a look from time to time."

# Chapter 5745

In Charlie's heart, opening Niwan Palace has become his top priority.

Not to mention what kind of savage beast was hiding in the Shiwan Mountains,

Victoria alone already made him feel powerless.

Now, although Victoria has temporarily retreated,

It does not mean that he will not make a comeback in the future.

What's more, she is his sworn enemy.

Even if she never comes to China again, he will seek revenge on her.

Therefore, he must find an opportunity as soon as possible and open Niwan Palace.

So, he said to Maria beside him: "After I settle things in Aurous Hill,"

"I will find opportunities to go out and take a look."

Maria asked: "Does the young master have a general direction?"

Charlie shook his head: "Since we are looking for opportunities,"

"It stands to reason that we should be casual and go wherever we want."

As he spoke, Charlie couldn't help but sigh: "But the more this happens,"

"The less I know where to start. After all, I have a family and a business,"

"And there are many places in Aurous Hill. With a small number of people following, it is impossible to just let go and disappear from the world."

"The only reasonable and feasible plan is to only go to one place at a time,"

"And then return to Aurous Hill to prepare for the next trip."

Maria couldn't help but sigh: "It's just the young master's destiny is too high,"

"And I cannot do divination for the young master."

"Everything can only be decided by the young master himself."

Charlie touched the bracelet in his hand, suddenly his eyes lit up, and he said:

"I want to go to Eastcliff first!"

Maria asked him: "Young Master plans to go to Eastcliff to look for opportunities?"

"Not really," Charlie explained:

"My parents took me to leave Eastcliff in a hurry,"

"And they didn't have time to take many personal belongings with them."

"I want to go to the old house of the Wade family,"

"I will sort out my parents' belongings and see where they have traveled."

"If there is anything I haven't been to, I will go and have a look."

As he said that, Charlie couldn't help but sigh:

"Suddenly I mentioned the need. I was confused when it came to finding opportunities,"

"But after I met my grandfather's family, I realized that my parents had long been involved in the "Nine Mysterious Heavenly Scriptures"."

"If I could follow the path my parents took,"

"Maybe their spirits in heaven would also give me some hints."

Maria nodded in agreement: "Young master's parents must have had very legendary experiences back then."

"If you follow their footsteps, you will definitely gain something."

Charlie said: "Since my parents' accident, I haven't had anything for nearly twenty years."

"I went back to the Wade family's old house again."

"Although I went back to the Wade family's ancestor worship ceremony,"

"I was in a hurry that time and the Front came to kill me."

"I never had the chance to go to the old house to sort out my parents' belongings."

"At that time I never thought about how my parents would be related to cultivation and the "Nine Mysterious Heavenly Scriptures"."

"Now it seems that all of this may have started from them."

"I will go back and take a look, maybe I can find something."

Decades ago, the Wade family had been living in an old house near the imperial city.

It was a large courtyard house.

Although it was hidden in a busy city, it also had a different kind of tranquility.

The Wade family has a family friend, the Gu family,

Whose old home is not far from the imperial city.

When Charlie was young, the two families often visited each other because they lived close to each other.

When Maria heard this, she also felt that Charlie's decision made sense.

Now he didn't know where to go, and his parents' spirits in heaven might be able to guide him.

Thinking back to the old house where he lived in his childhood,

Charlie felt nostalgic in his heart, and he couldn't help but say to Maria with some excitement:

"I'll inform the captain that after I send you to Aurous Hill,"

"I will fly directly to Eastcliff!"

Maria said quickly: "If the young master is in a hurry,"

"You can ask the captain to change the route and fly directly to Eastcliff."

After that, she quickly added:

"If the young master feels that it is inconvenient for me to go with the young master,"

"I can arrive at Eastcliff and then return by myself back to Aurous Hill,"

'The young master has important business, so I should not delay it."

Charlie asked her: "Is Miss Lin anxious to return to Aurous Hill?"

## Chapter 5746

Maria shook her head and said: "I am not in a hurry."

"The main thing that binds me in Aurous Hill is the Mother of Pucha."

"But I watered it before going out,"

"And it rained in Aurous Hill yesterday,"

"So I guess it doesn't need extra care."

Charlie said without thinking: "Then please accompany me to Eastcliff."

When Maria saw Charlie inviting her to go with him,

She felt joyful in her heart, and she quickly said:

"In everything, I will obey the master's instructions!"

Ten minutes later, the plane that Charlie and Maria took was allowed to change its route.

The plane deflected thirty degrees north in the air and flew towards Eastcliff.

Charlie also used the satellite phone on the plane to call Leon, the housekeeper of the Wade family.

The phone was connected, and Leon's voice came:

"Hello, who is this?"

Charlie said, "Butler Tang, it's me."

Leon said respectfully: "Master, I think this call is from the Wade family plane."

"Are you on the plane?"

"Yes." Charlie said, "I'm on my way to Eastcliff."

"I'll land in about two hours. Could you please arrange a vehicle to pick me up at the airport?"

Leon said hurriedly: "Okay, young master,"

"I will arrange a motorcade and pick you up at the airport in person."

"I will also inform the master and others."

Charlie said: "There is no need to mobilize the masses."

"You are the chief steward of the Wade family. Come and pick me up."

"It is too ostentatious, just arrange a car to be parked at the airport for my transportation."

"I want to go to the Wade family's old house,"

"So just let the old man know, and there is no need to notify others."

Leon said without hesitation: "Okay, young master,"

"Let me inform him, will you stay in the old house at night?"

"Or go back to the manor?"

Charlie hummed and said, "Just stay in the old house and prepare two guest rooms."

"I have a friend with me."

Leon said respectfully: "Okay! Master, do you have any other instructions?"

Charlie said: "No, that's all."

Leon said: "Okay, Master, I'll wait for you at the old house."

...

At the same time.

The plane that took off earlier has landed at Eastcliff Airport.

As soon as the wheel touched the ground, the fake monk immediately reported to the beautiful middle-aged woman:

"Madam, their plane changed direction in the air."

"According to the information from the air traffic control,"

"They temporarily changed the route to Eastcliff."

"Flying to Eastcliff?" Madam frowned and murmured,

"Why did they suddenly change the route in the air?"

They asked quickly: "Could it be that we were exposed?"

Madam pondered for a moment, she said solemnly: "We should not be exposed."

"All surveillance on the return journey has been circumvented."

"No one can trace our route from Qingzhao'an to Yongzhou Airport."

As she said, she suddenly remembered something and said:

"I guess they are going to the Wade family's old house!"

After saying that, she quickly asked:

"Is Leon in Eastcliff?"

The fake monk said: "I have not contacted Butler Tang recently."

"Madam, please wait a moment. I will make a follow-up. Let me confirm."

After saying that, she immediately took out her mobile phone and called Leon.

As soon as the phone call came through, Leon's cautious voice came over.

His voice was very low and he asked very respectfully:

"Sister Sun, why did you call me suddenly?"

The fake monk said: "Butler Tang, Madam Let me ask you if you are in Eastcliff at the moment."

"The subordinate is here!"

Leon said hurriedly: "I wonder what Madam's orders are?"

The fake monk said: "Butler Tang, wait a moment."

After saying that, she looked towards the middle-aged woman said,

"Madam, Butler Tang is in Eastcliff at the moment."

The madam nodded and said, "Okay, let's change the itinerary later."

"We won't go to Aurous Hill today."

"We will go to Yonghe Palace as soon as we get off the plane."

"Tell Butler Tang to meet me at Yonghe Palace in one hour."

The fake monk said too respectfully: "I obey!"

After that, she asked Leon on the phone: "Has Butler Tang heard it?"

Leon said with great respect: "I heard it!"

After saying that, Leon paused slightly and lowered his voice, and said:

"Sister Sun, could you please tell Madam that the young master is already on his way to Eastcliff!"

## Chapter 5747

The fake monk was not surprised by Leon's words and said,

"Butler Tang, Madam has already guessed what you said,"

"So she asked you to come to Yonghe Palace for a chat."

"Can you change the time?"

"Yes," Leon said hurriedly:

"The young master is used to keeping a low profile and won't let me pick him up at the airport."

"I just need to wait for him at the old house."

"The old house is very close to Yonghe Palace and I have plenty of time."

"Then. That's fine." The fake monk said casually:

"Then I'll meet you at Yonghe Palace in one hour."

Leon said respectfully: "I obey the orders!"

The fake monk hung up the phone and reported to the lady:

"Madam, Butler Tang said, the young master is going to the old house in the evening."

The middle-aged woman was slightly startled,

And her beautiful eyes with fine lines at the corners of her eyes were slightly misty.

Immediately, she held back her tears and smiled happily:

"Charlie has been away from there for so many years,"

"And it's time to go back and take a look."

"It's just that I, a mother, have been away from him for twenty years,"

"But I still can't meet him."

This middle-aged woman is Charlie's mother, the legendary businesswoman Margaret An.

In the past twenty years, no one except Margaret's close confidants knew that she was still alive in this world.

Not even Charlie, her closest relative, nor anyone in the An family knew that she was still alive.

Seeing that her mood was a little sad, the fake monk quickly comforted her and said,

"Madam, although you have never met the young master for so many years,"

"You have been thinking very hard for him."

"When the time comes in the future,"

"And you meet the young master to explain everything, the young master will definitely not think it's your fault."

Margaret gave a wry smile and murmured:

"After Changying left, I have been looking forward to avenging him and looking forward to Charlie's meeting,"

"But I never thought that everything that Changying and I had worked so hard for would almost come to an end."

"Pushing Charlie into the abyss of eternal destruction, to this day,"

"I don't know whether the efforts of Changying and mine,"

"And everything I have done in the past twenty years, is right or wrong."

The fake monk said with a firm expression:

"Madam, please forgive me for talking too much."

"Although the young master has had a troubled life and many unsatisfactory experiences in the past twenty years,"

"He has been far-sighted and strategizing throughout his life."

"His decisions must have been carefully considered."

"Even if there were some changes that were beyond his expectation,"

"Master Changying's decision back then must be the best way for you and the young master!"

Margaret nodded lightly and said firmly: "You can say that,"

"Changying sacrificed himself to protect Charlie and me,"

"And used himself to build a bridge and pave the way for Charlie."

"Charlie will definitely live up to his expectations."

After saying that, she looked out the window in a daze.

Of the last twenty years, all the previous events flashed through her mind like a slideshow...

At this time, the plane had already taxied to the closed hangar next to the remote stand of Eastcliff Airport.

When the aircraft was only a hundred meters away from the hangar,

The hangar door slowly opened to the left and right sides.

At this time, there were three private jets of the same model parked in the hangar,

As well as several inconspicuous Hongqi H9s.

In the car, a group of staff wearing maintenance uniforms have been waiting here for a long time.

Originally, Margaret was going to complete the change of aircraft here,

And then turn around and fly south to Aurous Hill.

But because Charlie suddenly changed his flight schedule and came to Eastcliff,

After she got off the plane, she got directly into one of the red flag cars.

## Chapter 5748

Then the motorcade immediately drove out of the hangar,

Left the airport through the VIP passage, and went straight to Yonghe Temple.

Yonghe Temple has a long history and is the most popular temple in Eastcliff.

And Margaret has an exclusive courtyard here.

She asked Leon to meet her at Yonghe Palace, referring to this residence.

The ancients said that a small person hides in the wild and a big person hides in the city.

Who would have thought that Margaret's residence in Eastcliff is actually in the temple with the largest number of visitors in the city center.

When Margaret arrived, Leon had already arrived early.

At this moment, he was waiting in the central hall of the courtyard.

Seeing Margaret and the fake monk come in together,

He hurried to the door and said respectfully: "Madam, Sister Sun!"

Margaret nodded slightly, pointed to the chairs in the hall,

And said to him: "Sit down, Leon."

He bowed and said, "Thank you, Madam."

Margaret waved her hand and sat down in the middle hall,

With the fake monk wearing a hat standing next to her.

Although the fake monk was still wearing a hat,

Leon could still see that she had shaved her head and asked in horror:

"Sister Sun, why did you..."

The fake monk smiled slightly and took off the hat.

She stepped down and said: "I played a role as a monk in Shiwan Mountain today."

Leon hurriedly asked: "Sister Sun, have you met the young master?!"

"Does the young master still have an impression of you?"

"Did you make the master suspicious!"

The fake monk shook her head and said,

"Don't worry, I didn't meet the young master directly."

"That's good!" Leon nodded, and respectfully asked Margaret,

"By the way, madam, you haven't seen him for a long time."

"You have returned to Eastcliff."

"In the past, you would never go to a place where the young master was present."

"Why did you come to Eastcliff with the young master coming here today?"

Margaret said lightly: "I asked Sister Sun to stop Charlie at Shiwandashan."

"It turns out that I wanted to stop in Eastcliff and then go to Aurous Hill to do some things,"

"But I didn't expect Charlie to suddenly change his route and come to Eastcliff,"

"So I changed my plan temporarily."

Leon asked with some surprise:

"Madam, have you seen the young master? What's he like now?"

"No." Margaret shook her head and said,

"When Charlie and I were closest, we were only two miles apart,"

"But now he is so powerful that I don't even dare to look at him from a distance."

Leon asked hurriedly: "Madam, don't you plan to meet the young master yet?"

Margaret looked solemn and said firmly: "Now is not the time."

"Victoria tried to exterminate the An family twice some time ago."

"She must have suspected that I was not dead, and wanted to use this to test whether I was still alive."

"They used this to force me to show up if I were still alive."

"If it hadn't been for Charlie's coincidence and secret help on both occasions,"

"I might not have been able to hide anymore."

"I survived both times, and I can't say anything too harsh right now."

Leon asked: "Madam, the young master suddenly changed his mind and came to Eastcliff,"

"And also wanted to go to the old house. Could it be that he has noticed something?"

Margaret shook her head and said: "Probably not."

"I guess Charlie is currently Most likely I am a little confused,"

"So I want to come to Eastcliff and go to my old house to find some guidance."

Leon asked: "Madam, what are your plans to stay in Eastcliff this time?"

Margaret said: "I have no plans, just I have something for you."

"Before Charlie arrives in Eastcliff, help me put it back in the Wade family's old house."

"I will go to Aurous Hill early tomorrow morning."

As she said that, Margaret nodded slightly to the fake monk.

The fake monk immediately took out an old-fashioned 16-page photo album from her handbag and handed the album to Leon.

When Leon got the photo album, he didn't dare to open it directly.

Instead, he asked Margaret: "Madam, do you want me to put this photo album back in the old house?"

"Yes." Margaret nodded and sighed:

"It's been twenty years. It's time for Charlie to gradually know some dusty past events!"

## Chapter 5749

When Charlie and Maria drove from Eastcliff Airport to the Wade family's old house,

Leon was already waiting at the old house with the old man Zhongquan.

Zhongquan was taken over by Leon.

After he left Yonghe Palace, he went to the Wade family manor to take Zhongquan back to his old home.

Zhongquan always wants to find more opportunities to build relationships and enhance feelings with his grandson.

However, although Charlie has become the head of the Wade family,

He has never come to Eastcliff.

As a grandfather, he could see Charlie a few times throughout the year.

Zhongquan was naturally very happy when he heard that Charlie was coming to Eastcliff this time.

Before he arrived at the old house, he had already arranged for the chef to prepare a family dinner for Charlie at the old house.

When Charlie arrived at the old house, Zhongquan and Leon even went to the yard to greet him.

As soon as he saw Charlie get out of the car, he said excitedly:

"Charlie, why did you suddenly come to Eastcliff today?"

Charlie said truthfully: "Grandpa,"

"I came back to the old house to take a look,"

"And I wanted to sort out things left behind by my parents back then."

Zhongquan nodded repeatedly and said without thinking:

"No one has touched your parents' room, it is still the same as before."

At this time, the passenger door opened,

And the face of a woman who looked no more than seventeen or eighteen years old Classic beautiful girl got out of the car,

Maria looked at Zhongquan, and said respectfully:

"Hello, Grandpa, my name is Cathy Lin."

Looking at Maria, Zhongquan looked surprised.

He really didn't expect that Charlie would bring a girl to his home this time.

Moreover, this girl is neither Charlie's wife nor Sara.

What made him even more unexpected was that this girl was so young...

After all, Charlie was twenty-eight or nine years old, about to be thirty.

This girl looked about sixteen or seventeen years old.

The age difference was indeed a bit big.

What puzzled him even more was the identity of this girl.

After all, as Charlie's grandfather,

He knew very well that Charlie had many female confidantes around him,

But Maria was the first one brought to the old house by Charlie.

This made him guess about Maria's identity and the relationship between Charlie and her.

Charlie also saw that Zhongquan was very curious, so he explained:

"Grandpa, Cathy is a sister I met in Aurous Hill.

She happened to have nothing to do recently,

So she came with me to have a look."

"Oh..."

Although Zhongquan heard this but he hadn't figured it out yet,

But he still smiled and said to Maria:

"Miss Lin, just treat this place as your home, don't be polite."

Maria nodded obediently and said, "Thank you, Grandpa."

Zhongquan looked at Maria, and asked tentatively:

"Miss Lin, you look young, are you twenty this year?"

Maria said: "I just turned eighteen this year."

Zhongquan breathed a sigh of relief.

He knows very well that society has two age thresholds for women,

One is fourteen years old, which is the legal threshold,

And the other is eighteen years old, which is the moral threshold.

For ordinary people, as long as the legal threshold is crossed, the matter is legal.

As for the moral threshold, it depends on everyone's moral standards.

But for respectable people, it is not enough to just cross the legal hurdle.

They do cross the moral hurdle.

Otherwise, they will definitely be criticized and reprimanded.

Those well-known rich second generations who have extremely arrogant personalities and change their girlfriends faster than their socks do not dare to wander in the middle ground between these two barriers,

Because if they do, they will definitely be criticized by the public.

Zhongquan was also worried that Maria was under eighteen years old,

And if it was exposed, it would have an impact on Charlie and the Wade family.

However, when Maria said that she was already eighteen years old, he relaxed a lot.

Leon, who had been silent until now, took a step forward and said respectfully:

"Master, I have already prepared the family banquet."

"Please go in and have something to eat with Miss Lin first!"

## Chapter 5750

Zhongquan also came to his senses and said quickly:

"That's right, Charlie, you don't come to Eastcliff."

"I heard that you suddenly came over tonight,"

"So I quickly asked someone to prepare some food and wine."

"You can have two drinks with Grandpa later."

"Okay." Charlie nodded lightly and said,

"Then let's go in and eat and chat."

Returning to the old house where he had lived for several years as a child,

Charlie felt familiar and yet strange.

Although the house is still the same as it was back then,

With no major changes, when he lived here, the house was always bustling with people.

Back then, Charlie's father was very popular in the Wade family.

Although Zhongquan had not officially passed the title of family head to him,

At that time, he was already the actual helmsman of the entire Wade family.

Under his leadership, the Wade family had been making great progress,

And the entire Wade family has become unprecedentedly united because of his leadership.

At that time, both Andrew Wade and Cynthia were willing to be a foil beside Changying,

Because they knew that playing a supporting role next to him would reap far more benefits than playing the leading role themselves.

Therefore, everyone was happy and relaxed, just following Changying and waiting for him to allocate resources.

However, since the death of Changying, the Wade family lost the key to twisting the entire Wade family into one,

And everyone began to have their own thoughts.

Andrew hopes to inherit the position of head of the family as soon as possible,

While Cynthia and several others, they all hope to separate the family as soon as possible and lock in their own interests as soon as possible.

Since then, the Wade family has never been as united and prosperous as it once was.

In recent years, with the completion of the Wade family manor,

The Wade family has basically moved away from this old house,

Leaving only a few servants to take care of the maintenance here, so it seems a bit lonely now.

Several people came to the dining hall, and the table was already filled with sumptuous food and wine.

Zhongquan invited Charlie and Maria to take a seat.

Leon at the side took the initiative to open a bottle of liquor,

Poured a bottle for the grandfather and grandson,

And then stood respectfully behind Zhongquan.

Charlie looked at him and said: "Steward Tang,"

"Please sit down and have something to eat."

Leon said hurriedly: "Thank you, young master."

"You and I haven't seen each other for many days,"

"So we just took this opportunity to have a few more drinks and have a good chat."

"I won't bother you anymore! Besides, I am a servant,"

"And it is against the rules to eat with you and the master at the table."

Charlie waved his hand: "Steward Tang, you don't have to be so reserved."

"I remember when I was a child, my father would often invite you to have a drink with him."

"You saved my life. Thanks to your secret care for the past twenty years,"

"I have been looking for an opportunity to toast you."

"And I think today is a good day."

Leon said with sincerity and fear: "Young Master Don't say that."

"The reason why your subordinates were able to bring you out twenty years ago and hide you in the Aurous Hill Orphanage to grow up was all arranged by your father,"

"The subordinates were only the executive of Young Master's assigned task..."

As he spoke, he sighed with red eyes:

"To this day, the subordinates only dare to say that they are lucky enough to have fulfilled their mission,"

"...that's all..."

Charlie's heart moved and he asked him:

"Steward Tang, You said that it was my father's arrangement."

"When you took me away and placed me in the orphanage?" "

Yes!" Leon blurted out: "Including the entire team in the orphanage,"

"They were all hand-picked and trained by your father."

"One of them, Dean Mr. Zhang, was also one of your father's capable officers back then."

Charlie sighed endlessly:

"It seems that father had expected that one-day Warriors Den would come to his door..."

As he spoke, Charlie pointed at the empty seat next to him, he said to Leon:

"Steward Tang, sit down, and let's have something together. I'll have a drink with you."

Leon still wanted to refuse, but Zhongquan on the side said:

"Leon, there are no outsiders here."

"You don't have to be so reserved,"

"Charlie grew up as you were his secret guardian, you deserve his toast to you."

Leon saw that the old and the young all asked him to take a seat,

So he no longer refused, and respectfully sat next to Charlie.

Charlie smelled a faint smell of incense,

So he looked at Leon and asked casually: "Steward Tang went to the temple today?"

# Chapter 5751

When Charlie asked him if he had gone to the temple,

Leon couldn't help but be surprised.

He didn't know what Charlie meant when he asked him,

Whether he knew his whereabouts, or whether he knew exactly who he was meeting.

However, he was very smart.

Since he was surprised, he did not hide his surprise at all.

Instead, he asked with surprise:

"Master, how do you know?"

Charlie said casually: "You smell like incense."

It suddenly dawned on Leon, and he felt relieved at the same time.

However, he did not dare to show any relief, but said with a smile:

"I went to Yonghe Temple this afternoon."

"I happened to have nothing to do in the afternoon,"

"So I went there to pay my respects."

Charlie nodded without any doubt in his mind.

Leon's status in the Wade family is the highest among all the Wade family members.

For him, the job of housekeeper also has a high degree of freedom.

It is reasonable for him to take time to burn incense and worship Buddha.

As for why he went to burn incense and worship Buddha,

Charlie didn't think much about it.

After all, Chinese people go to temples,

Just like Europeans and Americans go to churches, it is a very common behavior.

So, Charlie turned over this topic directly.

But Maria on the side glanced at Leon a few more times.

She didn't notice much abnormality, but she felt that Leon's appearance and impression were more like a staunch atheist.

It seemed a bit inconsistent for such a person to go to the temple.

What's more, based on her understanding of Buddhism,

Although people who devoutly believe in Tantric Tibetan Buddhism are very devout,

Most of them have a strong utilitarianism, and the vast majority of them seek wealth and power.

This is also the reason why almost all celebrities believe in Tibetan Buddhism.

In Maria's opinion, Leon's appearance did not look like the kind of person with strong utilitarianism,

So this was somewhat inconsistent.

However, Maria was a human being, after all, not a god,

So she just felt strange, but it was difficult to guess more from just a few words.

At this time, Old Zhongquan on the side asked Charlie:

"Charlie, how long do you plan to stay in Eastcliff this time?"

Charlie said truthfully: "I haven't decided yet."

"The fastest thing is tomorrow afternoon."

"I want to go in the morning after a trip to Waderest Mountain to pay homage to my parents."

Zhongquan asked in surprise: "In such a hurry?"

"It's not easy to come here, why not just stay here for a few more days."

Charlie waved his hand: "I can't do it."

"I won't hide it from you. The main reason I came here this time was to see if the things left by my parents could give me some hints or guidance."

"I plan to take some time to gradually walk through the roads they walked when they were young,"

"And record the places they have been to."

Zhongquan nodded slightly and sighed:

"Your parents were always mysterious back then,"

"And I didn't understand many things."

"Since you have the idea of finding out, Grandpa also supports you."

He said that and continued: "Your parents' room and study room have remained as they were twenty years ago."

"I haven't let anyone touch the things inside."

"Leon has always been responsible for maintaining them."

"After dinner later, just go in and look around, if there is anything unclear, just ask Leon."

...

At this moment, Yonghe Palace.

This popular temple is now closed to all visitors.

Margaret stood in the courtyard, smelling the dense scent of incense in the temple,

Looking at the bright moon in the sky, with mixed feelings in his heart.

In her heart, she was only thinking about her son Charlie,

Whom she had not seen for twenty years.

At this moment, the distance between Yonghe Temple and the Wade family's old residence is only one or two kilometers.



## Chapter 5752

From here, it takes ten minutes to drive to the door of the Wade family's old residence.

But even so, Margaret repeatedly told herself that it was not the time to meet her son yet.

Seeing her melancholy alone in the courtyard,

the fake monk came forward and asked respectfully:

"Madam is only a few streets away from the young master at the moment."

"She must really want to see the young master, right?"

Margaret nodded: "My son, We haven't seen each other for twenty years,"

"How can I not think about it."

After saying that, Margaret added: "But thinking about it,"

"Now is not the time to meet Charlie. Besides, today is not the time when Charlie and I are closest."

"During Sara's concert in New York, I was sitting in the stands,"

"And Charlie and Claire were sitting in the box above my head."

"That was the closest Charlie and I were to each other in the past twenty years."

The fake monk couldn't help but sigh:

"This subordinate was really scared that time..."

"Your parents and younger brothers and sisters were all present at the scene."

"A slight mistake could have led to a tragedy..."

Margaret smiled slightly and asked her:

"Were you there at that time?"

"Were you worried that Charlie won't take action?"

The fake monk thought for a moment and nodded:

"I was a little worried at the time because you said that the young master seemed to have some prejudice against your parents,"

"And before that, the young master only gave Miss Gu the elixir that saved your father was not given to her at the same time as the elixir that could cure your father."

"Therefore, this subordinate was afraid that if the young master hesitated for a moment at that time,"

"It might be too late. In that case, we would have to do it in the shortest possible time."

"We had to take action within the time limit,"

"But if the young master had not taken action at the first time,"

"We would have missed the best opportunity,"

"And I am afraid casualties would have been unavoidable."

Margaret said seriously: "Although Changying arranged a safe environment for Charlie back then,"

"But they did not arrange any privileges for him."

"He had struggled in the mud of Aurous Hill for nearly twenty years,"

"So he was sometimes a little perverse and gangster,"

"And the punishment methods for some good people are often much worse than those for the evil ones."

"But I still know his character very well. Regarding this kind of matter, no matter how many misunderstandings and dissatisfaction Charlie has in his heart,"

"He would definitely take action as soon as possible."

As she said that, Margaret smiled slightly, with a pleased look on her face, and said:

"Actually, I like Charlie's gangsterism."

"He has clear love and hate and is rarely restrained by others."

"Changying lacked a bit of gangsterism back then and always used high moral standards to restrain herself,"

"Charlie is different. So what if his grandpa was critically ill?"

"When there is an estrangement between the hearts,"

"At most, you can save his life."

"This is the most benevolent and righteous. No more, it will be gone;" "

Similarly, if it were Changying,"

"He would rather swallow the fly himself than cure my father's disease in one step."

The fake monk said with great approval: "Master Changying pursued to persuade people with virtue,"

"While Master Charlie's behavior is people respect me a foot, I respect others a foot;"

"If someone destroys me a drop, I will take away three measures from them."

Margaret nodded and said: "This is what I admire most about Charlie."

"Changying paid so much for the Wade family back then."

"He is the one who is most qualified and should succeed as the head of the Wade family."

As she said that, Margaret changed the topic and said:

"Unfortunately, my father-in-law felt that he was strong and was unwilling to delegate power to him early,"

"And Changying was not willing to take away the inheritance rights of his eldest brother,"

"So if you don't say anything and I don't say anything,"

"He was never been able to become the head of the Wade family;"

"But Charlie doesn't have so many worries."

"What about his uncle? If he should kneel on Waderest Mountain, he must kneel."

"So what if Cynthia is his aunt? If she should be under house arrest in Aurous Hill City Village, he should not even think about it."

"So what if my father-in-law doesn't want to delegate power?"

"It's not up to him whether he wants it or not."

"Charlie can help himself to the position."

"What Charlie did in this matter won my heart!"

"Who stipulates that the previous head of the family must agree to the new head of the family with another way of thinking?"

"As long as he doesn't dare to object, isn't that enough?"

## Chapter 5753

Margaret was once very worried about the shaping of Charlie's personality, character, and outlook on life as he grew up.

As a mother, she naturally hoped to always give him the best education, the best environment, and the best guidance.

But the actual situation was that she could only watch silently as Charlie grew up with other children in the orphanage.

She could only watch silently as he came out of school after graduating from high school,

And went to work on a construction site, but she could not intervene in any way.

Once upon a time, she was also worried about whether Charlie's views would be distorted in that kind of environment,

Whether he would be too philistine, and whether he would be too commercial.

But fortunately, between Charlie's childhood as a rich young generation and his later status as a poor orphan,

He had found a good middle point for his worldviews.

This not only allowed him to maintain a normal outlook on life and a proper sense of justice,

But also allowed him to avoid his father's overly harsh self-imposed moral standards.

In other words.

To a certain extent, this greatly makes up for Changying's character shortcomings.

Just like the position of the head of the Wade family,

The normal succession process of the head of the family should wait until the old man Zhongquan decides to retire,

And then Zhongquan personally points out who will inherit it.

If other children have objections, they must find a way to make the old man change his mind and become more ruthless.

Maybe he will find a way to get rid of the original heir first, and then take the throne himself.

Today's wealthy families are like this, and so were the princes and generals in ancient times.

But Charlie didn't follow the Wade family's example.  
Not only did he not follow the traditional process,  
He didn't even say hello to the Wade family when helping himself to the position.  
He just told Joseph in an understatement in front of the Wade family,  
That he had just taken over the affairs of the Wade family and was short of  
manpower.

Since Joseph wanted to submit to him, he must be loyal to him.

In one sentence, he not only conquered the entire Cataclysmic Front,  
But also directly told everyone that he was already the head of the Wade family.  
He did not give the Wade family any chance to react or consider,  
And did not even bother to tell them his decision in person.

Just announced the results directly to the third party and let them listen.  
But it was precisely because of such an unruly and uncompromising tough  
approach,

That Charlie took the position of the head of the Wade family without any  
hindrance.

If Zhongquan refused to give up that position,  
He could only stand up obediently and abdicate in favor of others.

When Margaret heard about this from Leon,  
She was so excited that she couldn't sleep all night.

She had never paid attention to the little assets of the Wade family,  
But the position of the head of the Wade family was a knot in her heart.

At that time, everyone knew that her husband was the most suitable for this  
position,

But everyone in the Wade family was pretending to be stupid,  
So that until his death, the husband could not really become the leader of the  
Wade family.

Margaret had been complaining about this matter to her husband.

And this knot in her heart was finally opened easily by Charlie after twenty years,  
Which made her extremely happy.

At the same time, it also made her look forward to Charlie's future even more.

...

At the same time.

The old house of the Wade family.

After Charlie had eaten with the old man,

He couldn't wait to say to the old man and Leon:

“Grandpa, Butler Tang, you eat slowly.”

“I'll go to my parents' room to take a look.”

## Chapter 5754

Leon asked respectfully: "Master, what are you doing?"

"Do you need your subordinates to accompany you?"

"No need." Charlie waved his hands and said,

"Cathy and I will go together, you don't have to worry about us."

Maria also stood up and said politely:

"Grandpa Wade, Butler Tang, excuse me."

After saying that, she followed Charlie out of the restaurant,

And headed to the courtyard where Charlie's parents lived.

Due to the large size of this courtyard,

Charlie's parents had four connected rooms here.

In addition to a main hall and a bedroom,

There was also a study room and Charlie's own room.

In layman's terms, it is a three-bedroom apartment with three bedrooms and one living room.

Charlie has lived here for several years and is quite familiar with the overall layout here.

In addition, there are almost no obvious changes here, so it is easier to distinguish.

When he came to the main hall,

The furniture and furnishings inside were still the same as when his parents took me away.

The picture of living here with his parents when he was young suddenly appeared in Charlie's mind,

And he suddenly had mixed feelings.

Afterward, he took Maria to walk through the rooms first.

In addition to furniture, there were some prepared bedding and pillows in the main hall and bedroom,

But it is obvious that they are new.

As a result, the main hall and bedroom will lose the value of finding clues.

So Charlie concentrated his energy on the study.

The study room converted from a courtyard wing is not very large,

Almost 30 square meters, but it has three walls of bookshelves and a large collection of books.

Even twenty years later, on the bookshelf in the study room,

There are still many books left by Changying and Margaret.

These were the favorites of the couple who could not take away their glasses.

Charlie took a quick look and found that although there were many books in it,

There were only three categories.

One of the categories is finance and management,

Most of which are related experiences written by some world-renowned economists and financial practitioners,

While the other category is history and biographies,

And the third category is the Book of Changes and Gossip.

Charlie didn't know much about it when he was young,

So every time he came to his parents' study to look for books,

He only stared at the interesting history books and basically ignored other books.

And it was only today that he finally realized that his parents had been studying the I Ching Bagua a long time ago.

Maria also took a rough look at the collection of books, and then sighed to Charlie:

“Master, your parents had collected almost the best books about the Yijing and Bagua in the world.”

“Some of them are even from hundreds of years ago and are out of print.”

“It seems that they had very deep involvement and research in the I Ching Bagua and Feng Shui secrets.”

Charlie nodded absently.

At this time, what he was thinking about was how to quickly convert these books.

Go through the whole thing.

So he searched carefully on the bookshelves to see if there were any clues left in these books,

But there were so many books that even if he just took a quick look,

It would be impossible to read them all in a short while.

While flipping through the book, he said to Maria:

“With so many books, it seems that it will take at least a few days to sort them out.”

Maria smiled slightly and said:

“It doesn’t matter how many days it takes, just sort it out slowly.”

“If the young master doesn’t dislike it, I will accompany you to collect them here.”

Charlie said: “Then let’s take a look at these books on the I Ching Bagua first.”

“My parents had both been exposed to Taoism,”

“So I think there should be some books on the I Ching Bagua or some notes they left.”

## Chapter 5755

Maria nodded and asked him: "I also want to share the worries for the master,"

Charlie said: "Since Miss Lin has nothing else, let's help together."

"I'll look around, and if you see something that seems suspicious,"

"Tell me as soon as possible."

"No problem!" Maria agreed happily and readily,

And then took a book from the bookshelf and carefully flipped through the pages in her hand to quickly look for things that might be caught in the book and notes left in the book.

However, after reading many books in succession,

Neither of them found anything that could make their eyes shine.

Just when Charlie didn't know where to start,

Maria suddenly took out a black book from the bookshelf,

Then she opened it took a few glances, and said in surprise:

"Master, there is a photo album here!"

Hearing Maria's words, Charlie subconsciously looked at the black photo album in her hand.

As soon as you look at it, you can tell that this photo album is old.

In the past ten years or so, with the rapid development of smartphones,

Ordinary people have already unconsciously digitized all image data.

Few people buy photo albums of different sizes and thicknesses the photos are sorted into albums.

Charlie didn't know what was in the album, so he took the album from Maria and carefully opened the first page.

The first thing that catches the eye on the first page is a single photo of two young people in front of the Statue of Liberty in the United States.

The man in the photo looks very similar to Charlie,

But his clothing is relatively retro, wearing a knitted sweater and white jeans unique to that era.

This is Charlie's father Changying Wade;

And the woman in the photo looks like she was in her twenties,

Slender, and wearing a light beige long trench coat.

She had a perm of curly hair that was very fashionable at the time and looks no less impressive even now.

The hem of her clothes and hair floated in the wind at the same time,  
Making her look elegant beautiful and rustic.

Maria couldn't help but sigh:

"The young master's mother is really beautiful..."

Charlie nodded slightly, and then asked jokingly:

"Have you never seen my mother before?"

"She seemed to be quite well-known in that era."

Maria shook her head and said: "I once searched for the life of master's mother."

"It is indeed remarkable, and she had unparalleled popularity in the fields of technology, finance, and venture capital twenty or thirty years ago..."

As she spoke, Maria sighed softly and said:

"In fact, the life trajectory mine is exactly the opposite of that of the Young Master's mother."

"After the Young Master's mother became famous in Silicon Valley and the boom of the internet, she seized the opportunity and became what people call a trendsetter."

"However, I happened to retreat after the rise of the internet."

"After that, I was worried that Victoria's ability to obtain information would rapidly improve due to this technology,"

"And I would have almost no contact with the outside world, so it just happened to be staggered."

Charlie nodded in understanding and then opened the second page of the album.

On the second page of the photo album, there is a photo of the two parents.

Still with the Statue of Liberty as the background,

Changying stood tall and straight, and Margaret nestled beside him,

Stretching out her arms to hug him.

Changying also stretched out an arm to hug Margaret.

The four photos on the left and right of this page are all group photos of two people.

The four photos are either decent, playful, or joyous,

But it can be seen that the two people in each photo they have love for each other in their eyes.

Maria saw it and couldn't help but sigh:

"The relationship between the young master's parents must have been very good."

"It's really enviable."

Charlie nodded and said: "These should be photos of their relationship."

"In fact, they had been so affectionate since I can remember."

"They had never had a quarrel, and even when there are disagreements,"

## Chapter 5756

One party will quickly give in before the situation gets out of hand.”

Maria asked curiously: “Then who was usually the first to make concessions?”

Charlie thought for a while and said: “It didn’t seem to be particularly clear who would give in first.”

“The two of them always had a tacit understanding in life and could always judge the other’s persistence on something very well.”

“If they felt that the other is more stubborn on this matter,”

“The more insistent they are, the more one of them would give in, appropriately.”

Maria couldn’t help but sigh: “Two people can balance each other at all times.”

“This kind of relationship is really rare.”

Charlie nodded slightly and turned to the third page of the album.

After opening this page, the photo in the upper right corner on the left is of a small antique shop.

This antique shop is a bit retro.

The shape of the door is somewhat British-style.

In the middle of the circular signboard, the one on the right is written in Chinese characters.

The word “ancient”.

Maria on the side pointed to a number plate next to the store door and said:

“Master, this store is in Queens, New York.”

“Really?” Charlie asked curiously: “How can you tell?”

“I can’t see it at this resolution. I don’t understand the words on it.”

Maria said: “I lived in Queens. The size, color, and hanging position of this number plate are the early style of Queens.”

“I’m not sure if it is still used now.”

“New York...”

Charlie nodded, suddenly I remembered what my uncle told me a few days ago.”

“My parents bought a set of antique books in an antique store in New York.”

“That set of books was the “Preface to the Nine Profound Mysteries Scriptures”.

Combined with the antique store in the photo,

Charlie suddenly remembered something and said to Maria:

“This is probably the antique store where my father bought the “Preface to Nine Profound Mysteries Scriptures”!”

Maria was also surprised and said quickly:

“Preface to Nine Profound Mysteries Scriptures” There must be a certain connection between “The Classic of Nine Mysteries” and “Preface to the Nine Mysterious Scriptures”.”

“The young master accidentally obtained the “Preface to the Nine Mysterious Scriptures” in an antique shop in Aurous Hill.”

“Your father obtained the “Preface to the Nine Mysterious Scriptures” in an antique shop in New York.”

“There must be more than just a coincidence between the two!”

Charlie nodded and said: “The world is so big, it is impossible for two extremely mysterious scriptures to fall into the hands of a father and son respectively,”

“And there space and time separation between them...”

After saying that, Charlie quickly looked down again.

The second photo in the lower left corner is a photo of Charlie’s father, Changying, And a young man who is younger than him, in front of this antique store.

In the photo, the two are holding each other’s backs while giving a thumbs up to the camera with their other hands.

Maria pointed to the people around Charlie’s father and asked Charlie:

“Does the young master know this person?”

He shook his head: “No.”

Maria said: “It seems that he has a good relationship with the young master’s father.”

“Didn’t you see him when you were there?”

“No.” Charlie said firmly: “I have no information about this person in my memory.”

As he said that, Charlie looked at the person’s appearance, suddenly frowned, and said:

“It’s strange... I really haven’t seen this person in the photo when I was a child,”

“At least before my parents and I left Eastcliff.”

“I have definitely never seen such a person, but...”

“But this person looks a little bit familiar,”

“For a while I couldn’t figure out where I had seen him.”

Maria thought for a while and said seriously:

“The familiarity cannot be for no reason.”

“It is possible that the young master has never seen him,”

“But has met his relatives, so he feels that his appearance is familiar.”

“It is also possible that the young master has indeed seen him,”

“But when the young master saw him, his appearance had changed significantly compared to him in the photo,”

“For example, he may have become fatter, bald, mature, or even older.”

Charlie said in agreement: “What you said is indeed possible,”

“But I really can’t think of any clear clues right now.”

Maria pursed her lower lip and asked Charlie:

“Can I take out the photos and take a look?”

“Maybe there is be something written on the back.”

“People in the past took photos and had the habit of writing on the back of the photos as a souvenir.”

Charlie nodded and said, “Okay, take it out.”

Maria carefully pulled out the photo.

Then she glanced at the back of it and said in surprise:

“Master, there is indeed writing on the back!”

Charlie took it over and took a look.

On the back of the white photo paper with the Kodak logo,

There was a line of words with a pen. : “inqueenswithchou, 12.11”

## Chapter 5757

Seeing this line of text, Maria immediately said:

"queens should be the borough of Queens, New York."

"In this case, this photo was indeed taken in Queens."

"As for chou... it is mostly used in the English translation of the Chinese surname 'zhou'."

"It seems that the man in the photo with your father is named Zhou,"

"And he is of Chinese descent. Don't know what his full name is."

"You're right..."

Charlie nodded lightly, while his eyebrows kept frowning.

He murmured: "I feel that this man named Zhou looks familiar,"

"But for a while, I just can't remember where I've seen him before."

Maria hurriedly said: "Master, don't be anxious,"

"It must be because there is indeed a similar face in the young master's memory,"

"But the young master's memory of that person may not be very deep,"

"Or he may have only had a very brief encounter with you,"

"So the young master should not be anxious, think carefully,"

"And you will definitely be able to think of clues."

As she spoke, she asked Charlie:

"In addition to finding this person familiar,"

"Are there any other clues that make you feel strange or familiar?"

Charlie kept rubbing the bridge of his nose and said,

"As for other clues, ...I feel that, judging from this photo,"

"The person named Zhou is not only a little familiar,"

"But familiar in a certain way,"

"But I can't grasp the specific clues in my mind."

Maria said with relief: "Master, don't be anxious."

"Let's sort out everything."

"First, let's talk about the clothes of the master and the man named Zhou."

"Are there any special details?"

Charlie looked at it and said,

"My father should be wearing clothes from the end of the last century."

"The more popular bomber jacket,"

"And the person next to him is wearing an ordinary woolen windbreaker,"

"Which should have been a relatively normal attire in that era..."

Maria asked again: "What about Queens?"

"Your parents have lived in the United States for many years."

"Had they ever talked to you about Queens,"

"Or had they ever taken you to Queens?"

He thought for a moment and replied:

"In my memory, I went to the United States with my parents,"

"Or went back to visit relatives with my mother."

"I lived there on Long Island, apart from Long Island,"

"I usually went to Manhattan more often,"

"And I don't have a clear impression of Queens."

As he spoke, Charlie added: "Even if it is this antique shop,"

"I only learned about it from my uncle a few days ago."

"My parents have never mentioned it to me before..."

At this point, Charlie's expression suddenly froze.

Maria didn't notice Charlie's change,

But stared at the photo carefully and said,

"Maybe we can ask your father's old subordinates to see if they recognize this person?"

After saying that, Maria didn't hear Charlie's response,

So she subconsciously asked: "Master?"

Charlie still didn't respond at this time.

Maria turned to look at him and saw that his face was horrified and his whole body seemed to have been immobilized,

So she quickly asked him: "Master, what's wrong with you?"

Charlie was suddenly awakened by Maria's question.

Immediately, cold sweat began to break out on his forehead and cheeks,

And he said in a rare panic: "I... I think I know why this person looks familiar..."

Maria was surprised and asked quickly: "Young master, do you remember?!"

Yes!" Charlie nodded heavily and explained:

"You said his surname was Zhou, and I felt an inexplicable sense of familiarity,"

"And then there is the antique shop behind them..."

## Chapter 5758

As he spoke, Charlie looked at Maria, her expression still horrified, and said:

"Do you remember, I told you that my father-in-law didn't know how to pretend to understand,"

"So he insisted on going to an antique shop to broaden his horizons,"

"But he accidentally broke someone's jade pot and spring vase?"

Maria said without thinking: "Of course!"

"The young master obtained the "Nine Mysterious Heavenly Scripture" from the remains of the jade pot and spring vase."

"How could I not remember such an important thing!"

Charlie nodded and pointed.

His finger was on the man posing side by side with his father in the photo and murmured:

"He was the manager of the antique store at that time!"

"What?!" Maria's eyes suddenly widened and she asked with a trembling voice:

"Young master, you are saying that this man who took a photo with your father in New York more than 20 years ago was in an antique shop in Aurous Hill more than 20 years later."

"And it was he who gave the jade pot spring bottle containing the "Nine Mysterious Heavenly Scriptures" to your father-in-law?!"

"Yes..." Charlie nodded firmly: "I'm sure!"

"This person's name was Liangyun Zhou,"

"And the antique shop in Aurous Hill is called The Antique Shop,"

"Which was owned by the Song family in Aurous Hill."

"At that time, The Antique Shop was not doing well."

"In the huge Song family industry, it was just an inconspicuous corner,"

"The first business line that Warnia took responsibility for,"

"The current head of the Song family,"

"And Liangyun was the manager of The Antique Shop at the time..."

At this point, Charlie felt that his back was already soaked.

In the past, he felt that he was just lucky enough to get the "Nine Mysterious Heavenly Scriptures".

Until some time ago, he heard from his uncle that his parents had obtained the "Nine Mysterious Sutra Preface".

He speculated that there should be a certain connection between the "Nine Mysterious Sutra Preface" and the "Nine Mysterious Heavenly Sutra",

But there has been no clear evidence;

Now, he suddenly discovered that the manager of The Antique Shop named Liangyun was actually his father's friend more than 20 years ago.

It was from his hands that the jade pot and spring bottle had been handed over to his father-in-law.

At that time, his father-in-law was in the VIP room with him while he was waiting at the door.

Therefore, he did not see with his own eyes what happened inside.

However, from his later account, we can know that at that time,

Liangyun brought the jade pot spring bottle and took out the exquisite packaging box and handed it to his father-in-law.

His father-in-law slipped his hand and dropped the bottle to the ground...

Now it seems that this Liangyun is interspersed, this is definitely not a coincidence.

So, Charlie subconsciously took out his cell phone and immediately called Warnia.

Now, the only way to understand this Liangyun is probably Warnia!

The call was answered quickly.

When she received a call from Charlie in the evening,

Warnia was still a little excited.

She asked happily: "Why did Master Wade call me so late?"

Charlie suppressed the nervousness in his heart and asked:

"Warnia, I would like to ask if the manager of The Antique Shop named Liangyun Zhou still working for the Song family now?"

"No more," Warnia said subconsciously:

"He was very rude to you and your father-in-law at The Antique Shop,"

"I felt that not only was his professional ethics flawed,"

"But his professional quality was also greatly lacking, so I fired him."

"Fired him?"

Charlie hurriedly said Asked: "Then do you know where he went?"

"I don't know..." Warnia said: "After that incident, I never saw him again."

Charlie asked quickly: "What about him? When did he come to work at The Antique Shop?"

Warnia said: "He worked at The Antique Shop for a very short time,"

"More than one month or less than two months in total."

Upon hearing this, Charlie felt even more excited. It was a surprise.

This Liangyun only went to work at The Antique Shop two months before the incident.

All these signs indicate that he seems to have gone to The Antique Shop just for him!

Thinking of this, Charlie quickly asked:

"Warnia, was it you who recruited him at that time?"

"Yes," Warnia said:

"At that time, I was not taken seriously in the Song family,"

"And I was ostracized by my uncle and cousin."

"So my family gave me The Antique Shop business."

"At that time, The Antique Shop could no longer make ends meet,"

"And it was also very chaotic internally."

"The collusion between internal and external employees was very serious,"

"So I fired all the people and replaced them with a new group of people."

"That's when Liangyun came to apply for the job."

## Chapter 5759

Charlie said: "Why did you recruit him at that time?"

Warnia thought for a while and said: "This person gave me a very good feeling at the beginning."

"He had a very good knowledge of Eastern and Western antiques,"

"And he was humble and very knowledgeable. His education and knowledge could be seen during the interview."

"He was very eloquent and could answer all questions fluently."

"In addition, the salary requirements were not outrageous."

"Overall, I felt that the price-performance ratio was very high,"

"So I hired him on the day of the interview."

After saying that, Warnia said with some annoyance:

"It's just that I didn't expect that this person's nature was so bad."

"Not only did he offend your father-in-law, but he even offended you that day."

"He couldn't even see your amazing repair techniques."

"He was careless in recognizing people, and I ask Master Wade to forgive me..."

Charlie thought to himself: "Coming to think of it, the person Warnia mentioned was very knowledgeable about antiques, humble and well-educated,"

"Is Liangyun's true identity, who was so angry because my father-in-law dropped the jade pot and spring bottle, slapped him, and spoke rudely to him,"

"It was actually his disguise..."

At this time, Warnia on the phone asked him: "Master Wade, why did you suddenly remember asking about Liangyun?"

Charlie covered it up and said, "Oh, it's okay, I was just chatting with my friends about the past,"

"And suddenly I felt a little emotional and wanted to ask about this person."

After saying that, Charlie asked again: "By the way, can you find this person's information and give it to me?"

Warnia said: "Let me ask the person in charge of the shop now."

"At the time, the employee information of shop was still on file in shop's computer."

"At the beginning, the industrial and commercial registration was not registered under the Song Group,"

“So the employee information there was not merged into the Song Group’s personnel files,”

“And the management was not as formal.”

Charlie said: “Then it’s hard work for Warnia. Please help me ask and send it to me as soon as possible after you find it.”

“Okay Master Wade!”

Charlie hung up the phone and said to Maria: “I’ll get the information later.”

“Thank you, Miss Lin, and send it to Mr. Sun so that he can Please help check all the file information of this person.”

Maria said without hesitation: “Don’t worry, young master, I will tell him as soon as possible.”

Charlie nodded, and the two anxiously waited for Warnia’s feedback.

Warnia was also very efficient.

A few minutes later, she sent Charlie a Word document.

Charlie opened the document and saw that Liangyun’s nationality column said China and his place of origin said Aurous Hill.

He knew that this information was most likely false.

Continuing to look down, Liangyun’s resume contains no credibility whatsoever.

In his resume, Liangyun has been engaged in antique-related work in China.

He said that he set up a stall to sell antiques in Panjiayuan, Eastcliff more than 20 years ago.

Later, he moved to several places in the country,

Working as an antique dealer and an antique shop owner.

For a long time, he even worked in a factory specializing in the production of low-end toys.

In the entire resume, there is no mention that he has ever left China.

But the photo of his father and him was clearly in Queens, USA.

What’s even more outrageous is that in the language column, Liangyun only wrote Chinese and not English.

As a person who has been abroad, and for someone who has been abroad more than 20 years,

His English is most likely good, and English is also a plus for finding a job.

There is no reason for him not to write it on it.

Unless he doesn't want people to know that he has been abroad at all.

Moreover, in the education column, Liangyun wrote high school.

Judging from the character created by this resume, this is a person who failed the high school entrance examination and then devoted himself to the antique industry.

Although the applicant is not an academic, fortunately, his practical ability is not bad,

And he is good in the antique industry.

After accumulating more than 20 years of experience on the front line, he can be regarded as an experienced expert.

After Charlie read it, he said to Maria with some frustration:

"From what I see in this resume, most of it should be false."

Maria on the side smiled bitterly and said: "I think that of all the words in it, maybe the word "zhou" is real."

"His surname should really be Zhou. After all, the young master's father also wrote "chou" on the back of the photo."

Charlie asked her: "Do you think his name may be true?"

Maria shrugged: "I think that it is impossible to be not true."

As she said that, she pointed to the name on the resume and smiled helplessly:

"Master, his name is Liangyun Zhou! Isn't it good luck? Translated into English, it means good luck!"

"Although the name Liangyun is not uncommon among Chinese names, why is it him?"

"Why is it so? The father-in-law who brought out the jade pot and spring vase to the young master,"

"Indirectly allowed the young master to obtain the "Nine Mysterious Heavenly Scriptures,"

"And indirectly caused the young master to meet the wind and transform the dragon,"

"Is this person called Liang Yun?"

"From my point of view, this name is most likely for the young master..."

Charlie felt that his brain was short-circuited at this moment.

Now it seems that Liangyun is most likely to appear in Aurous Hill because of arrangements,

And the person who arranged him is probably his father who has been dead for twenty years.

This also made Charlie feel an inexplicable tension and oppression.

What happened to his parents back then? Not only did they lead to death, But they even had to plan so far and so much for themselves before the accident happened.

Back then, when something happened to his parents, Leon immediately protected him in the orphanage.

This was the arrangement that his father had made long ago.

But unexpectedly, he actually arranged for this person named Zhou to stay around for nearly twenty years.

Then he went to Aurous Hill to set up a situation for him...

Thinking of this, he picked up the phone again and called Warnia.

He had another question that he urgently needed to confirm with her.

When the call was connected, Warnia asked respectfully on the other side of the phone:

“Master Wade, have you read the information I just sent you? Are there any questions?”

“Yes.”

Charlie said, “No problem, just there is another thing I want to confirm with you.”

Warnia said quickly: “Master Wade, please tell me.”

Charlie said: “It was the jade pot spring bottle that my father-in-law accidentally broke.”

“Do you know how it got to the shop?”

## Chapter 5760

Warnia said thoughtfully: "That jade pot and spring vase..."

"If I remember correctly, it should have been taken back by Manager Zhou."

"Just a month after he joined the company, he helped the shop recover a lot of antiques,"

"But most of them were not outstanding."

"Although they were not eye-catching, ordinary and did not have much profit margin."

"The pot was the best antique he recovered."

Charlie murmured: "It turned out to be him who recovered it..."

"Then did he say where he recovered it from?"

Warnia thought for a while and said: "At that time, he said that a friend of his who used to make antiques changed hands because he was short of money,"

"And the price was indeed quite suitable."

"The market price could be about four to five million, and even got the potential of five to six million,"

"But that person's quote at that time was not even four million."

"I thought it was still a sure profit, so I asked him to take it back."

"I understand."

Charlie said to himself Nodding, this result was not beyond his expectation.

From this point of view, Liangyun went to Aurous Hill specifically and applied for a job at shop.

He also introduced the jade pot spring vase to shop at a low price.

Everything was for the sake of allowing him to obtain the "Nine Mysterious Heavenly Scriptures".

So the question is, was this "Nine Mysterious Heavenly Scriptures" left to him by his father?

If his father had already obtained the "Nine Mysterious Heavenly Scriptures" at that time, why didn't he practice the techniques in it?

Thinking of this, Charlie couldn't help but fall into trouble.

At this time, Warnia on the other end of the phone asked with concern:

“Master Wade, why are you suddenly so interested in that jade pot and spring bottle?”

“Is there any problem with this?”

Charlie said quickly: “No problem. It just suddenly occurred to me. I wanted to find out about this matter.”

After saying that, he said again: “Warnia, I have some other matters here,”

“So I won’t talk to you for now, and we will talk about it after I return to Aurous Hill another day.”

Warnia guessed that Charlie must be trying to verify something,

But seeing that he didn’t want to explain it clearly, she was very sensible and did not ask further questions.

Instead, she said respectfully: “Master Wade, if you have any needs or questions, please feel free to contact me at any time.”

“No problem.”

Charlie thanked her and hung up the phone.

Seeing his confused face, Maria couldn’t help but ask,

“Why is the young master troubled now?”

Charlie said calmly: “I suddenly thought of something again.”

“At that time, the “Nine Mysterious Heavenly Scriptures” seemed to be a book, but in fact, it didn’t look like a book.”

“Moreover, after I picked it up, it was very heavy...”

“Soon it turned into powder, but all the contents were inexplicably printed in my mind...”

After a pause, Charlie continued: “So, does it mean that the “Nine Mysterious Heavenly Scriptures” was just a one-time thing, destined to only one person who would be able to obtain its contents?”

Maria nodded without thinking and said: “That’s what the young master guessed.”

Charlie added: “In that case, when I found it, the pot had just broken,”

“And it had not turned into powder.”

“Does that mean that no one else had read the contents before I found it?”

Maria thought for a while and said: “I feel that It cannot be said that no one has read the content.”

“I feel more like other people who want to see it but can’t.”

After saying that, Maria added: "From the mouth of the young master's uncle, we can know that the young master's father got the "Nineteenth Edition" in the past." "When he read the "Preface to the Mysterious Sutra", he felt as if he had found a treasure and compromised all his sleep and food studying the mysteries."

"Therefore, I think that there was no reason for him to get a deeper understanding of the "Nine Mysterious Scriptures" after studying the "Preface to the Nine Mysterious Scriptures"."

"He chose not to study it, but left it directly to the young master."

Charlie agreed and said: "Yes, according to normal people's thinking. Since it is a book, no matter how good or rare it is, You can also read it first and then pass it on to your son,"

"Or teach the content to your son. There is no reason at all. You don't even read it yourself, you just put it away and wait until more than 20 years later to give it to your son to have a look."

Maria nodded and said: "So, I think that there is only one possibility, that is, although the young master's father obtained the "Nine Mysterious Heavenly Scriptures" at that time,"

"He was unable to obtain the contents. This is like a puzzle he solved. It was an unsolvable puzzle, so he thought of a way to leave it to the young master to solve."

Charlie said: "You mean, there are some restrictions in the "Nine Mysterious Heavenly Scriptures", so that even if my father got it he couldn't see the content, but I'm the only one who can get the content?"

"Yes." Maria said firmly: "I think this must be the case!"

"Maybe the young master has a stronger destiny, so he can be recognized by the "Nine Mysterious Heavenly Scriptures"

Charlie asked back: "They all say that I am the dragon, Then I want to ask, is the dragon born?"

"Of course!" Maria said without thinking: "Fate is determined the moment you are born."

"The young master will naturally be a dragon when he is born."

Charlie asked again: "So since I was born as a dragon, why did my father arrange for me to wait until I was twenty-seven to obtain the "Nine Mysterious Heavenly Scriptures"?"

Maria thought for a while and said: "Didn't the young master say that he was a dragon before?"

"Is it the pattern of the shoal? Thanks to the heirs of the Liangyun for helping you break this dilemma."

"Maybe, just because you were in the process of being trapped in the shoal, your father had been waiting for you to break this dilemma?"

Charlie murmured: "But Liangyun didn't stay in Aurous Hill all the time waiting for me to break the predicament."

"He came to Aurous Hill more than a month ago, which means that when he came to Aurous Hill, he knew what would happen next..."

"But, my father had been dead for twenty years... He was not a fortune teller like you. How could he know twenty years ago that I would be twenty-seven years old and could break through that dilemma?"

Maria couldn't help but frown. She thought for a long time and then said:

"What the young master just said is true. Although I don't mean to offend you, your father would not have been able to calculate things twenty years from now so accurately twenty years ago."

Charlie said again: "Back then when I met Mr. Lai in Yelingshan, he said that he came to Eastcliff to choose the geomantic treasure land of Yelingshan for the Wade family at the request of my grandfather."

"I had also verified this matter with my grandfather and many other parties. When the Wade family was in bad luck, my grandfather really asked for help everywhere,"

"And finally he asked for help from Mr. Lai. Therefore, my ability to break the Dragon Trapped Shoal situation should not have been arranged by my father in advance."

Maria asked, "What about the heirs of Mr. Lai? Have they told the young master when the situation where the dragon trapped the beach came about?"

Charlie thought about it for a moment and said, "According to what he said, it should have been formed when I got married."

Maria was confused and said, "I couldn't understand it even more then."

"The young master is twenty-eight years old this year, from the time of birth until twenty-three you were still a dragon, and were never trapped,"

“So why didn’t Liangyun give the “Nine Mysterious Heavenly Scriptures” to the young master before he was twenty-three?”

Charlie sighed: “Yeah, I can’t figure it out either. And what I can’t understand even more is that Liangyun didn’t show up before I was twenty-three years old.”

“Then I got married and fell into the dilemma of Longquan Shoal.”

“It was only four years later that Mr. Lai broke it out. How could Liangyun be so accurate to seize the opportunity?”

“From the time point Mr. Lai told me, it can be confirmed that after he completely solved the dilemma of Dragon Trapped Shoal, I immediately obtained the “Nine Mysterious Heavenly Scripture”,

“Which means that Liangyun knew when I could get rid of the predicament, so he came to Aurous Hill to prepare a month before I got rid of the predicament.”

Maria exclaimed: “It seems that he has been paying attention to the Wade family and the young master,”

“And had even been paying attention to Mr. Lai’s every move.”

Charlie couldn’t help but sigh: “Now it seems that if you want to know what all this is going on, you must find this Liangyun, he must know everything.”

Maria agreed and said: “Finding him is the key, but there is one more thing.”

“I want the young master to confirm with your father-in-law.”

Charlie asked her: “My father-in-law? What do I need to confirm with him?”

Maria said seriously: “You need to confirm with him how the jade pot spring bottle was broken when you were in the Antique shop.”

Charlie said: “It was his slippery hand that broke it.”

Maria asked back: “But the young master never saw his slippery hand at that time?”

Charlie nodded: “Indeed, this is what he told me.”

Maria said: “Now it seems that the broken jade pot and spring vase was the key for the young master to obtain the “Nine Mysterious Heavenly Scriptures” later.”

“It was like the only fuse to detonate explosives.”

“Therefore, I thought that such an important triggering condition was not necessary.”

“We should place our hope on whether the master’s father-in-law’s hands were slippery.”

“So, how exactly the jade pot spring bottle slip from the hands of your father-in-law and break into pieces? It is also very important.”

“Was it Liangyun’s deliberate trick, or was it the jade pot spring bottle that fell by itself?”

# Chapter 5761

Maria's question immediately shocked Charlie.

Thinking about it carefully, what Maria said makes perfect sense.

If this is really a huge plan that has been planned for more than 20 years,

Then it is impossible for anyone to pin the key points of this plan on an unreliable man.

No one understands how unreliable Jacob is better than Charlie.

Although he is his father-in-law, but being responsible is the last thing for him.

If the key to the success or failure of a major event is placed on him,

Then the matter will most likely be aborted.

So he immediately picked up his cell phone and called his father-in-law.

At this time, Jacob was lying in his room playing with his mobile phone.

Ever since Meiqing and Pollard got together,

His life has lost the fun factor.

In addition, there is his wife at home who irritates him,

So the best way for him to pass the time is to hide in his room.

He was playing with his mobile phone without going anywhere.

He suddenly received a call from Charlie, which surprised him somewhat.

After all, Charlie said that he had been out doing Feng Shui with clients during this period.

He hadn't been home or talked to him for a few days without any contact.

So, he answered the phone and asked curiously:

"Good son-in-law, why did you think of calling me this late at night?"

Charlie quickly said: "Dad, I'm out of town these days."

"I won't be there for a while."

"So I called to ask how you and mom are doing at home."

Jacob said angrily: "What else can I do?"

"She and I have nothing in common, so we just ignore each other's existence."

Charlie smiled and said pretending to be curious:

"By the way, Dad, do you still remember Liangyun Zhou from The Antique Shop?"

"Liangyun Zhou?" Jacob said in surprise:

"I remember, why did you suddenly ask about him?"

Charlie said: "My current client is also very interested in antiques,"

"So we talked about The Antique Shop during the chat."

"I didn't expect that he also knew Liangyun,"

"So I wanted to ask you how you met him."

Jacob muttered unhappily: "I met him at The Antique Shop."

"During that time, I was also more interested in antique calligraphy and painting."

"I always wanted to pick up some things on the antique street,"

"So I always went to The Antique Shop when I had nothing to do."

"Usually, what you see there is a lot of knowledge." "

When Liangyun first came to The Antique Shop as the manager,"

"He was very polite to me. Every time I went to The Antique Shop, he took the initiative to receive me,"

"And he also took the initiative to add me on WeChat."

"He would praise me all day long."

"He wanted to be as flattering as possible."

"Unexpectedly, this ba5tard turned against me faster than turning over the book."

"I accidentally broke the jade pot and spring vase that time,"

"And he actually slapped me in the face and asked his men to beat me up."

"He really turned his back on me!"

Charlie saw that he took the initiative to mention the jade pot and spring vase, so he followed his words and asked:

"By the way, I haven't asked you clearly about the jade pot and spring vase that day."

"You were looking at something in the VIP room,"

"Why did you accidentally drop the jade pot and spring vase?"

"I see as not a careless person in daily life..."

Jacob said angrily: "Of course, I'm not careless."

"It's not like you don't know my financial situation."

"This bitch is in charge of all the money in the family."

"I can not usually afford it. Eight thousand dollars is enough to burn high incense,"

"So no matter what antiques I look at, I am very careful,"

"For fear of being dropped, touched or blackmailed..."

At this point, Jacob said depressingly:

"The jade pot spring vase was crazy that day."

"As soon as I got my hands on it, it slipped directly from my hand as if it had been greased,"

"And fell to the ground with a clatter."

"Maybe it was the one named Zhou who oiled it and handed it to me on purpose."

Charlie wondered: "Dad after the jade pot and spring vase broke,"

"I used egg white to repair it. I remember that it didn't seem to be oiled,"

"And I remember its surface was not very smooth,"

"Because it is an artifact from the Tang Dynasty,"

"So its glaze was relatively rough and had a certain frosted feel when held in the hand."

"This kind of thing has a strong grip, so how could it slip from the hand?"

"This..." Jacob hesitated on the other end of the phone and couldn't explain why.

Charlie guided him and said: "Dad, that matter has been successfully resolved,"

"So you don't need to feel any psychological burden."

"We are just catching here. I am just curious."

"You can just tell me what the situation was at that time."

## Chapter 5762

Jacob thought in his mind: "Charlie is right."

"Although I was the one who caused a big trouble and got slapped,"

"Fortunately Charlie solved the matter satisfactorily on the spot."

"He even got a praise from Warnia praised the restored jade pot and said that its value has been greatly improved,"

"So there is no need for me to treat it as a burden."

Thinking of this, he sighed and said, "Good son-in-law,"

"It's not that Dad doesn't want to be honest with you,"

"I was afraid that you wouldn't believe me if I told you the truth,"

"And instead thought I was talking nonsense."

As soon as Charlie heard this, he knew that there was a hidden secret that he didn't know about,

So he quickly said: "Oh Dad, aren't we just chatting?"

"Even if you tell me that the bottle jumped out of your hand, I will believe it."

"I guess..." Jacob slapped his thigh on the other end of the phone and blurted out:

"I'll tell you, you really don't believe me."

"The situation at that time was very different from what you just said."

"That stupid bottle looked like someone had installed a vibration motor in it."

"As soon as I fcking picked it up, there was a shock in my hand,"

"And just that one shock made both of my hands numb."

"Then I couldn't hold it anymore and threw it there..."

Speaking of this, Jacob said again: "I just followed what Liangyun said,"

"I said there must be something wrong with this thing as if I had a seizure,"

"But Liangyun said that I was deliberately messing around,"

"So I made up such an unreliable excuse... When I saw this, I couldn't argue with it."

"And then I thought about running away quickly and asking you to help me take the blame."

As soon as he finished speaking, Jacob quickly defended himself:

"Good son-in-law, please don't misunderstand me. I didn't want you to take the blame for me at that time."

"I wanted you to help me with it first, and I would have quickly found a way to find money to redeem you,"

"But I didn't expect you to be so capable and just repair it on the spot."

Charlie did not take his explanation seriously, but asked curiously:

"Dad, you said that the jade pot suddenly vibrated in your hand."

"What happened specifically? It was Liangyun who personally took the jade pot and handed it to you?"

"No." Jacob said: "The situation at that time was that the bastard named Zhou directly opened the packaging box containing the jade pot spring bottle,"

"And then gave me a pair of white gloves. , I was asked to take out the bottle and check it."

"I didn't think much at the time, so I reached out and took it out."

"I took it out and was about to take a photo and post it on WeChat."

"Unexpectedly, suddenly it vibrated in my hand. Shocked, it just fell."

As he said that, Jacob cursed and said: "Now that I think about it,"

"I always feel that this is most likely the trap that the person named Zhou buried for me."

"Maybe the vibration of the bottle was also caused by him."

Charlie suppressed his surprise for the time being, and said to Jacob with a smile:

"Okay, dad, it's been so long, we have nothing to lose,"

"So don't feel bad about it."

After that, he said again: "Okay. Dad, I have something else to do here, so I won't bother you anymore."

Jacob hurriedly asked, "Good son-in-law, when will you come back?"

"I'm almost bored to death when you're not at home."

Charlie said, "It should be soon. It's just for these two days."

"Okay." Jacob said, "When you come back, we will find a place to hang out and drink beer."

"Okay."

Charlie agreed and talked with him on the phone. Jacob said goodbye.

After hanging up the phone, he asked Maria in front of him: "Ms. Lin, what do you think?"

Maria said: "I think the young master's father-in-law is not lying,"

"And what he said is consistent with my guess."

With that, Maria added: "I feel that the young master's father may have been preparing for the young master to obtain the "Nine Mysterious Heavenly Scriptures" more than 20 years ago."

"It can also be seen from the young master's father-in-law's statement that the jade pot spring vase broke by itself."

"Yes, it is very possible that the vibration he mentioned comes from the "Nine Mysterious Heavenly Scriptures" itself;"

"So I speculate that it is not that whoever gets the jade pot and spring vase can get the "Nine Mysterious Heavenly Scriptures","

"But that this person must meet the requirements of the "Nine Mysterious Heavenly Scriptures" and meet the requirements to open the "Nine Mysterious Heavenly Scriptures"

"Only if he is qualified, the "Nine Mysterious Heavenly Scriptures" will take the initiative;"

"The young master just happened to escape from the trap at that time and met the requirements for opening the "Nine Mysterious Heavenly Scriptures", "

"So the young master's father-in-law took the jade pot spring in the VIP room of The Antique Shop."

"When the bottle was taken out, the "Nine Mysterious Heavenly Scriptures" inside sensed the young master, so it broke free from the hands of the young master's father-in-law,"

"Paving the way for the young master to get it."

Charlie sighed: "What you said makes sense. Just like the ring you gave me when I first approached you, it would vibrate inexplicably in my pocket,"

"But I didn't know the reason for its vibration at the time,"

"So when my father-in-law said When the jade pot and spring bottle vibrated in his hand, I had no doubt at all."

Maria couldn't help but sigh: "In this way, everything that the young master has today is definitely not due to luck, it is all destined."

Charlie said: "It can't be regarded as fate. After all, it seems now that it is probably the path paved for me by my father."

Maria shook her head and said: "What your father has done for you is important, but it is not what you get from "Nine Years"."

"The only reason is that perhaps the only person in this world who can trigger the "Nine Mysterious Sky Sutra" is Young Master."

"Even without your father's arrangement, Young Master will definitely have a crossing with that jade pot at a certain time."

As she spoke, Maria said with emotion: "It would be great if we could find this Liangyun and ask him face to face."

Charlie said firmly: "Look! We must find him!"

"I plan to find him in the near future. I will go to the United States first and find this antique shop!"

Maria reminded: "Before the young master goes to the United States,"

"Do you want to have a good chat with Butler Tang?"

"He was arranged by the young master's father,"

"And the same goes for Liangyun, so maybe they know each other!"

## Chapter 5763

Charlie knows that Leon was once his father's confidant.

His father must have made very detailed arrangements back then.

Although he has been there for so many years in the Wade family,

But in fact, more energy is spent on completing the tasks assigned to him by his father back then.

Thinking that Liangyun was also part of his father's arrangement,

It was estimated that Leon must have heard about him.

So, Charlie said to Maria: "I haven't asked Butler Tang too many details before,"

"And it seems that I have to ask him for details today."

At this time, Charlie was thinking about how to find out what happened back then.

Everything that happened and the arrangements left by his father,

Even if it was a psychological suggestion to Leon, he must ask everything that Leon knew.

Thinking of this, he said to Maria: "I will go find Butler Tang now."

Maria nodded and asked him: "Master, can I come with you?"

Charlie said without hesitation: "Of course!"

After that, he together with Maria walked out of his parent's room,

Hoping to find Leon and find out what happened.

When they came to the main hall, the old man Zhongquan was sitting here drinking tea alone.

Seeing Charlie come out, he asked curiously:

"Charlie, how are you sorting out your parents' belongings?"

"Still sorting them out," Charlie replied, and asked him again:

"Grandpa, where is Butler Tang?"

Zhongquan said: "He just said that he had something to do temporarily,"

"And he had to go and take care of it first. Are you looking for him?"

"Yes." Charlie nodded and said,

"I'll give him a call if he's not there."

After that, he took out his cell phone and called Leon.

But what Charlie never expected was that the operator's prompt tone came from the other end of the phone:

"Sorry, the number you dialed has been turned off..."

In Charlie's impression, Leon's mobile phone had never been off.

This is his basic professional quality as a great butler.

At this juncture, he suddenly left and his cell phone was turned off abnormally,

Which made Charlie smell something abnormal.

However, he did not tell Zhongquan, but said to him:

"Grandpa, I will go back to Aurous Hill tomorrow morning."

"When you see Butler Tang, tell him that I have something to do with him and ask him to call me back."

Zhongquan nodded slightly and asked Charlie:

"Did you call him just now and didn't get through?"

Charlie nodded and said, "It's turned off. Maybe the phone is out of battery."

"It shouldn't be..." Zhongquan frowned and said,

"These years, I don't remember when Leon's cell phone ran out of battery."

Charlie smiled: "There are always special circumstances in everything."

"Grandpa, you should rest early."

Zhongquan said: "Oh, by the way, before Leon left, he said the guest room has been tidied up."

"If you are tired, go to bed early. There are no servants arranged in the old house today."

"If you need anything, please feel free to tell me."

Charlie agreed with a smile, then gave Maria a wink.

The two returned to the previous study room.

As soon as she entered the study, Maria couldn't help but say:

"Master, Butler Tang's cell phone suddenly turned off."

"Did he guess in advance that you would definitely ask him for questions?"

"It's possible." Charlie sighed and said:

"He suddenly left without saying goodbye."

"Why do I suddenly feel that it would be difficult to see him again in the future?"

"He is a smart man and knows that he can hide for a while but not for a lifetime,"

"So it is impossible for him to turn off his mobile phone tonight and act as if nothing happened tomorrow,"

"As if everything is gone. Return to the Wade family as if it never happened,"

"Unless he has already planned to never show up again after leaving this time."

Maria was surprised and said: "Now that things have happened,"

"What else can Butler Tang not tell the young master about?"

"Hasn't he been fulfilling the tasks assigned to him by the young master's father for so many years?"

"Why did he suddenly leave without saying goodbye at this time?"

"Does he know that the young master will ask him after seeing these photos?"

# Chapter 5764

Charlie shook his head: "I don't know what he thinks,"

"But based on my understanding of him, he must be loyal to the Wade family."

"Maybe he left without saying goodbye. He has his own reasons,"

"Or maybe this is part of my father's arrangement back then."

Maria said: "Young master is proficient in spiritual energy,"

"And there are many ways to make people reveal their deepest secrets."

"When Butler Tang leaves at this time,"

"I think he must be worried that the young master will use spiritual energy to force him to reveal more secrets."

Charlie sighed: "Forget it, he must have his reasons and difficulties for doing this."

"I believe he will not do anything to harm the Wade family."

"So since he has difficulties, I must respect it."

"There are some things that he doesn't want to say now,"

"So let's wait until he is willing to talk about it."

Charlie returned to the photo album again and continued.

Then he looked down. In the photos that follow, Charlie's parents appear frequently.

They put on mountaineering expedition equipment and went to southern Sichuan together,

To the place where Meng Changsheng first practiced,

And then to Myanmar, Bangladesh, and India.

Finally, they returned to China from India and went to Shiwan Mountain.

Shunan and Shiwan mountains are both Meng Changsheng's training places.

There is an additional route from Myanmar all the way west to India.

Charlie speculates that this line should be walked by Meng Changsheng,

When he left Shunan to look for opportunities.

After getting the opportunity and having a life span of 500 years,

Meng Changsheng returned to China and retreated to Shiwan Mountain.

Finally, he broke through the shackles of 500 years and extended his life span to 1,000 years.

Maria on the side couldn't help but marvel:

"I didn't expect that the young master's parents actually sorted out all the routes that the master took back then!"

Charlie nodded and said: "It is probably the work of the "Nine Mysterious Sutra Preface."

Maria asked him: "After the young master goes to the United States this time,"

"Do you plan to take the route from Myanmar to India?"

Charlie said: "I have this idea initially, but I still have to take it one step at a time,"

"And first look at the route to the United States."

"See if we can find any clues about Liangyun?"

Maria said seriously: "The route taken by Master Shigong was also traveled by me back then."

"Although the specific routes may be different,"

"I have been to these countries and have some foundations, Master."

"If you plan to go there, I can help the young master."

"Okay." Charlie nodded and said: "For specific matters,"

"Miss Lin will wait for me to come back from the United States,"

"And the two of us will discuss it in the long term."

At this moment.

Yonghe Palace.

Leon, dressed in black was standing respectfully in front of Margaret.

Margaret said to him, "Leon, Charlie just called your number."

Leon sighed and said, "If I leave without saying goodbye this time,"

"The young master will definitely blame me..."

"No." Margaret said seriously: "Charlie has an overall view of the situation."

"He knows that there must be a reason for you to leave without saying goodbye."

"Besides, I don't want you to disappear in front of him forever."

"It's just that it's better not to see him again in the near future."

"Charlie has a way to make you tell everything about everything over the years,"

"But I can't let him know that I'm still alive for the time being,"

"So the only way is for you not to have any contact with him first."

"When the time is right, we will meet him again."

Leon, a bit confused, asked respectfully: "Madam, what should I do next?"

Margaret smiled and said: "Leon, you don't have to do anything next,"

"I will arrange it. The boat is ready,"

"And I will send you away from China tonight without leaving any trace."

"You have worked hard for me over the years."

"In the future, you can relax on the island of Tahiti and come back when the time is right."



## Chapter 5765

Late at night, a cargo ship set sail from the Bohai Bay,  
Carrying Leon to Tahiti in the South Pacific.

Leon stood at the stern of the ship, looking at Jincheng Port getting further and further away in the night, with mixed feelings in his heart.

Although he is the confidant of Charlie's father, twenty years ago, Changying gave him two tasks.

One was to protect Charlie's safety after something happened to him,  
The other was to obey the security plan in everything and follow Margaret's instructions.

In these years, although Leon has been working as a housekeeper in the Wade family,

In fact, in everything he was following Margaret's instructions.

For more than ten years before, even Zhongquan did not know whether his grandson Charlie was alive or dead.

This is because, before Changying's accident, he did not arrange when Leon would inform Zhongquan of Charlie's news,

And Margaret controlled everything behind the scenes.

It was only when Margaret felt that the time was right that she asked Leon to confess Charlie's situation to Zhongquan.

Zhongquan felt that he was unworthy of his son and daughter-in-law.

In addition, his grandson was ill-fated.

In order to make up for Charlie, he bought the Emgrand Group.

And gave Leon a 10 billion black card to deliver it to Charlie,

And then everything that happened next is known to all.

Although Leon was reluctant to leave Eastcliff suddenly,

He also knew that leaving temporarily was the best way at the moment.

The only thing that made him feel ashamed was leaving Charlie without saying goodbye.

At this moment, Charlie was lying alone in the guest room of the Wade family's old house, tossing and turning.

Leon's leaving without saying goodbye made him want to understand something.

Leon is not working for his grandfather, nor is he working for his father.  
If Leon was working for his father, he would not leave today.  
On the contrary, he will help himself figure out who and where this Liangyun is.  
After all, Liangyun is most likely his father's friend,  
And Leon is his father's old subordinate.  
There is no need for the two to hide things from each other.  
The only conclusion is that Leon was actually working for a third person he didn't know about.

That person didn't want him to know his existence through Leon,  
So he made Leon disappear suddenly, leaving him with nowhere to check or ask questions.

What puzzled Charlie was who this third person was.  
Fortunately, there are various signs that this third person is definitely not an enemy,  
Which makes Charlie feel a little relieved despite his doubts.

...

Early the next morning.

Charlie left the guest room with the photo album and came to the main hall.

Zhongquan was already waiting here.

When he saw Charlie coming out, he said,

"Charlie, Miss Lin asked me to tell you that she went out to buy some breakfast and will be back soon."

Charlie asked in surprise: "Did she go by herself?"

Zhongquan nodded and said: "Leon has been unable to contact me,"

"And there is no servant left at the old house."

"I said I would go out, but she went out before me."

Charlie nodded slightly, still a little worried in his heart.

After all, Victoria had always wanted to catch Maria,

And Maria didn't have a bodyguard around her.

Her going out alone made him feel a little uneasy.

Just as he was thinking about it, Maria had opened the door and walked in,

Carrying many bags with breakfast in her hands.

When she saw Charlie, she smiled and said: "Young Master, you woke up, come and have breakfast."

“I bought a lot of Eastcliff special breakfast.”

After saying that, she quickly said to Zhongquan:

“Grandpa, let’s have some too!”

## Chapter 5766

Zhongquan nodded lightly and said with a smile:

“Thank you for your hard work, Miss Lin.”

After that, he asked Charlie in a low voice:

“Charlie, why does Miss Lin call you Young Master?”

Charlie thought for a while and said with a smile:

“She likes ancient culture.”

Zhongquan shook his head and said with a smile:

“I am old and don’t understand these young people’s likings.”

As he spoke, he lowered his voice and said to Charlie:

“But Miss Lin is really very ladylike, but she is a little younger.”

“Otherwise, she is really suitable for you.”

“Yes. she is really young...”

Charlie echoed with a smile, thinking to himself:

“If you know that Maria is over 300 years old, you would probably faint from fear.”

Then, he and Zhongquan came to the dining room together.

Maria was taking out the breakfast she bought one by one,

While Charlie handed the photo album in his hand to Zhongquan and asked him:

“Grandpa, do you have any impressions of this photo album before?”

Zhongquan frowned: “Where did it come from?”

Charlie said: “It’s in my parents’ old study room.”

“It shouldn’t be...” Zhongquan murmured: “I had tidied up your parents’ study room countless times,”

“And there are several items in it. I know everything about those items,”

“And I have never seen any photo albums in it!”

Charlie pointed at the photo album and asked him:

“Don’t you have any impression of this photo album?”

Zhongquan looked at the photo album handed over by Charlie, shook his head, and said:

“This is the first time I’ve seen it,”

“And I can be sure that this thing was definitely not in your parents’ study before.”

Charlie suddenly felt a little confused.

Twenty years after his parents passed away, the old man has always kept the old house in its current state.

He should know everything in this old house.

If he said he had no impression of the photo album,

It would mean that the photo album was taken over later.

Thinking of Leon, Charlie speculated that this was most likely what Leon brought yesterday.

It seemed that Leon knew what he was looking for,

So he left the clues here in advance so that he could discover them.

This also made Charlie more sure of his guess last night,

That there must be someone else who Leon really worked for.

He even felt that the person behind this was probably the same person as the person behind the two nuns at Qingzhao Temple yesterday.

Thinking of this, Charlie was already full of expectations for solving this mystery.

Immediately, he looked at Zhongquan in front of him and said,

“Grandpa, open it and see if the photos inside look familiar.”

Zhongquan nodded slightly, opened the album in confusion,

And after looking through it carefully, he said to Charlie:

“I have never seen these photos before.”

Charlie pointed to the photo of Liangyun and his father and asked:

“Grandpa, do you have any impression of this person next to father?”

Zhongquan stared at Liangyun. After looking at it for a long time, he shook his head and said:

“I don’t have any impression, and I have never heard of Changying talking about him.”

“I think this photo should have been taken in the United States.”

“Could it be his friend in the United States?”

Charlie really didn’t recognize the old man when he saw it.

Then nodded slightly and said: “It should be.”

Zhongquan suddenly remembered something at this time and reminded Charlie:

“By the way, Charlie, I remember that you brought Hogan back from the United States some time ago.

He and your father had a good relationship before his death.

And he has also lived in the United States for a long time, I think you can ask him.”  
Charlie’s eyes suddenly lit up. Previously, he asked Hogan to spend more time with his family in Hong Kong and wait for his call,  
But in order to let Hogan spend more time with his family,  
Charlie never asked him to come to Aurous Hill.  
At the critical moment, he didn’t even think of him!  
So Charlie immediately said: “Grandpa, you are right.”  
“I will take the photo and send it to Uncle Zhong and ask him if he recognizes it.”

## Chapter 5767

Charlie sent the photo to Hogan on WeChat, and then attached a voice message:

“Uncle, please help me take a look.”

“Do you know the person next to my father?”

Hogan quickly sent him a voice message back: “Master, I have seen the man in the photo before.”

“His English name is Peter, Peter Chou.”

“However, I am not very familiar with him.”

“I only know that he was a Chinese antique dealer and had a close relationship with your father. .”

As soon as Charlie heard that Hogan said he knew this person,

He immediately called him.

As soon as the call came through, he quickly asked: “Uncle,”

“Could you please introduce this Peter Zhou to me in detail?”

Hogan said: “Peter Zhou’s family has been engaged in the antique business overseas.”

“The main business is concentrated in Europe and the United States.”

“In addition to the United States, it is the United Kingdom and France.”

“His family is somewhat famous in the European and American antique industry.”

After that, Hogan added: “The photo you sent is of Peter Zhou’s store in New York.”

“It is said that this store is the first store opened by the Zhou family,”

“So the store is quite small and inconspicuous.”

Charlie asked him: “Uncle, when was the last time you saw Peter Zhou?”

Hogan said: “It must have been a long time.”

“When I opened the roast goose restaurant in Chinatown,”

“He came to visit a few times, but then he seemed to be no longer in New York.”

“So there was no contact.”

After saying that, Hogan asked curiously: “Master, are you planning to find him?”

Charlie said calmly: “I plan to go to New York and check out this antique store first.”

“It would be great if we could find Peter Zhou.”

Hogan said without thinking: “Master, let me go with you.”

“After all, I am familiar with New York, and I have met Peter several times.”

Charlie asked him: "Is it convenient for you in terms of time?"

"Convenient, totally convenient," Hogan said quickly:

"I should come to Aurous Hill to report to the young master."

"I have been with my family these days, and everything at home has been settled. It's ready."

Charlie thought for a moment and said, "That's good. When can you leave uncle?"

Hogan said, "I can do it anytime, just today."

"I'll check the air tickets now."

Charlie smiled and said, "Uncle doesn't have to."

"If it's such a troublesome thing, I'll ask Gerard to arrange a private plane for you to fly to Aurous Hill."

"We'll meet in Aurous Hill then."

Hogan coughed twice and said awkwardly:

"Master, the house we live in now and all the expenses are paid by Mr. Liu."

"According to the arrangement, I will go to Aurous Hill alone,"

"Will just buy a ticket and come, so don't bother Mr. Liu."

Charlie smiled slightly and said seriously: "Uncle, Gerard owes you these,"

"You don't have to be polite to him. Besides, I know Gerard very well."

"He is a car that is parked on an uphill slope and the handbrake is always on."

"Not only can this handbrake not be loosened for a moment, but it also needs to be inspected every now and then."

"If there is even the slightest sign of slackening, it must be repaired."

"Tighten it, otherwise as long as you give him the slightest chance, he will definitely slide back."

Hogan said with a smile: "I think... I think he has done enough..."

Charlie said firmly: "Uncle, I will arrange this matter, so you don't have to worry about it."

Seeing this, Hogan had no choice but to say: "Then I will listen to the young master."

Charlie said: "I am still in Eastcliff, I will set off back to Aurous Hill later."

"I still have some things to do in Aurous Hill."

"I am expected to take off from Aurous Hill to New York tonight."

"Uncle, don't worry. Just pack your things and settle down at home."

“Just go to the airport and fly to Aurous Hill in the evening.”

“Let’s meet directly at the airport.”

“Okay, young master!”

Hogan said simply: “Let’s meet in the evening.”

## Chapter 5768

After making an agreement with Hogan, Charlie called Gerard directly.

On the phone, Charlie asked him to arrange a private plane to take Hogan to Aurous Hill at nine o'clock tonight,

And also asked him to arrange a motorcade to take him to the airport from Hogan's home.

Although Gerard was not happy, he did not dare to refute it at all,

So he could only agree with a smile.

Afterward, Charlie took Maria to say goodbye to the old man.

On the plane, Maria asked Charlie: "Young master is going to New York tonight,"

"And you can only stay in Aurous Hill for more than ten hours."

"I wonder if it's a bit rushed?"

Charlie shook his head and said: "There aren't many things to deal with when we return to Aurous Hill."

"Mainly I want to meet my grandparents and their family,"

"Tell them about the situation in the past few days,"

"See if they can think of any useful information,"

"And also say hello to my father-in-law and mother-in-law, and then we can set off."

Maria nodded and said softly: "I almost forgot, the young master's wife happens to be in the United States as well."

"Yes." Charlie nodded and said: "I asked Miss Fei from the Fei family to invite her to the United States."

"So she is also in New York now."

After saying that, Charlie added: "However,"

"I don't plan to tell her about my trip to New York this time."

Maria asked curiously: "Why don't you plan to tell her, Master?"

"Isn't it nice for husband and wife to reunite?"

Charlie said: "When I go to the United States this time,"

"In addition to looking up Peter Zhou, I also want to sort out the clues my parents got from the "Nine Mysteries Sutra Preface" again."

“I don’t know if Warriors Den knows about the “Preface to the Nine Mysteries Sutra”.”

“If so, I don’t know how much they know.”

“So this trip to the United States is still a bit sensitive and dangerous,”

“So I won’t go to see her yet. Just to avoid trouble.”

Maria nodded slightly with understanding and said:

“Now it seems that the various routes in New York are indeed complicated.”

“In addition, something happened to your grandparents’ family just now,”

“And everyone in the An family is not in the United States at present.”

“Your uncle is alone in New York, and I think the Warriors Den must have a lot of spies in New York.”

“Young master, you must be more careful when you go this time.”

Charlie smacked his lips and said,

“That uncle of mine will also be a big trouble in the future.”

“Yes.” Maria said in agreement: “I think that he and your grandma’s family now have some tacit understanding,”

“And at the same time, they feel helpless. He dare not come to China,”

“And your grandma’s family can’t go to the United States to confront him.”

“Yes.” Charlie nodded:

“This person’s presence in New York is a stumbling block for the An family.”

“As long as he is around, the An family cannot return to New York.”

“Although it is difficult for him to get the An family’s property,”

“The An family is not in the United States.”

“Since I haven’t broken up with him, my own business and group affairs will be greatly affected in a short period of time.”

After saying that, Charlie said again: “It’s not okay to kill this person,”

“It’s not okay not to kill him. If you kill him, you will definitely break the Warriors Den.”

“Be prepared and even protect him with heavy troops;”

“If you don’t kill him, he will definitely be a serious problem in the future.”

Maria asked Charlie: “When will the young master plan to let the An family reappear in the public eye?”

Charlie thought for a while and said: "Unless the Den is eliminated, the An family will not be able to return to New York."

"Even if they can come back, I won't worry about it,"

"So it's better for the An family not to show up for the time being."

Maria said: "I have an idea. I wonder if the young master would like to hear what I have to say?"

Charlie hurriedly said: "Miss Lin, please tell me."

Maria said: "The An family's economic strength is world-renowned,"

"And it is a Chinese family. I think that they can ask Ethan to help connect people in Eastcliff so that the An family can directly communicate with Chinese Official cooperation which allows An family to be an important foreign investment attracted by China,"

"To appear publicly in China and make strategic investments in China."

"With official endorsement, no matter how arrogant Victoria is,"

"She will never dare to attack An family in China."

Charlie couldn't help but be pleasantly surprised and praised:

"It's a good idea! No matter how arrogant Victoria is, she doesn't dare to openly oppose the country!"

"In front of the state machinery, the Warriors Den is just a clown,"

"Unable to cause any trouble."

Maria nodded, and said: "It's just that in this way, it may be difficult for the young master's grandfather's family to leave China."

"Once they leave China, they may be retaliated by Victoria."

Charlie said: "It doesn't matter, let them take root in China in a short time."

"Before the resolution, they can first transfer the business and the core management of the group to China,"

"Which can at least ensure the normal operation of the family!"

After saying that, Charlie looked at Maria and thanked her:

"This is a very good idea, thank you, Miss Lin!"

## Chapter 5769

Charlie knew that Ethan had extraordinary power and influence in Eastcliff,

And if he came to help bridge the gap, what Maria said would definitely come true.

Moreover, the feasibility of Maria's method is also very high.

As long as the government endorses it and gives enough attention to An family,

An family's safety in China will no longer be a problem.

Even if Victoria was given ten courages, she would not dare to openly oppose a country.

Unless she has lived for four hundred years and is really tired of living.

However, according to what Charlie has learned now,

People definitely cherish life more and more the longer they live;

The longer they live, the more they fear death.

Victoria has lived for four hundred years, so she must be extremely afraid of death.

Otherwise, she would not have escaped from Shiwan Mountain in such a panic.

Maria saw that Charlie had no objection to the proposal,

So she immediately called Ethan and told him the situation.

After Ethan heard about it, he agreed directly without any hesitation and immediately started communicating with Eastcliff.

The introduction of foreign investment is very common in China,

But Charlie hopes that An family's return to China for investment can reach an unprecedented new height in all aspects.

Ethan also immediately mobilized his own network to reflect upward and began to promote this matter.

Soon, Ethan received exciting news, and then he fed the news back to Maria.

Maria excitedly said to Charlie: "Master, Ethan has already implemented it."

"As long as the An family is really determined to invest in the country, the official can provide the highest level of foreign business treatment,"

"Personally endorse the An family, and mobilize media resources to cover all aspects."

"Follow up the report, and at the same time, we will do our best to ensure the domestic safety of the An family and the industries invested by them."

"If the An family is interested, they can go to Eastcliff secretly for an interview with Mr. Sun.

"That's great!"

Charlie immediately said: "I will go over to communicate with my grandpa and the others at noon."

"As long as they are interested, I will let my grandpa and Mr. Sun come to Eastcliff together!"

After saying that, Charlie couldn't help but sigh:

"If the cooperation between An family and China is officially announced,"

"Victoria will definitely be very depressed."

Then, Charlie immediately called his uncle and told him that he would go to Champs Elysees at noon.

Meet them at the Hot Spring Villa.

As soon as they heard that Charlie was coming, the An family was naturally very happy.

The family hurriedly started preparing lunch, waiting to welcome Charlie's arrival.

At noon, Charlie and Maria had already flown to Aurous Hill.

Although Maria wanted to go to the United States with Charlie,

She had no choice but to give up considering that she still had to take care of the mother of Pu Cha.

Moreover, the school's military training had ended and she should go back to class.

Charlie sent Maria back to the Mountain Villa and went straight to Champs Elysees Hot Spring Villa without making any stop.

When he arrived at the Champs-Élysées, his grandfather's family had already arranged a sumptuous banquet.

When Charlie arrived, the whole family, including Duncan, went out to greet him, which showed how much they valued Charlie.

After Charlie greeted all the elders one by one, he was pulled into the living room by his grandmother.

Grandma couldn't help but ask him: "Charlie,"

"Where have you been these past few days? You've never come to see grandma."

Charlie said hurriedly: "Grandma, I went to the southwest these past few days and visited Shiwan Mountain."

"I wanted to look for clues left by my parents back then."

The old man on the side quickly asked: "How was it? Did you find anything?"

Charlie sighed: "I didn't find anything clear, and I was persuaded to return halfway."

The old man asked in surprise: "Persuading you to return? Who persuaded you to return?"

Charlie said: "Grandpa, this is a long story, let's go in and talk."

Mr. An said without thinking: "Okay, okay, let's go in and chat, go in and chat!"

Charlie and the An family entered the villa together and sat down in the restaurant.

Seeing that there were no outsiders here, Charlie told the truth about his trip to Shiwan Mountain,

And at the same time, He also told the whole story about Leon.

Everyone was shocked when they heard that Charlie was persuaded to return by the false monk of Qingzhao Temple.

They also didn't expect that Charlie's strength was so unpredictable that there were people who had seen his movements in advance and were waiting on the way to the mountain.

What's even more unexpected is that Changying's old subordinate, Leon, who has been silently guarding Charlie for nearly twenty years, actually has another owner.

After hearing what Charlie said, his uncle Marshal asked in disbelief:

"Charlie, did Leon really disappear from the world?"

"Yes." Charlie nodded and said, "The phone has been turned off."

"The whereabouts of the person are unknown."

"Oh my god..." Marshal said fearfully for a while:

"This Leon is really hidden deep enough! Although I don't know who he is doing things for,"

"Fortunately he and the people behind him have no ill intentions towards you,"

"Charlie, otherwise, the consequences would be really unimaginable!"

Mr. An couldn't help but frown: "I have heard about Leon before."

"Through my understanding of all aspects, he is absolutely loyal to Changying."

"How could there be another owner..."

## Chapter 5770

Charlie was also puzzled, and said: "I have been in contact with Butler Tang for a long time,"

"And I have never seen anything wrong, and now I can't think of a clue."

Duncan, who had been silent for a long time, said at this time:

"Mr. Wade, are the photo albums you found on your trip to Eastcliff still there?"

"Yes." Charlie took the photo album out of his bag, handed it to everyone, and said:

"I asked my grandfather, and he said that this photo album was not in the study before. It must have been left by Butler Tang."

Everyone opened the photo album and saw the photo of Charlie's parents.

Everyone in the An family had red eyes.

When they saw Peter Zhou, no one in the An family recognized him.

Even Detective Duncan, who had been solving crimes in New York for many years, had never heard of this figure.

Duncan said at this time: "Mr. Wade, as soon as you arrived at Shiwan Mountain, you were persuaded to return by the fake master."

"When you arrived in Eastcliff, Butler Tang prepared this photo album for you."

"I feel that behind these two things, It should be the same person."

Charlie nodded and said: "I have the same feeling, but Butler Tang has disappeared and I can't find any clear clues now."

Duncan sighed: "It seems that this person's strength should not be underestimated."

"Not only can this person's insight into Mr. Wade's behavior can help him poach Mr. Wade's father's confidants for his own use."

"More importantly, this person has not left any clues with Mr. Wade."

"It is very likely that the we will not be able to find any trace of him."

"Since His opponent is also a Warriors Den, so Mr. Wade doesn't have to worry too much."

"According to my speculation, this is definitely a friend, not an enemy, which is generally a good thing."

Charlie said with a helpless smile: "The only clue is missing, and I won't be bothered by him anymore."

"I believe that when the time is right, he will naturally come out of the darkness to meet me."

After saying that, Charlie changed the subject and said:

"By the way, Grandpa, if you can find a relationship with a friend, please ask the official to endorse An family."

"However, since it is an official endorsement, there must be real economic cooperation. If you are willing, you can make more investments in China. My friend can fight for An family."

"The highest level of strategic cooperation. In this way, with official endorsement, Warriors Den will never dare to do anything to your family in China."

"I wonder what you think?"

Nicolas blurted out without hesitation:

"Of course not Problem! Keeping hiding like this is not a long-term solution."

"Once the highest level of economic cooperation can be achieved, it will be equivalent to getting a talisman, and the An family can act openly in China."

"At that time, the An family can gradually focus on business by moving from the United States to China,"

Seeing that his grandfather had no objection, Charlie said,

"Grandpa, if your time is convenient, I will ask that friend to go with you as soon as possible."

"You will go to Eastcliff to discuss the details of the investment."

"We will finalize the details of this strategic cooperation and make it public as soon as possible."

"Okay!" Nicolas agreed excitedly and blurted out: "I can go at any time! And the sooner, the better!"

In the afternoon, Nicolas, accompanied by his eldest son Marshal and his second son Marcus, secretly went to Eastcliff with Ethan.

Charlie did not return to Tomsons' immediately, but went to his villa next door,

And then called Mateo, who was in charge of martial arts teaching here,

And asked him to notify Issac and Orvel to come here to meet him.

Originally, Charlie was even a little worried whether Issac would suddenly disappear for no reason.

After all, Leon, as the chief steward of the entire Wade family, had someone else behind him.

So Issac, as the spokesperson of the Wade family in Aurous Hill and as Leon's direct subordinate, was probably deliberately arranged by someone.

But fortunately, Issac is still at the Champs Elysées.

The moment he saw Issac, Charlie felt a little relieved.

Frankly speaking, knowing that Leon had another owner, he felt a little disappointed.

On the one hand, Leon used to be his father's most loyal subordinate.

Although he was not qualified to make him loyal to the Wade family,

His behavior did leave Charlie with a slight psychological gap; on the other hand,

Charlie had almost unconditional trust before for Leon.

After all, he had protected him conscientiously for so many years.

After coming to Aurous Hill to meet him, he had always supported him unconditionally.

However, only today did he know that the person he really worked for was not the Wade family,

Nor himself. How could Charlie not feel disappointed?

What he fears most now is that there are other people around him who are just like Leon.

He is most afraid that the mysterious person has been planting various spies around him.

Issac and Orvel were both met by him when he first took back his identity as the young master of the Wade family,

And they were also two subordinates he trusted very much.

If there were problems with them, it would definitely be a bigger blow to Charlie.

More than ten minutes later, Issac and Orvel, who were practicing martial arts here, jogged all the way to Charlie's villa.

After entering the door, Issac said very respectfully:

"Master, when did you come back? Why didn't you notify us?"

"Yes, Master Wade!" Orvel also said quickly:

"You inform us, and we can pick you up at the airport!"

Charlie smiled slightly, waved his hand, and said,

"I will only stay for one day when I come back this time, and I have to leave at night."

"So I didn't notify others."

Issac asked curiously: "Master, where are you going in such a hurry?"

"Going to the United States," Charlie said casually, and then asked Issac:

"Old Chen, what do you think about Butler Tang, do you know about him?"

# Chapter 5771

When he said this, Charlie quietly exerted some spiritual energy and gave Issac a psychological hint to answer truthfully.

"Butler Tang?" Issac didn't feel anything unusual.

He just thought about it and said truthfully: "Back to the young master, although Butler Tang is my direct boss,"

"After all, there are spokespersons for the Wade family in every province and municipality,"

"Including many overseas destinations. So I am just one of the hundreds of spokespersons of the Wade family."

"In the past, I could only meet Butler Tang during the annual work report meeting, so I didn't have much contact."

Charlie nodded lightly. It seems that Issac and Leon are not in the same boat.

Charlie asked Orvel in the same way: "Orvel, before you met me, did you know Leon?"

"No..." Orvel shook his head repeatedly and laughed at himself:

"Master Wade, before I met you, I was just an old man with some reputation in Aurous Hill."

"I can't even reach the level of Mr. Chen, let alone the chief butler of the Wade family..."

Seeing this, Charlie felt relieved.

Then, he said to Issac: "Old Chen, Butler Tang has temporarily left the Wade family for a while."

"During this time, the position of the chief steward of the Wade family is vacant."

"I want you to temporarily replace Butler Tang. I wish Butler Tang the best in the future."

"Will return, then you will return your position to him as his deputy."

"If he does not return in the future, then you will always sit in this position."

Issac was surprised and said quickly: "Young Master...my work has never been outside this province,"

"And I have just barely figured out what I am doing."

"You asked me to take over the position of Butler Tang. I...how can I have the ability..."

Charlie asked back: "Wasn't it also a step for Butler Tang? Did he not climb up step by step?"

"Yes..." Issac said awkwardly: "Butler Tang spent more than ten or twenty years climbing up."

"My ability is far behind him, and my qualifications may not convince everyone."

Charlie waved his hand: "I am the head of the Wade family,"

"The position of the Wade family's chief steward. Whoever I ask to do it will naturally be qualified."

"It depends on whether you want to do it."

"This..." Issac suddenly fell into a conflict.

For him, Leon's position was the theoretical peak of his career.

Originally, he did not dare to covet that he could reach the height of Leon in the future.

However, after being appreciated and valued by Charlie, he sometimes felt that as long as he stayed by Charlie's side and worked hard wholeheartedly, Charlie might give him this opportunity in the future.

But that is definitely something you can only hope for after you are 50 years old and have accumulated enough experience.

But he never dreamed that Charlie would suddenly give him this opportunity to reach the sky in one step.

The only thing he worries about now is that he is afraid that he is not competent enough.

However, when he saw Charlie's firm eyes,

He knew that Charlie's ability to make this decision not only represented recognition of his own abilities but also represented trust in his loyalty.

So, he gritted his teeth and said loudly: "Young Master, thanks for your favor,"

"I am willing to go all out and give my all. If I am not capable,"

"I will resign to the Young Master as soon as possible."

Charlie said appreciatively: "Don't worry if your ability is not up to par,"

"I will not be nepotistic and will definitely replace you as soon as possible."

After that, he looked at Orvel again and spoke: "Orvel, you have been following me for a long time."

"After Mr. Chen becomes the chief steward of the Wade family,"

"You will be the agent of the entire Aurous Hill and the whole province. Are you willing?"

Orvel was very happy, he quickly raised his hands and said,

"Back to Master Wade, this subordinate is willing!"

"Like Mr. Chen, I will do my best, but if this subordinate is not capable, please don't force me, Master Wade!"

"Okay!" Charlie nodded slightly and spoke:

"You two, get ready. After Old Chen hands over the work of Aurous Hill to you, he will go to Eastcliff as soon as possible."

"I will say hello to the old man in advance and let the old man help you take office."

"But In that case, you will have to stay in Eastcliff for a period of time to sort out the stalls left by Leon."

"Then you can take part of the work to Aurous Hill and at the same time,"

"You can continue to stay here and learn martial arts."

Issac when he heard that he could continue to learn martial arts, he was pleasantly surprised and said quickly:

"Thank you, young master! I will definitely practice martial arts while ensuring that all work is completed perfectly!"

"Okay." Charlie said with a smile: "You hurry up and take over the handover work. I want to go back to Tomson's!"

After leaving the hot spring villa in Champs-Élysées, Charlie immediately rushed back to Tomson,

Planning to simply pack some luggage and tell his father-in-law and mother-in-law that he would rush out overnight to do Feng Shui for another client tonight.

The couple knew that Charlie was running around all day long, and they were used to it, so they were not surprised when they heard the news.

What Charlie didn't expect was that his mother-in-law, Elaine, took the initiative to care about Charlie and said with a distressed look on her face:

"Good son-in-law, you are running around all day long, and don't even take a few days off."

"What if your body is exhausted?!"

Suddenly being cared about by his mother-in-law, Charlie felt that it was very rare,

So he smiled and said: "Mom, don't worry, although I am running around every day, I am actually not tired at all."

Jacob looked at Elaine and hummed: "What do you know? My good son-in-law is now a Feng Shui master."

"Don't look at him running around outside all day long."

"The people who hire him are big bosses and big stars."

"These people want to be more interested in Feng Shui masters than their own fathers."

"I also respect you. You must be very concerned about your good son-in-law's food, clothing, housing, and transportation, and you will never let your good son-in-law suffer."

"In ancient times, no matter how far away you were, you would have to carry eight sedans to carry your good son-in-law there!"

Elaine nodded thoughtfully, then looked at Charlie, and said with a smile:

"My good son-in-law is the best! Rich people have to beg to spend money on my good son-in-law!"

## Chapter 5772

After saying that, she rolled her eyes and hurriedly accompanied with a smile:

"Good son-in-law, can I discuss something with you?"

As soon as Charlie saw Elaine like this, he knew that Elaine must be asking for something from him.

No wonder she took the initiative to care about him today.

So he asked, "Mom, if you have anything to say, just tell me."

Elaine hesitated and said, "Um...Mom is a little tight lately. You have to go away again this time."

"Mom is worried about what might happen. There is no money here, and I have to disturb you and Claire,"

"So what mom means is, do you think you can leave some more money for mom before you leave?"

Jacob rolled his eyes at Elaine and said disdainfully:

"Elaine, I know you, a weasel, have no good intentions in giving New Year greetings to the chicken, and you want to ask Charlie for money!"

Elaine seemed to have been stepped on and cursed angrily:

"Jacob! I want some money from my good son-in-law, what does it have to do with you?"

Jacob said angrily: "You have hands and feet, but you won't make money by yourself if you have no money?"

"Look at me, now in the Calligraphy and Painting Association, my monthly salary plus subsidy is not less than ten or twenty thousand!"

Elaine scolded: "Bah! Just don't say that What kind of calligraphy and painting association are you in?"

"If your good son-in-law hadn't helped you, you would have been kicked out!"

"It's bull5hit!" Jacob blushed and wanted to protect his dignity.

Seeing that the two of them were hot and about to choke again, Charlie quickly interrupted:

"Dad, Mom, please stop being angry with each other."

"When I go out, you two will be the only ones at home."

"You guys will keep fighting all day long. I can't feel at ease outside!"

Elaine snorted: "I don't bother to pay attention to him unless he's looking for trouble!"

Charlie nodded, he knew Elaine's character.

She can act like a monster when he has money, and he can act like a monster when he has no money.

She is a demon, but at the very least, when she is rich, she will definitely not be able to be a demon if she is a demon,

So she will just spend a small amount of money to buy a pure one.

So, he said very cheerfully: "Mom, money is not a big deal."

"In this way, I will transfer one million to your card in a while,"

"And you can spend it however you want during this period."

Elaine heard this. At these words, the whole person's eyes suddenly opened wide, and she was so excited that her lips trembled, and she asked in a stammering voice:

"Good son-in-law! What you said...is it true?! Do you really want it? Give mom one million?!"

"Of course it's true." Charlie nodded, but said in a serious tone:

"But I only have one request. You can't quarrel with Dad during the few days I'm gone!"

Elaine patted her chest without hesitation and said: "Don't worry, good son-in-law,"

"I will never quarrel with him! If you give Mom one million, I will not be at home except when I come back to sleep."

"Even if he wants to quarrel with me." I won't give him a chance!"

Jacob felt envious and jealous when he heard that Charlie actually wanted to give Elaine one million.

Although he had an income from the Calligraphy and Painting Association,

That little income was simply not enough for him.

He is the executive vice president himself, and he often receives favors in the association.

In addition, driving the Cullinan back and forth all day long means the cost is much higher than that of an ordinary car.

Even the gas costs several thousand a month. So every month is very tight.

But Jacob is not as thick-skinned as Elaine.

He always feels that he can become the vice president of the Painting and Calligraphy Association because of Charlie.

He can drive Cullinan, and it is even more thanks to Charlie that he can live in a first-class villa in Tomson. It's Charlie's ability.

Therefore, he was embarrassed to ask Charlie for money again.

But now seeing that Elaine was going to get one million with just one mouthful, how could he not feel depressed?

So he began to think about whether he should cry out to Charlie and see if Charlie could express his feelings.

However, when he thinks that he has just damaged Elaine and then asks Charlie for money, he feels a little embarrassed on his face.

Charlie didn't waste any time at this time and directly used mobile banking to transfer one million to Elaine.

Although he had a lot of dissatisfaction with Elaine in the past, his current attitude towards Elaine is that as long as she doesn't act like a monster,

He will be polite to her, and he won't feel sorry for her even if he gives her hundreds of millions of dollars.

Soon, Elaine received a text message from the bank on her mobile phone,

Reminding her that one million had arrived.

She was so excited that she danced with excitement and said to Charlie with a flattering look on her face:

"Oh, my dear son-in-law, Mommy has received the money. Thank you so much, my good son-in-law!"

Charlie smiled lightly and reminded: "Mom, you must never forget what you promised me, and don't quarrel with Dad."

Elaine immediately raised her right hand and swore:

"Don't worry, good son-in-law, I will not quarrel with him again while you are gone."

"He is the one I should respect the most!"

Charlie nodded and said, "Okay. Mom, you get busy, I will go and pack some luggage."

Elaine said quickly: "Oh, my dear son-in-law, tell mom what you want to pack,"

"And I will help you pack it, you can just sit in the living room!"

Charlie smiled and said, "No, Mom, you don't know where many things are."

"I'll just do it by myself."

After saying that, Charlie was about to turn around and go upstairs.

Jacob, who had been holding back his energy, saw that Charlie was about to leave.

He couldn't calm down anymore and subconsciously shouted:

"Oh, my dear son-in-law, don't be anxious first..."

Charlie turned around and asked him: "Dad, are you okay?"

Jacob secretly glanced at Elaine next to him out of the corner of his eye.

Charlie could tell at a glance that something was wrong with Jacob.

Thinking that he had just transferred one million to Elaine,

He knew in his heart what Jacob had planned.

Elaine was not stupid either. Jacob glanced at her with a sly look,

And she guessed what Jacob was planning and said quickly:

"I tell you, Jacob, you must not ask for money from my good son-in-law!"

"Aren't you able to make money on your own?"

"How can it be that an upright and competent vice-president of the Painting and Calligraphy Association asks his son-in-law for money?"

## Chapter 5773

Jacob blushed instantly when she said this, and he hesitated and said:

"Who said I want to ask for money from my son-in-law?"

"Did I say that? I have other things to do with my good son-in-law,"

"So don't be rude!"

When Elaine heard this, she didn't argue with him.

Instead, she turned to Charlie and said, "Good son-in-law,"

"You heard everything he said. No matter what bad sh!t he holds,"

"You must never give him a penny!"

Jacob suddenly got angry and raised his neck and cursed:

"Elaine, why are you like this?"

"You can't stop talking about money over and over again, right?"

Elaine shook her head deliberately and smiled playfully and said:

"What's the matter? Since you didn't ask good son-in-law for money,"

"Then why did I offend you after I told my good son-in-law not to give you money?"

"You...you..." Jacob didn't expect that Elaine's defensive ability was so good.

She was so strong that she strangled his ideas in the cradle.

How could he have the nerve to ask Charlie for money even though she was talking about it?

Jacob, who suffered the loss of being dumb, was completely unable to refute,

And could only say angrily: "I...I didn't want to ask my good son-in-law for money..."

"I just wanted to tell my good son-in-law to pay attention to safety when going out!"

Elaine deliberately pretended to be arrogant.

She breathed a sigh of relief, and while caressing her chest with her two palms alternately,

She said with lingering fear: "Oh, Jacob, you really scared me to death."

"I thought you were so shameless that you wanted to your son-in-law for money!"

"It's not easy for good son-in-law to make some money."

"You're a capable person, so you'd better not spend other people's money."

Jacob said angrily: "I said Elaine, what's wrong with you?"

"I told you so, but I didn't think about it."

"You're asking for money from good son-in-law,"

"And you've been bitch!ng about it forever, aren't you?"

Seeing Jacob being so angry but never daring to speak out his true thoughts,

Charlie suddenly felt in his heart that the ancients were indeed right,

This poor man must be hating something in his heart.

Jacob has a weak character, and his behavior is secretive and grinding.

He is always in a contradiction of being afraid of wolves in the front and tigers in the back.

As a result, his life has had many opportunities to turn around,

But in the end, he always screwed up everything.

Just like when Meiqing first returned to China,

Everyone could see that Jacob really wanted to reunite with her.

Even Meiqing herself had been thinking about him.

The two of them could be said to be lovers.

As long as Jacob dared to get rid of Elaine by getting a divorce,

He could make up for decades of regrets and strive for a happy old age for himself.

However, he just didn't dare to pierce the window paper,

So Meiqing lost patience while waiting for him.

In addition, Pollard, a man countless times better than him,

Suddenly appeared and directly stole the love of his life.

Learning such a big lesson from Meiqing still failed to make him realize his problems,

And still failed to make him change his stubborn and timid character.

In addition to being helpless, Charlie also felt a little angry for him.

So, he looked at Jacob and asked directly: "Dad,"

"Don't you have enough money? If so,"

"Just tell me and I will transfer some to you."

Jacob felt a little excited when he heard this.

But when he thought of Elaine's ridicule of him and the flag he had just set,

He was really ashamed to slap himself in the face.

Therefore, Jacob didn't know how to answer Charlie's words.

At this time, Elaine saw that Charlie wanted to give Jacob money,

And she was very anxious and said quickly:

"Good son-in-law, your father just said it himself,"

"He has all the means and legs and doesn't want your money."

"Besides, he is also a person in the cultural circle,"

"And is also the vice president of the Calligraphy and Painting Association."

"To put it bluntly, he is also a big shot with a good reputation."

"If you give him money now, isn't that a slap in his face?"

## Chapter 5774

Jacob felt even more uncomfortable.

Although he wanted to rush up and slap Elaine twice,

He also knew that Elaine's words had been putting pressure on him.

If he followed Charlie's words at this time and really asked Charlie for money,

Wouldn't it be wrong to disgrace him?

Seeing that he hesitated for a long time but did not speak,

Charlie felt helpless and simply stopped worrying about him,

So he directly followed Jacob's words and said:

"Dad, thank you for your concern, I will pay attention to safety,"

"Nothing else I'm going to pack my things first, and I'll leave for the airport later."

Charlie also knew that Jacob's nature was hard to change,

So he didn't give him any more chances.

After saying this, he turned around and entered the elevator.

Jacob felt so uncomfortable when he saw Charlie going upstairs.

Looking at Elaine's triumphant smile, he felt like he was worse off than dead.

Charlie, who went upstairs, couldn't help but sigh in his heart,

When would his father-in-law be able to break through the hesitation and weakness in his psychology,

And when would he be able to truly live the way he wanted?

...

After everything was packed, Charlie left home alone at night, planning to drive to the airport.

As soon as he took the elevator to the first floor,

He saw his father-in-law standing up from the sofa with a cigarette in his mouth,

And said with a smile: "Good son-in-law, are you leaving now?"

Charlie nodded slightly: "Yes. Dad, let's go to the airport now."

Jacob rubbed his hands and was about to say something,

When Elaine suddenly limped down the stairs and said loudly:

"Oh my good son-in-law, Mom is here to see you off!"

Elaine, who had earned one million, and Jacob, who had missed one million, both wanted to see Charlie off.

Jacob wanted to find an opportunity to vaguely mention to Charlie that his funds were tight,

And see if Charlie could give him a million or so with a wave of his hand.

Jacob, when he wants a pillow when he is dozing, he will never say that he wants it.

On the contrary, if he wants it, he has to insist that it doesn't matter or even say that he doesn't want it,

And then he hopes in his heart that others will take the initiative to give him a pillow.

The kind of person who can't even open his mouth when begging for food,

Hoping that the chicken drumsticks will fall from the sky and just hit the bowl.

To put it mildly, it sounds reserved and inactive;

To put it harshly, it means that you are thinking nonsense.

Elaine knew Jacob's character and knew how to control him and block his way out.

She was worried that Jacob would pretend to be pitiful in front of Charlie,

And try to steal Charlie's money while seeing him off,

So she especially waited for Charlie to go out to disrupt Jacob's plan.

As soon as Jacob's words of crying came to his lips,

When he saw Elaine suddenly appear, he immediately swallowed them back.

Elaine glanced at Jacob at this time,

And then said to Charlie with a flattering face:

"Good son-in-law, you can go out to do business,"

"You don't have to worry about anything at home!"

After saying that, she quickly stepped forward and offered to help Charlie

Picked up the suitcase and walked out with all her strength.

She kept urging: "Good son-in-law. It's getting late."

"You have to hurry up and don't miss the plane and delay the business."

Jacob also looked at Charlie was urged out of the door by Elaine.

His heart dropped to the bottom, and he could only follow him out angrily.

Charlie didn't leave any chance for Jacob,

So he stuffed the suitcase into the trunk of the BMW,

Then waved to the two of them:

"Mom, Dad, I'm leaving."

After saying that, he got into the car and stepped on the accelerator.

Half an hour later, he arrived at the airport.

The plane was ready to take off, and Hogan also landed at Aurous Hill Airport on time.

After the two met, they boarded a private plane to the United States.

The plane took off in the night and headed to New York, 10,000 kilometers away.



## Chapter 5775

Qixia Temple late at night.

In a Zen room with a courtyard that is not open to the public,

A beautiful woman is sitting on a wicker chair in the courtyard looking up at the

## Chapter 5775

Qixia Temple late at night.

In a Zen room with a courtyard that is not open to the public,

A beautiful woman is sitting on a wicker chair in the courtyard looking up at the autumn stars.

A bald old lady came out, spread a blanket on the beautiful woman's legs,

And said respectfully: "Madam, the young master's plane has taken off."

"Flyed?" Upon hearing this, the beautiful woman quickly looked over in the air in the direction of the airport.

Seeing light spots flashing far in the sky, she couldn't help but sigh:

"I don't know which of these shining light spots is the one Charlie is sitting on."

After that, she asked the old woman: "Who is Charlie going with, Mr. Zhong?"

This beautiful woman is Charlie's mother, Margaret.

The old lady beside Margaret was the old lady pretending to be the fake monk.

The old woman's surname is Sun, and her name is Jinya Sun.

She had followed Margaret for many years, and her role was comparable to that of a housekeeper.

Jinya said to Margaret at this time: "Back to Madam, the young master did board the plane with Hogan."

"Their plane is traveling at a fast speed."

"It is estimated that they will arrive in New York at around eight o'clock in the evening New York time."

"Okay."

Margaret nodded slightly and said with a smile:

"Peter has been in trouble in the past few years, and I can't help him."

"If Charlie can find him, I believe he can help him overcome the difficulties,"

"And, maybe he can help Charlie open the Niwan Palace."

...

8:30 pm New York time.

The plane that Charlie and Hogan took landed smoothly at JFK Airport.

Since it was already getting late, Charlie had no plans to go directly to the antique store in Queens tonight.

He knew that Hogan came to New York with him this time,  
And he must also want to meet Jordan, the one he adopted.

Now, Jordan has taken over the roast goose restaurant he has been running for half his life.

Hogan must have deep feelings for Jordan and the restaurant.

So Charlie said to Hogan after the plane landed:

“Uncle, let’s go to Chinatown first tonight.”

“What time does your roast goose shop usually remain open?”

Hogan did not expect that Charlie would choose to go to Chinatown as his first stop, so he quickly said:

“Master, I’d better accompany you to do business first.”

“After the business is done, I can take the time to see Jordan.”

Charlie smiled and said: “Uncle, it’s so late that two well-traveled people go to an antique store first as soon as they get off the plane.”

“It’s really unreasonable. If someone finds out that this is an abnormal behavior worthy of attention, won’t they treat us as spies?”

“So today we don’t do anything about the antique store.”

“First we go to Chinatown for a meal, and you can meet Jordan by the way.”

“Then we go to Shangri-La to stay one night, and then go to Queens tomorrow.”

Hogan knew that what Charlie said made sense,

But he also knew that Charlie was thinking about himself.

However, he was not too polite to Charlie and said:

“Master, roast goose restaurants are usually open until two o’clock in the morning.”

Charlie asked curiously: “So late?”

Hogan nodded and said: “Mainly because it is cheap most of the diners who come to eat are migrant workers, many of whom are illegal immigrants without status.”

“They usually can only stop work and rest in the early morning,”

“So our business hours are later, waiting for them to eat After dinner, we will close the stalls and close the shop.”

Charlie smiled and said: “Okay since the business hours are relatively late, we can still have a meal when we get there.”

Hogan said: “Then I’ll call Jordan and let him prepare it in advance.”

Charlie asked: “Uncle, have you told Jordan this time you came to the United States?”

“Not yet.” Hogan said: “This time it was in a hurry, so I didn’t tell him because I was worried.”

‘If I don’t have time to go over and see him, it wouldn’t be a good idea to tell him.”

## Chapter 5776

Charlie smiled and said, "In that case,"

"You don't have to call him. We can go there directly and give him a surprise."

"Okay!" Hogan readily agreed, with obvious expectations on his face.

He couldn't help but say to Charlie: "Master, to tell you the truth,"

"I have always regarded Jordan as my son."

"I haven't seen him for a while, and I miss him in my heart."

Charlie understood very much.

Hogan's life in the United States was very poor.

In the past few years, it was better. With Bella by his side, he was able to drink and drink well.

But after Bella left, he managed a roast goose shop all by himself despite his status as an illegal immigrant.

His life was indeed miserable and desperate.

Jordan, to him, was not just an adopted orphan or a buddy, but more of a life sustenance.

...

After the two of them left the airport, Charlie directly rented an inconspicuous Chevrolet car and headed to Chinatown with Hogan.

When he came to the United States this time, Charlie didn't ask anyone to make any preparations in the United States,

Nor did he tell Stella. Trying to keep a low profile was not only safer,

But also easier to find clues buried in the market.

Driving to the familiar Chinatown, Hogan's previous roast goose restaurant was indeed still in business.

Charlie parked the car, and Hogan couldn't wait to open the door.

When the two of them walked into the roast goose shop,

The shop was surprisingly deserted.

There was only one person sitting at one of the several dining tables.

Jordan was preparing in the kitchen.

When he heard someone coming in, he shouted from inside:

"Sit down wherever you want, I'll be there soon!"

After saying that, after more than ten seconds,  
He walked out of the kitchen with a piece of roast goose rice.  
Seeing that the people coming were Hogan and Charlie,  
He was startled for a moment, and murmured in surprise:

“Uncle, Mr. Wade... why are you here?!”

Hogan was smiling and was about to say hello, seeing that his face was covered with bruises and purple scars, and there was even a cut at the corner of his mouth that had formed black scabs, he asked in shock:

“Jordan, what’s wrong with your face?!”

Jordan subconsciously turned away half of his face,

And while taking the opportunity to serve the guests, he said hesitantly:

“It’s okay, Uncle... I just learned how to ride a motorcycle a few days ago and accidentally fell...”

Hogan immediately said: “Impossible! Your injury is not caused by falling off a motorcycle at all!”

“Look in the mirror and look at your panda eyes.”

“It was obviously punched out by someone with a fist,”

“And the injury on the corner of your mouth was not caused by a very sharp blow.”

“Someone slap you with such force that it even could knock out the corners of your mouth.”

“Tell me! What’s going on!”

Jordan said covertly: “Uncle... my injury is really... it’s not a slap.”

“It’s...”

As he said that, he quickly looked at the clock and saw that it was already past nine o’clock.

He quickly said: “Oh, Uncle, you didn’t say hello to me in advance when you arrived so that I could pick you up at the airport.”

“Now. It’s getting late, so why don’t I close the shop first and take you and Mr. Wade to find a place to stay?”

After that, without waiting for Hogan to speak, he quickly said to the guest:

“I’m sorry, sir, I have something to do today and I have to close early.”

“I will pack this meal for you and you can take it away without paying, okay?”

Upon hearing this, the customer quickly nodded and agreed,

But Hogan frowned and asked him: "Jordan, tell me the truth, are you in any trouble?"

As he was talking, there was suddenly a low roar of motorcycles outside, And the roars were getting closer and closer. Becoming louder and louder. Jordan's expression suddenly became extremely nervous, and he quickly said: "Uncle, Mr. Wade, I have something to deal with."  
"Please go upstairs and avoid it!"

## Chapter 5777

Seeing the nervousness on Jordan's face, Charlie, who had been silent all this time, immediately realized that the sound of the motorcycle engine getting closer and closer outside was probably coming towards him.

## Chapter 5777

Seeing the nervousness on Jordan's face, Charlie, who had been silent all this time, immediately realized that the sound of the motorcycle engine getting closer and closer outside was probably coming towards him.

At this time, Hogan realized that Jordan might have caused big trouble, so he asked sternly:

"Jordan, tell me the truth, who did you offend?" Seeing that the matter could not be covered up,

Jordan had no choice but to explain

"Uncle, these people here are all members of a new gang..."

Hogan exclaimed: "Do you owe loan sharks?!"

Jordan quickly explained: "No, Uncle! It's their former they just occupied Chinatown in two days and are now collecting protection money from door to door."

"They want three thousand dollars a month."

"If we don't pay, they will beat people and even say they will destroy the store."

Hogan frowned and asked: "In the past few years, the protection fee has been three hundred dollars a month."

"Why was it suddenly jacked up?"

Jordan sighed helplessly and said:

"The old gang had a fight with them last week."

"The losses have been heavy. Big Viagra has already given up and handed over Chinatown to them..."

Hogan was slightly surprised, and then asked him:

"What is the background of the new gang?"

"They asked for three thousand dollars a month at the beginning. This is too dark!"

Jordan said angrily:

"We and several surrounding stores work from dawn to dusk to do business."

“We have to pay rent and labor. Because we don’t have legal status,”

“We have to go around and do business. It’s exhausting for a month.”

“We only earn a few thousand dollars for hard work,”

“And they want three thousand, which means that everyone is working hard for them!”

Hogan asked again: “What is the origin of this new gang?”

Jordan replied: “The name of the new gang is Burning-Angel.”

“The Burning Angels are mostly African Americans and a small number of Latinos from Brooklyn and downtown.”

“It is said that they are supported by Italians.”

“Now the Italians are gradually retreating behind the scenes and do not come out to fight and kill,”

“But they are unwilling to give up this part of the profits,”

“They supported a group of ruthless African Americans and established such a gang...”

Hogan asked: “Did they inflict the wounds on your face?”

“Yes...” Jordan said bitterly: “They came to collect the protection fee.”

“I couldn’t get that much money, so they beat me up.”

“The deadline they gave me was tonight.”

“If I couldn’t get the money tonight, they will destroy the store.”

Hogan asked again: “Have you called the police?”

“Yes.” Jordan said slumped: “But it is useless to call the police.”

“You know the situation. The main purpose of the police is protection in the rich areas.”

“When I called the police, they just came to go through the motions and told me that they couldn’t find anything.”

Hogan said angrily: “This is really unreasonable!”

Jordan said helplessly: “I called the police. , told them that they would come again.”

“The police said that there were not enough police to keep an eye on them.”

“They asked me to call 911 as soon as I see them, but what’s the use...”

“If the other party really came with a gun, I would have died eight times,”

“And the police probably haven’t even arrived yet.”

As he spoke, Jordan let out a long sigh and said,

“They are American citizens, we are illegal immigrants without status,”

“And the police don’t care whether we live or die...”

As he spoke, The roar of the motorcycle had already reached the door of the roast goose shop.

Jordan suddenly became more nervous and quickly said to Hogan and Charlie:

“Uncle, Mr. Wade, hurry up and go upstairs!”

Charlie simply sat down smiled and said:

“To be honest, I have never seen a gangster collect protection money.”

“This time I have to see it.”

“Jordan, go and get me some roast goose rice. I will eat and watch at the same time.”

## Chapter 5778

Jordan said quickly: "Mr. Wade, they really are quick to kill people! You still..."  
Before Jordan finished speaking, Hogan interrupted him, patted him on the shoulder, and said:

## Chapter 5778

Jordan said quickly: "Mr. Wade, they really are quick to kill people! You still..."  
Before Jordan finished speaking, Hogan interrupted him, patted him on the shoulder, and said:

"What the young master said let's do it."

"You go prepare a roast goose rice, hurry up and get me one to see if your skills have deteriorated."

At this time, five young black men wearing hip-hop and arrogant clothes had already walked in.

The leader was thin and tall. He was wearing a large hoodie.

The hood covered his head and half of his face.

He had his hands in the horizontal pockets in the front of the hoodie.

He looked like he was armed.

The man came in, saw Jordan, and immediately sneered and joked:

"Goose from China, have you prepared the money I want?"

"If I don't see the 3,000 dollars tonight, I will Feed you a few bullets,"

"Then throw you into the River and let your body float back to China!"

Jordan became extremely nervous for a moment, and when he was about to speak, Charlie, who was already sitting at the dinner table, interrupted.

He looked at him and urged: "Boss, go and prepare a meal for me."

"I'm already so hungry that I want to hit someone."

Jordan was stunned for a moment and didn't know what to do.

Hogan on the side urged in a low voice: "Hurry up and go!"

Jordan gritted his teeth and made up his mind:

"Okay...I'll go right away..."

After saying that, he turned around and went into the kitchen.

When the black man at the head saw Charlie sending the boss to the back kitchen, he felt a little unhappy.

He curled his lips and sneered: "Okay, okay, okay, it seems we have some new business to do here."

After saying that, he moved exaggeratedly and sat in front of Charlie, he said calmly:

"Hey, Chinese guy, who gave you the courage to interrupt when I was doing my business?"

Charlie smiled, looked at him, and asked:

"What? Collecting protection money?"

"You won't let customers eat?"

"Don't you know that customers are god?"

Seeing Charlie's joking expression, the man immediately realized that he might be with the shop owner,

So he said sharply: "Boy, it seems that you don't know much about the situation here."

"The entire Chinatown, I mean the entire Chinatown in New York."

"From now on is Burning Angel's territory."

"If you guys still want to do business here,"

"You must pay protection fees as we require,"

"Otherwise, I will kill you one by one!"

He threatened Charlie.

He didn't take it seriously at all, he just raised his eyebrows and said with a smile:

"I don't have a good temper."

"I hate being disturbed when eating,"

"So I don't care if you are a burning angel, a burning wild dog, or a burning rat."

"If you don't quickly take your boyfriends and disappear,"

"I will let you know what life is worse than death like."

"Dmn! Do you think I'm gay?"

The man spat on the ground and clenched his fists.

Then he took out an M9 pistol from his pocket,

Held the trigger, and turned it around on the table.

Then he pointed the gun at Charlie's head and shouted in a cold voice:

“Boy, it seems you haven’t tasted it.”

“Believe it or not, I want you to taste the taste of bullets right now?”

Charlie raised his eyebrows and said with a smile:

“I’ve made people eat sh!t,”

“I’ve made people immerse themselves in iron cages and sink across rivers,”

“And I’ve also made people do human body calligraphy,”

“But I have never tried feeding others bullets.”

“Since you proposed this novel idea today, we can put it into practice.”

After saying that, Charlie glanced at the gun in his hand and said calmly:

“This gun of yours should use nine-millimeter bullets, right?”

“There should be thirteen rounds in the magazine when it is full.”

“With so many bullets, I wonder if you like to chew them or swallow them?”

## Chapter 5779

"Dmn it!"

Seeing that Charlie was not afraid, but instead spoke arrogantly,

The gangster became furious!

He used the bottom of the pistol to push all the bottles and cans on the table to the ground,

Then stood up, pressed the muzzle of the gun against Charlie's head,

And cursed with a sinister expression:

"Chinese guy, this is the United States, the United States of America!"

"If you cause trouble here, no one will tell you to go back to China."

"Instead, they will smash your head with a gun for me!"

Charlie laughed and said: "You are so arrogant."

After saying that, Charlie put away his smile and said contemptuously:

"But I'm not afraid!"

The man gritted his teeth and said:

"Dmn it, are you really tired of living?"

Charlie spread his hands and said calmly:

"I'll sit down today Here, no matter what kind of angel is burning or a wild dog in the crematorium,"

"As long as he dares to come, he will kneel down and sing "Conquer" for me!"

"If he sings well, he will be spared his life;"

"If he sings poorly, he will be spared."

"I'll twist off his dog head and kick it all the way from the east end of Chinatown to the west end."

As he spoke, Charlie looked at his face and frowned:

"Your head is not very good, it is too long and elongated."

"It's too shapeless in fact, more like a rugby ball."

"With a head like yours, you can't dribble like a rugby ball."

"You can only open your feet like a rugby ball."

"So you take back what you just said and say it again."

"If you don't sing well in a while,"

"I will Twist off your dog's head and drive from the east end of Chinatown to the west end of Chinatown!"

"Holy sh!t!" The man went berserk in an instant.

His fingers kept rubbing on the trigger,

And the whole person seemed to go berserk.

Jumping back and forth in the space of 3 meters,

he muttered something: "I'm going to kill this ba5tard!"

"Immediately! Immediately!"

After saying that, he winked at the few followers around him.

The door of the goose shop got tightly closed from the inside.

As soon as the door was closed, the man pointed the muzzle of his gun at Charlie's eyebrows again and said coldly:

"You ba5tard just like to get the hit of the muzzle of the gun."

"Anyway, I have killed more than one person like you. Won't matter with one more."

It doesn't matter, I don't take a clown like you seriously at all!"

"If you have any last words, just say them and I'll send you on your way!"

"Last words?" Charlie laughed mockingly and said disdainfully:

"Trash like you can't kill me at all."

After saying that, he knocked on the table with a smile and said:

"Jordan, where is my food?"

Jordan ran out of the kitchen in a panic,

Holding a bowl of roast goose rice in his hand, hesitating he said:

"Mr. Wade... your rice is here..."

As he said that, he hurriedly took the portion of the Roasted goose rice and placed it in front of Charlie.

At this time, the gangster knocked the entire meal to the ground with his hand and said sternly:

"Dmn it, do you still want to eat when you are about to die?!"

After that, he turned the muzzle of his gun,

Pointed it at the rice bowl on the ground,

And instantly pulled the trigger.

With a bang, the bullet penetrated the rice bowl,

Breaking the plastic rice bowl into pieces and making Jordan tremble with fear!

Hogan on the side was not scared at all.

He knew very well that these people were just a group of ants in front of Charlie.

Even the entire Burning Angel was just a clown in front of Charlie.

The Fei family is almost like a local emperor in New York,

But when Charlie shot Randal with his own hands in front of everyone in the Fei family,

Who in the Fei family would dare to stop him?

When Charlie asked Randal's father, grandfather, and grandpa whether they were convinced that he would kill Randal, who would dare to say no?

Now, a few gang members who knew nothing about the world dared to jump in front of Charlie with guns,

And Charlie would never let them have an easy time.

At this time, the leader was staring at Charlie,

And Charlie was not afraid at all.

Instead, he looked at Jordan and said, "Give me another bowl."

"This idiot here is a food waster."

"I will make him kneel down later on the ground, like a dog, licking all the rice grains on the ground one by one."

The man almost collapsed inside, he had already fired,

But Charlie was still not afraid at all, which made him feel a little scared,

And at the same time, he was also murderous.

He opened his mouth to an exaggerated size and flapped his two plump lips.

He gritted his teeth angrily and said, "Ba5tard!"

"Since you are seeking death, I will send you to meet God!"

After that, he pressed the trigger hard!

Jordan closed his eyes in fear,

And the gangster's four companions also took a few steps back.

They saw that their boss had murderous intentions.

At this time, several people looked disgusted,

Fearing that blood would splash out later.

Just when they thought Charlie was about to be shot in the head,

The gangster's eyes widened and he tried his best to pull the trigger while muttering:

"What's going on... Why can't my hand pull the trigger..."

# Chapter 5780

Charlie smiled slightly.

He only used a tiny amount of spiritual energy,

Which was enough to make the opponent completely unable to parry.

At this time, the gangster's hand could not use any strength at all, let alone pull the trigger.

It is impossible to pinch even a grain of rice for him now.

The gangster didn't know what was going on.

He still had strength in his arm, but his five fingers were completely out of control.

Just when he was panicking, Charlie had already reached out and pulled the gun out of his hand.

He glanced at the Italian M9 pistol and said calmly:

"God has no intention of seeing me this time it seems..."

"sh!t!"

The four black men behind him shouted immediately when they saw that Charlie had the man's gun in his hand.

They panicked and took out their own pistols from their waists and prepared to shoot at Charlie.

Charlie sneered, suddenly grabbed the gangster's wrist, and then swung him hard like a baseball bat!

Before the four of them took out their guns,

They felt a large black stick weighing more than 100 kilograms hit them sideways.

Before they could react, they were instantly swept to the ground.

For a moment, five people were lying in the corner wailing.

The person who was thrown out suffered the worst.

His entire right arm was only connected to the body by tendons.

In the subsequent impact, his cheekbones, ribs, and leg bones were damaged.

All had serious fractures, and countless bones were broken all over the body.

Although the injuries suffered by the four people were not that serious,

The sudden and powerful impact was like being hit by a high-speed car.

They were all covered with injuries and were lying on the ground in pain.

The living ghosts cry and wolves howl.

They never imagined that an ordinary person could have such power,

And they knew in their hearts that this time they met a master, maybe this was the legendary Kung Fu master.

At this time, Charlie walked up to the five people expressionlessly,

Looked at the frightened expressions of the five people, and slowly squatted down.

The five people were so frightened that they subconsciously wanted to hide,

But at this time they were already huddled in the corner and had nowhere to hide.

The leading man had already lost half his life,

And now he had lost all his previous ferocity,

And his whole face was filled with fear and uneasiness.

Charlie looked at him and slapped him hard on the face!

The snap echoed throughout the roast goose shop.

Seeing that the man's cheeks were swelling rapidly, Charlie said with a smile:

"The fucking underworld boss? And the Burning Angel...who gave you this fucking name?"

"Look at your old donkey face, it doesn't look like an angel of fools even?"

The man's cheek was in pain as if it was exploding, but at this time he could only cry and say to Charlie: "I'm sorry, I'm really sorry, I didn't know you knew kung fu, please let us go, we will never do it again." Come here!"

Charlie frowned and slapped him hard again.

This crisp sound made the eardrums of the four people next to him hurt.

After Charlie slapped him for the second time, he smiled and asked him,

"Wasn't it very cruel just now? The posture you held the gun in was so cool and unrestrained."

"I think you wanted to jump up and shoot. Why did you soften so quickly?" "

The man was beaten so hard that he almost fainted,

But the severe pain on his face made his brain extremely clear.

He knew that he had encountered a tough opponent today and that he had no one to help him,

So he could only ask for a way out in a low voice.

Thinking of this, he cried and said: "Sir, I was really wrong..."

"I grew up in a poor family. My father made my mother pregnant and ran away."

"My mother worked three jobs to raise me."

"Growing up, I didn't have much education. I followed gangs to earn a living since I was a child."

"I beg you, for the sake of my mother, spare my life..."

Charlie asked with a smile: "Your routine."

"You should show weakness first and beg for mercy,"

"And then find more people to help after you get out, right?"

The man quickly said: "No, no! Absolutely not! I swear to God!"

Charlie slapped him in the face and with a cold voice asked:

"Why do you never think of God when doing all this?"

"You hold a gun to collect protection money?"

"With a gun you are a burning angel, without a gun you are the Lamb of God."

"Do you believe in God or guns?"

"I...I..." The man was questioned by Charlie and didn't know how to answer.

He could only bite the bullet and said: "I...I believe in God..."

Charlie asked back: "Then do you think God can bless you today?"

"I..." The man was even more frightened for a moment.

He was afraid that no matter what he said, he would not be able to pass Charlie's test.

If he said he could, maybe Charlie would say he couldn't and then shoot him.

If he said he couldn't, if Charlie said "You're right"

And then shot his head off, wouldn't he be dead anyway?

At this moment, he was almost desperate and could only beg Charlie:

"Brother, please spare my life, I... I don't want to die..."

"I will never join a gang again, I swear!"

Charlie saw his fear. With an extreme expression, he smiled slightly and said:

"There is no chance of survival, it depends on whether you can grasp it."

When the man heard this, he quickly cried and said:

"I am willing to grasp it, I will definitely grasp it!"

Charlie nodded, took out the magazine from the pistol,

Then handed the magazine to him and said, "Don't you like people to taste the bullets?"

"Come on, take all the bullets in this gun and eat them!"

"I'm warning you, eat them all, and don't leave any!"

"The ones you do not eat, I will shoot you with those."

# Chapter 5781

Seeing Charlie's serious expression and his brows and eyes filled with murderous intent,

The gangster immediately trembled with fear.

At this moment, he had no doubts about Charlie's warning.

If he didn't swallow the bullet obediently as he said,

He would definitely kill him.

However, the thought of swallowing bullets made him feel frightened.

It's easy to swallow it in, but maybe it's not that easy to pull it out.

At a certain moment, he thought about whether to use the name of Burning Angel to scare Charlie again,

Or use the Taoist trick so that Charlie could give him face.

Once the other party felt that he had gained face,

Once they are satisfied, everyone can gradually turn their hostility into friendship from the initial tense situation,

And finally, after a few glasses of wine, they will become brothers from all over the world.

This situation is not only common in China but also in the United States.

The key lies in whether you can hit the point where the opponent is satisfied.

However, when the words of peace came to his lips, he did not dare to say them.

He had just received a few slaps from Charlie,

And it felt like the bones in his face were about to be broken.

It was useless to beg for mercy.

If he kept talking for peace at this time, he was afraid he would continue to be beaten.

Just when he didn't know what to do, a follower beside him thought of something with him.

So the follower mustered up the courage to speak:

"Sir, this matter today is probably a misunderstanding."

"We Burning Angels are not unreasonable people."

"If you give us a face, we can take you to talk to our boss."

"If we meet and make peace with each other,"

"We might become friends or even partners in the future."

"Why make the relationship so tense?"

The man saw his follower speaking out what he was thinking,

And he quickly became excited. He nodded and said:

"Yes, yes, sir, you see, you know kung fu, you can fight, and you have courage."

"Burning Angels has territory if we can reach cooperation,"

"We will definitely be able to kill everyone, don't you think so?"

Charlie looking at the gangster smiled and said,

"You are quite smart, and you also know how to turn enemies into friends."

The gangster nodded repeatedly:

"Yes, yes... he has always been very smart..."

Charlie smiled and said: "You have such a smart little brother to speak for you."

"If I don't sell him some face, I will really be sorry for his intelligence."

When the man heard this, he was so excited that he almost cried.

He thought in his heart that Charlie was really ready to let him go!

Although the beating was indeed very painful,

At least there was no need to swallow bullets.

As long as he can escape today's disaster,

He will tell the boss about it when he gets back.

It's all nonsense to turn a fight into friendship.

They must seize the opportunity. Kill him to avenge today's disgrace.

Just when he thought Charlie would let him go and was looking forward to revenge on him tenfold or a hundredfold,

Charlie suddenly said: "I will give you my forgiveness, do you want to give it a try?"

The man was immediately excited and said quickly:

"I want it! I want it! Dear Sir,"

"I, Will Johnson, beg for your forgiveness!"

While speaking he looked at Charlie expectantly,

Waiting for his forgiveness to come.

Charlie looked at him, smiled slightly, and said loudly:

"It is really not easy to swallow these bullets,"

"So I will give you my forgiveness now!"

After that, he directly held the bullet in his hand and used his middle finger and ring finger to pinch it.

He pinched the cartridge case, then pinched the warhead with his thumb and forefinger,

And then he pushed hard.

Several people were stunned to find that the bullet's warhead was completely pushed out of the cartridge case by Charlie with two fingers!

They are all gang members and have been dealing with guns all year round.

They have also tried to disassemble the warheads of bullets.

## Chapter 5782

However, the connection between the warheads and the cartridge cases on standard bullets is very strong and stable.

If you want to disassemble them, you must use professional equipment,

At least a vise. It takes a long time to twist it.

However, they did not expect that Charlie could easily push the bullet away with his fingers.

Everyone was stunned when they saw it,

And they couldn't help but feel scared.

He could easily pull out the bullet head with his fingers.

What if he punched the face with all his strength and their brains wouldn't be smashed out?

However, at this time, several people didn't understand why Charlie suddenly wanted to pull out the bullet's warhead,

And they didn't understand what this had to do with the forgiveness he mentioned.

At this time, Charlie looked at the man,

Raised the bullet in his hand that had been separated from head to tail,

Smiled slightly, and said: "Don't you want forgiveness?"

"This is my forgiveness. The whole bullet is hard to swallow,"

"So I'll give it to you. It will be easier for you to swallow if it is broken up."

The man fell into hell instantly, staring at Charlie in horror,

Unable to believe that such words came from the mouth of the handsome young man in front of him.

Charlie reminded him at this time: "By the way,"

"Don't forget to thank your good brother,"

"He helped you get this good opportunity for forgiveness."

When the little brother heard this, his face suddenly turned pale,

And he looked at the man with dodges, while shaking his head vigorously.

And that man was almost going crazy with hatred.

If he had known that Charlie was playing this kind of damaging trick,

He should have swallowed the whole bullet honestly.

After all, if the whole bullet goes in and the whole bullet comes out,

The gunpowder inside will not leak into the stomach.

It's worse now, he will have to swallow the gunpowder himself.

Terrified, he looked at Charlie crying and said:

"Sir...this...there is gunpowder in it!"

Charlie nodded: "I know, what's wrong with the gunpowder?"

The man almost collapsed and begged:

"If you eat gunpowder, you will die..."

Charlie said with an indifferent expression:

"Look at you, you are suffering from illiteracy."

"If you study a few more years and join a gang less, you can also know that the propellant of the pistol is single-base gunpowder,"

"And its composition is nothing more than nitrocellulose."

"This kind of stuff is not poisonous and you will not die if you eat it."

The man said in horror: "I don't believe it... you must be lying to me!"

Charlie sneered, pinched his mouth, and poured all the propellant in the bullet into his mouth.

A strong and bitter chemical smell entered his mouth.

The man's tongue was stung and it hurt.

He was choked and wanted to cough.

But before he could cough out, Charlie stuffed the warhead and cartridge case again.

Which went in and clasped his jaw hard at the same time, so that he couldn't open his mouth at all.

Immediately, Charlie said expressionlessly:

"You'd better swallow the bullets and shells honestly,"

"Otherwise there will be more and more in your mouth in a while,"

"And if you still can't swallow it, I will use a stick to help you poke it in!"

After that, Charlie withdrew another bullet from the magazine with one hand,

And then easily pulled out the warhead in the same way.

The man was so frightened that he finally understood that there was no possibility of negotiating terms with Charlie.

Once he tried to negotiate terms, not only would he not receive any forgiveness,

But he would also be punished by him.

He also knew that Charlie would never let him go easily.

The only way he wanted to leave this roast goose shop and Chinatown alive today was to completely comply with all of Charlie's instructions.

Thinking of this, he collapsed and could only grit his teeth and swallow the metal bullets and shells into his belly.

Before he could finish swallowing one bullet,

Charlie pinched his mouth open again and poured all the gunpowder from the other bullet into his mouth.

The other followers felt their hearts palpitate as they watched,

And at the same time, they were frightened and couldn't help but feel happy in their hearts.

Fortunately, the yellow-skinned evil star in front of them did not use such cruel methods on themselves.

But just when they breathed a sigh of relief, Charlie suddenly said:

"All of you who come in with guns must also eat all the bullets in the guns for me."

"Anyone who dares to disobey will suffer the same consequences."

"Same as him!"

## Chapter 5783

In this humble roast goose shop, a gical and interesting scene is taking place.

The five gang members, who were once vicious and arrogant, were now kneeling on the ground,

Stuffing yellow, orange, and golden bullets into their mouths.

9mm pistol bullets are thick and fat and are much more painful to swallow than the largest capsules.

Moreover, these people did not even have a glass of water to take the medicine, So they could only grit their teeth and swallow it raw.

The worst of all was Will Johnson.

Because his sister is one of the mistresses of the boss of Burning Angel,

And he is born with a ruthless nature and is very ruthless,

So he also mixed with the middle managers in Burning Angel,

And the boss gave him this Chinatown area to manage.

It's just that this person who is carrying the weight is especially miserable right now.

Although his four younger brothers were in extreme pain from swallowing the 9mm pistol bullets,

Fortunately, the 9mm pistol bullets were rounder in shape,

So they could swallow them even though they gritted their teeth and fought tooth and nail.

But Will Jackson is miserable.

What he ate was Charlie's hand-disassembled version.

Charlie personally disassembled each bullet, poured the propellant into his mouth,

And then stuffed the disassembled warhead and cartridge case into his mouth.

Forced him to swallow it as quickly as possible.

After the cartridge case lost its warhead, the seams were very sharp and would often get stuck on Jackson's tonsils, but Charlie didn't give him a chance to slide it down slowly,

So he could only swallow it as hard as he could.

After taking one pill, he started to vomit blood while swallowing it.

His throat, mouth, and esophagus were all scratched by the bullet casing.

Seeing his mouth full of blood and still swallowing desperately,  
Jordan on the side couldn't accept it.

He tried his best to control the urge to vomit and turned his head to the side.

Charlie saw him and asked him, "Jordan, how many times have you seen this him?"

Jordan quickly replied, "Mr. Wade, I...I've seen him maybe three or four times..."

Charlie nodded and said, "Come on, give me a careful review."

"Every time you saw him, he... what did he do?"

Jordan thought for a moment and said truthfully,

"The first time I met him, he went to Aunt Wang's cattle shop next door to collect protection money."

"Because Aunt Wang didn't speak English,"

"She used a broom to chase him away. He brought people to break Aunt Wang's hands and legs..."

Will quickly defended, "That old woman hit me first, it was in self-defense..."

Charlie grabbed his left wrist and used a little force.

The entire left hand was suddenly broken from the wrist,

Will screamed in pain, Charlie said with a cold face,

"You came in today, I broke your hand, it was for self-defense."

Johnson almost collapsed, but what made him collapse even more was that Charlie picked up the pistol with the magazine removed,

Grabbed the barrel of the gun and used the pistol as a hammer,

And suddenly smashed it against his right ankle.

With a crisp cracking sound, Will almost fainted from the pain.

But Charlie didn't give him a chance to faint.

He raised the gun and then smashed his left ankle into a bloody mess.

Immediately, Charlie ignored his wailing crazily, and asked Jordan again,

"Go on."

Jordan said, "The second time I saw him, he came to my store,"

"And he asked me to give him Three thousand dollars,"

"But I couldn't come up with it, so he took these people and beat me up,"

"And said that today is the deadline for me."

Charlie looked at Jordan's dark and purple face and nodded slightly.

He nodded, grabbed Will by the collar, slapped him four or five times in the face,

Until the capillaries on his face oozed blood and then threw him aside.

Then, he asked Jordan, "What about the third time?"

Jordan said, "The third time was the night before yesterday."

"He was sitting in a Cadillac. The car was parked on the corner of the street."

"Achren from the Chinese gang just came out of the nightclub and was dragged into the car by his younger brother."

"Then I heard a gunshot, and then saw a cloud of blood mist popping out from the rear door of the car,"

"And then Achren's body was pushed out, and the Cadillac drove away..."

Charlie nodded and asked again "That Achren, did he usually bully men and women in Chinatown?"

Jordan shook his head and said, "The Chinese Gang is quite interesting in Chinatown."

"Although it collects a certain amount of protection money from us,"

"They really know how to help, solve some problems, especially for those of us who are illegal immigrants."

"There are always people bullying us. The Chinese Gang will usually help us, and their fees are relatively reasonable."

"After all, when you do small business here, you don't have to pay taxes,"

"And protection fees are guaranteed. Indispensable, in comparison, the Chinese gang is much more kind..."

"Okay." Charlie asked again, "You said Will Johnson was sitting in the car at that time."

"Where was he sitting?"

Jordan dodges a little, but He still mustered up the courage to say,

"He was sitting behind the passenger seat."

Charlie continued to ask, "The position where Achren was taken into the car was the door behind the driver's seat?"

Jordan nodded, "Yes..."

"Okay." Charlie paused and asked him, "Did you see clearly who shot?"

Jordan shook his head and said, "I didn't see clearly who shot, but after Achren died,"

"The window behind the passenger seat was lowered,"

“And I saw the threatening man Johnson spitting.”

Charlie looked at Will and asked sternly,

“Let me ask you, did you kill Achren?”

Will Johnson quickly shook his head and said, “It wasn’t me. Not me!”

Charlie looked at the other four people and said,

“If any of the four of you tells me the truth, you can save five bullets,”

“But if you don’t tell the truth or refuse to answer my questions,”

“I will ask you to take apart all your pistols and eat them while eating those bullets.”

The four of them were nervous and sweating profusely.

Charlie told them to eat all the parts of the pistol, which really scared them.

After eating more than a dozen bullets, they would still have a chance to excrete them slowly.

But if they eat the parts of a pistol, it would be better to be shot with a pistol directly.

That way at least they can have an easy journey.

As a result, several people came out to correct him,

Claiming that it was Will who shot and killed the gang member Achren.

Will Johnson’s face turned pale, and he wanted to defend himself,

But when he thought that these people had betrayed him,

If he defended himself now, he might even touch Charlie’s backscale.

He was extremely frightened when he thought that Charlie would repay him twice as much for the evil he had done.

He killed Achren. Could it be that Charlie also wanted to kill him today?!

Just when he was frightened and uneasy, Charlie asked Jordan,

“Do you know the boss of the Chinese Gang?”

Jordan nodded quickly and said, “Yes, his name is Darwin Ni. He used to come to the store often.”

Uncle Zhong on the side said. “Master, Darwin smuggled himself to Hong Kong from the mainland in the early years, and then smuggled himself to the United States from Hong Kong.”

“Although he was in a gang, he was not a bad person.”

Charlie nodded and asked Jordan, “Can you find him?”

Jordan thought for a while, "Mr. Wade, it seems that he ran away to avoid the limelight."

"I'm afraid it won't be so easy to find him now."

Hogan said, "He must not have left Chinatown."

"Maybe he is hiding in Monroe Hair Salon now. I understand."

"His habit is to always believe that the most dangerous place is the safest."

## Chapter 5784

Jordan exclaimed, "No way, Uncle Zhong, how could someone in Chinatown know that the proprietress of Monroe Hair Salon is taking Viagra, how dare he hide at this time? Over there..."

Uncle Zhong said, "Don't ask so many questions."

"Go directly to Monroe Hair Salon and tell the proprietress there that I'm back and invite him to come and meet me."

After hearing Hogan's order, Jordan ran out quickly.

Although Chinatown is a very complicated small society,

It is only such a big place after all, so after staying here for a long time, they are all very familiar with each other.

Just like its name, this is just a street, a street where Chinese people gather in large numbers.

The relationship between everyone here is like that of neighbors on the street.

Although there are some shameless, sinister, and cunning people in the neighborhood,

They generally help and support each other.

In the early years, the Chinese who had just arrived in the United States were bullied.

They could only live together in groups to keep the cohesion.

Chinese gangs also developed naturally in this environment.

At first, in order to protect themselves, the Chinese organized some young and strong laborers to jointly fight against others.

Over time, with the continuous development of society, various professions were constantly subdivided,

And some people who occasionally united to stand up for other people,

They gradually regarded this kind of thing as a profession, and the Chinese gang was officially established.

From the history of the Chinese Gang, we can see that from the moment of its birth,

This Gang has not been a gangster gang that bullies in the market and bullies men and women.

Most of the gangs with a long history in the United States developed during the Prohibition period.

Their methods of making money are basically all against U.S. government laws.

Therefore, several gangs have a long history. Over a hundred years of development, They have developed an instinct feature, that is, the more the government does not allow them to do,

The more they must do it, and they must do it bigger and stronger.

A few minutes later, Jordan rushed over with a middle-aged man who looked to be in his 40s.

As soon as the man entered the door and saw Hogan, he said excitedly:

“Brother Zhong, you are back!”

This man was Darwin Ni, the boss of the Chinese gang in New York’s Chinatown.

When Hogan saw that Darwin’s neck was wrapped with thick gauze, he quickly asked:

“Darwin, what’s wrong with your neck?”

Darwin sighed: “Don’t mention it, I was shot when I came home,”

“And the bullet grazed the neck. If they were more accurate, I would have reported to the Lord of Hell by now.”

As he said that, he looked at the five miserable guys in the corner and asked in horror:

“Brother Zhong, this... what is going on?”

Hogan asked him: “Jordan didn’t tell you?”

Darwin said: “Jordan only said that you had something important to do with me,”

“But didn’t say what the specific situation was.”

Hogan nodded and said to him: “These people came to the store to collect protection money,”

“But Mr. Wade taught them a lesson.”

After that, he said to Charlie: “Mr. Wade, this is Darwin Ni, the boss of the Chinese Gang.”

Darwin looked at Charlie in shock, but he dared not imagine that these vicious members of the Burning Angel were beaten into such a state by the young man in front of him.

At this time, Hogan said to him again: “Darwin, let me introduce you.”

“This is Mr. Wade. He also wanted to see you this time.”

Darwin came back to his senses. Although he didn't know who Charlie was, He saw that He was able to torture these five people into inhuman form on his own, So he also guessed that Charlie's origin was definitely unusual.

So, he quickly walked up to Charlie and said with some respect:

“Hello, Mr. Wade, I am Darwin Ni. Nice to meet you!”

Charlie nodded slightly and asked him: “How many people are there in your gang?”

Darwin said truthfully: “There were almost a hundred people before,”

“But now except for the dead and injured brothers, the rest have basically fled.”

Charlie frowned and said: “You had nearly a hundred people,”

“How can you let these five ba5tards walk through your territory?”

Darwin said with shame: “Mr. Wade... Behind these five people is Burning Angels,”

“And behind Burning Angels are the Italians who actually control more than a dozen large and small gangs in New York,”

“With at least several thousand people. We are no match for them at all...”

Charlie said coldly: “So what if there are thousands of people?”

“I have never heard of a gang fight involving thousands of people in the United States.”

“Can he still lead thousands of people into Chinatown?”

Darwin said awkwardly: “Mr. Wade, you don't know something...”

“These people are extremely ruthless. They killed several core members of our Gang overtly and covertly.”

“The brothers were scared and all of them backed down...”

Charlie asked him: “How many of your people got killed by the Burning Angel?”

Darwin blurted out: “They killed eleven brothers!”

Charlie frowned and asked again: “How many of them have you killed?”

Darwin shook his head dejectedly: “Not a single one...”

As he said that, Darwin quickly explained: “We are a minority gang and cannot fight against local snakes like them,”

“So we didn't want to fight with them from the beginning,”

“If we dare to touch one of their people, they would kill us ten times...”

Charlie frowned and said, “What happened to the gangs of ethnic minorities?”

“Gangs of South Korea, Vietnam, and Algeria are also gangs composed of ethnic minorities.”

“Like you, they were beaten by the Burning Angels and fled?”

“Well...” Darwin dodged Charlie’s aggressive eyes and said hesitantly:

“I haven’t heard of any conflict between them and the Burning Angel yet...”

Charlie pointed at the five people and asked Darwin:

“Have you ever thought about it? Why do these people dare not bully Korean gangs or Vietnamese gangs,”

“But come to bully you instead?”

Darwin pursed his lips and lowered his head in shame.

When Charlie saw that he was silent, he turned to ask Will Johnson:

“Come on, Will, tell me, why don’t you go to Koreatown to grab the land? Instead, you come to Chinatown?”

Will Johnson said tremblingly: “Because... because the Koreans have too much firepower...”

“Since 1992, we have rarely had direct conflicts with the Koreans...”

Charlie nodded, and then asked Darwin: “Do you know why they started in 1992? Why would you not dare to provoke Koreans after the year?”

Darwin said shamefully: “I... I know... Koreans did gain some fame in the United States back then...”

Charlie said coldly: “You also know that fame is earned through hard work,”

“So as the boss of the Chinese Gang, why don’t you dare to lead your brothers to fight them to the end?”

“Don’t forget that standing behind you is not only your nearly a hundred brothers but also the entire Chinatown.”

“Those compatriots who rely on your protection have paid you protection fees. If something happens and you run away, what will they do?”

Darwin was blushing at this time and wanted to bury his head in the ground.

Charlie continued to question: “Have you ever thought that if you back down, the vendors in Chinatown will have no choice but to be slaughtered by them?”

“In the future, everyone will know that the vendors in Chinatown are easy to bully,”

“And everyone will treat them as a piece of cake!”

“Today the Burning Angel wants to come and cut off a piece,”

“And tomorrow there may be the Frozen Demon coming to take a piece of the pie.”

“In a few days, even those cats and dogs that no one looks at may come over with their bowls and grab some chopsticks!”

“What’s more, what if you back down? Will they let you go if you back down?”

“If that’s the case, why do you, a majestic seven-foot-tall man and the boss of a gang, hide in a woman’s hair salon?”

Darwin was killed by Charlie’s series of pressing questions almost caused his spirit to collapse.

In the past two days, he has been tortured in his heart.

His brothers have had accidents one after another, and even he himself almost died.

However, as the boss, he has never been able to muster up the courage to fight the Burning Angel to the end,

Just because he was afraid from the beginning.

The hands were afraid of the feet, so the Burning Angel became more and more rampant, killing many key members of the Chinese Gang one after another,

Directly destroying the mentality of the entire Chinese Gang.

In the past two days, Darwin also regretted very much.

He regretted that he did not immediately go all out to fight with the Burning Angels to the end.

If he had fought with them to the end with all his life,

They might have given up and so many brothers later would not have risked their lives...

Thinking of this, with shame and self-blame, Darwin could no longer hold back his emotions.

He choked with red eyes and said: “It’s all my fault. I’m too weak.”

“I just thought that if I can’t offend them,”

“I might as well step back and the world will be brighter.”

“But I didn’t expect that after I took a step back,”

“They forced me to retreat all the way to the edge of the cliff and refused to stop.”

“But now it’s too late to wake up, and it’s impossible for my dead brother to come back...”

Charlie said calmly: “It’s not too late to wake up now.”

After saying that, he stuffed the magazine in his hand into the pistol,  
Then handed the pistol to him and said:

“There are five bullets in here if you really wake up,”

“Think about how Achren died, and then think about how to avenge him!”

# Chapter 5785

Charlie's words immediately scared the five people including Johnson out of their wits!

How could they have imagined that they had endured the humiliation and been tortured by Charlie until now?

They originally hoped that he would let them go,

But who would have thought that he actually found the boss of the Chinese gang,

And even hinted for him to kill them.

The five people were horrified.

Johnson said vaguely with blood in his mouth:

"Mr. Wade... we have done as you asked, please spare our lives..."

Charlie smiled and said: "If begging for mercy is useful,"

You would have spared the lives of those who begged you."

"Now, thinking back to those people you killed,"

"Did they beg you before they died?"

After saying that, Charlie ignored Johnson,

But he put the gun directly into Darwin's hand and said coldly:

“What are you still doing?”

Looking at the pistol in front of him, Darwin looked particularly struggling.

Darwin naturally has a deep hatred for Burning Angel.

However, when Charlie handed the gun to his hand,

He began to feel inexplicably nervous.

He had been working hard in the Chinese gang for many years.

Although he often fought with others,

But killing someone with his own hands had never happened before.

Charlie suddenly handed him the gun and reminded him that there were five bullets in the gun.

His intention was very obvious,

Which was to let him pick up the gun and kill all five enemies one by one.

Darwin couldn't help but start to worry.

He was wondering if he really shot and killed these five people here,

Would he have to live the rest of his life hard under the pursuit of the police and the pursuit of the Burning Angels?

After all, he didn't feel that the Chinese gang had any chance of winning against the Burning Angel.

He couldn't resist even a Burning Angel, let alone the Italian behind the Burning Angel.

However, what Charlie said just now really stimulated him deeply.

Under his leadership, it's okay that the Chinese Gang failed to get out of Chinatown.

Now they are still being killed by the opponent.

Now the entire Chinatown has completely become the territory of the Burning Angel.

If he runs away, the Chinese Gang will also be completely destroyed and just become a history.

At that time, not only will the dead brothers die with their eyes open,

But even the vendors in the entire Chinatown will be greatly negatively affected.

For a moment, Darwin experienced the entanglement and struggle that he had never experienced in his life.

Charlie felt a little disappointed when he saw him hesitating again and again and said coldly:

"Fearless, hesitant, timid, and indecisive!"

"Having a boss like you is really a great pity for your Gang and even the entire Chinatown!"

Darwin was immediately ashamed but still did not make a choice between the two.

Just when he didn't know what to do,

Jordan on the side suddenly walked up to Charlie, stretched out a hand, and said firmly:

"Mr. Wade, give me the gun, I'll do it!"

Hogan smiled slightly startled, looked at him with a slight frown, and asked:

"Jordan, if you kill someone, you may not be able to stay in the United States anymore."

"It doesn't matter, Uncle Zhong!"

Jordan clenched his fists and said seriously:

"Uncle Zhong, if I don't get rid of them, I can only continue to be bullied and exploited by them when I stay in the United States!"

"What's more, they themselves deserve to be killed!"

"And I am an illegal immigrant in the United States."

"The worst-case scenario is to kill them and then find a ship to leave the country!"

"I would rather never come back than take this slavish breath!"

After that, he gritted his teeth and said sternly:

"But before I leave the United States, I must fight with all my life."

"Kill more of their lives! Revenge for innocent people who died!"

Hogan wanted to say something, but he held back the words as he spoke.

He just looked at Charlie subconsciously, waiting for him to speak.



## Chapter 5786

Charlie looked at Jordan and said very seriously:

"Jordan, if you shoot, you still have two options to choose from."

"The first way, I will arrange for someone to send you out of the United States overnight,"

"Just like you said and you will never come back."

Speaking of this, Charlie paused slightly, and his tone became a little higher, and he continued:

"As for the second way, stay here and kill more people who deserve to be killed!"

Jordan asked Charlie with a blank expression:

"Mr. Wade, what do you mean by the second way?"

Charlie said with a serious expression and a firm tone:

"Stay here and I will help you form a new gang."

"From today on, anyone who insults you will be punished."

"Kill them! Anyone who insults your brothers and sisters and the innocents, you will deal with them!"

Jordan was stunned on the spot.

After hesitating for a few seconds, his eyes gradually became determined, and he nodded heavily:

"Mr. Wade! I choose No. Two!"

Charlie reminded: "Once you choose the second option,"

"I'm afraid there will be no turning back in your life."

"Are you really sure you want to choose this way?"

Jordan said without hesitation: "Mr. Wade, I'm sure!"

After saying that, he glanced at Darwin and said seriously: "Mr. Darwin is a good person, but he is not suitable to lead the Gang."

"Over the years I have been in Chinatown, I have seen the Chinese Gang getting weaker and weaker,"

"And watching my compatriots getting older."

"As the situation becomes more and more disorganized and I see those outside devils getting more and more advanced,"

"I really feel unwilling to experience so!"

"If I have the opportunity to lead the Chinese Gang,"

"I must do my best to make the Chinese Gang grow and develop,"

"Making it an existence that no one in New York dares to mess with!"

Charlie nodded, looked at Hogan, and asked, "Uncle Zhong, what do you think?"

Hogan sighed softly and said, "Since Jordan has made his own choice,"

"I will naturally support him. I understand his character."

"He is decisive and determined in doing things, and has extraordinary courage."

"He is indeed more suitable to lead the Chinese gang than Darwin."

"And with the help of the young master, I also believe that Jordan will be able to open roads in the mountains and build bridges in the water with the help of the young master!"

Charlie nodded slightly.

He could see that Hogan did not want Jordan to take this road.

But he believed that Hogan would be able to see that deep down in Jordan's heart,

He had already made his choice, just like him.

So, he looked at Darwin who looked embarrassed, and asked,

"What do you think about this Mr. Ni?"

Darwin coughed twice and hesitated:

"Nowadays, members of the Chinese gang are dying and escaping."

"Mr. Wade wants to support Jordan to become the boss of the Chinese gang,"

"But with only him as a fresh commander, I'm afraid it will be difficult to develop..."

Charlie said coldly: "Mr. Ni, looking down on yourself and badmouthing others will only make you a self-pitying and resentful human."

"It will lower your horizons, lower your status, and make you a useless trash,"

"If you think about it carefully, if Jordan fails, what good will it do to you?"

"Will it allow you to walk out of the hair salon with confidence and boldness?"

"Will it allow you to become the big brother of the Chinese gang again and dominate Chinatown?"

Charlie at this point, without waiting for Darwin's answer, continued:

"I tell you, no! If Jordan fails, you will either never leave the hair salon in this life,"

"Or you will be able to return to Chinatown in this life!"

"And for you, there will never be another chance to turn around in this life!"

Then, Charlie looked at him and asked,

"What if Jordan succeeds? If you take a step back,"

"You can continue to live in Chinatown openly."

"If you take a step further, maybe you can become the core backbone of the Chinese Gang,"

"I believe you have your own considerations about which one is more important,"

"Which one is better or worse!"

Darwin felt ashamed when he heard this.

He really doesn't think highly of Jordan, not to mention, Charlie.

# Chapter 5787

So when Darwin heard this, he felt ashamed.

He really doesn't think highly of Jordan, what's more, Charlie is also a new face who appeared from nowhere.

He doesn't believe that Charlie has the strength to help him,

Or to help Jordan, under the pressure of Burning Angel.

Or even let his gang come back to power in this area.

However, he had to admit one thing,

That is, Jordan, a young man who was inexperienced in the world, was indeed more courageous than himself.

Although he didn't really believe in Charlie's ability,

Darwin also had his own worries.

If he rejected Charlie, he would have no choice but to continue hiding,

And he would never be able to turn around again in this life.

However, if he cooperates today, there may be a chance to turn around.

Thinking of this, he couldn't help but look at Hogan aside.

In his opinion, Hogan is a great person.

Although he has spent his life in this shop cooking roast goose for so many years,

He is definitely the smartest person in Chinatown.

Since he believes in Charlie, it proves that Charlie must be more powerful than he imagined.

So, he made up his mind and said to Charlie:

"Mr. Wade, I am willing to cooperate with you. Whatever you need me to do, just ask me!"

Charlie said lightly: "Tell me about this Burning Angel,"

"Including the people behind them. Where do all the Italians come from?"

Darwin quickly said: "The Burning Angel is a gang that was just established in the past few years,"

"But its predecessor was the merger of several small gangs in New York."

"The reason for the merger is mainly due to the Italian gangs behind it."

"The Mafia and the Italian gangs are deeply rooted in the United States."

"After gradually being cleansed over the years,"

"They left the dirty work to the new gangs they supported."

"At least 50% of the profits of these new gangs must be handed over to them,"

He added: "Most of this mafia in the United States are dominated by families."

"In the past, the five major families were more famous,"

"But now the strongest one is actually the Zano family outside the five major families."

"The Burning Angel is loyal to the Zano family."

Charlie said: "They have the Zano family as their endorsement,"

"And then give more than half of the money they earn to this family."

"Strictly speaking, they specialize in sub-branding for the low-end market,"

"And the Zano family is absolutely the controlling shareholder."

Darwin nodded and said, "Mr. Wade is right to understand this."

"In fact, there are many such gangs under the Zano family."

"Most of the members of the Burning Angel are unskilled relatively low educated."

"So the main business is to grab land and collect protection fees."

"In addition, there are several organizations engaged in some slightly higher-end industries,"

"Such as those highly profitable contraband."

Hogan on the side introduced to Charlie:

"The Zano family generation of leaders is very smart."

"They have divided the business that was originally one-stop into multiple links,"

"And then handed over different links to different organizations,"

"And then the organizations cooperated with each other,"

"Checked and balanced each other, and guarded against each other."

# Chapter 5788

Charlie raised his eyebrows and said:

"Uncle, please give me a detailed introduction."

Hogan explained:

"My point of view is also based on some information circulated by the outside world and my own opinions,"

"When I was here before. What we have seen and heard may not be accurate,"

"But it should not be too far off."

After speaking, Hogan said seriously:

"Actually, the Zano family's biggest source of income has always been drug smuggling and sales,"

"They have a gang dedicated to smuggling,"

"A gang dedicated to sales,"

"And many low-level gangs like the Burning Angels that compete for territory across the United States."

"The basic structure of this organization is to first send out a large number of Low-level gangs to continue to expand their sphere of influence across the country."

"After they choose a neighborhood, they will settle in this neighborhood,"

"And then use violent means to quickly gain absolute rights to occupy the neighborhood."

"After they complete their occupation, a team specializing in drug sales will Expand the business to the territory newly occupied by the low-level gangs,"

"And directly monopolize the drug trade in this area."

"The low-level gangs that first occupied the sphere of influence will also provide cover and security for these drug dealers."

Charlie nodded, smacked his lips and said:

"I understand, it is to send robbers to rob a car first."

"After the robbers ransacked the people and finances in the car,"

"They then drive the car and carry another person."

"They go to their destinations to sell in order to make greater profits."

"Yes," Hogan said:

"However, it is not just drug dealers who are hitching a ride on this."

"In addition to monopolizing drug dealers,"

"They also run Casinos and flesh-and-blood businesses within their sphere of influence,"

"Within the scope of their monopoly, they do not allow others to open underground casinos and lend usury;"

"And they will also import a group of pr0stitutes to monopolize the flesh-and-blood business in this area,"

"And other flesh-and-blood organizations or individual practitioners must stop accepting customers."

Charlie couldn't help but smack his lips and said:

"This way of playing can indeed maximize the utilization of resources,"

"And each link can check and balance the other."

"It is better leaving all these businesses to a gang."

"The operation is much more stable."

"It seems that the Zano family really has some skills."

Hogan nodded and said: "The most powerful thing about the Zano family is that they hardly come forward to do anything illegal and criminal."

"There is almost no involvement in criminal business,"

"Which is completely different from the Italian Mafia of the past:"

"In the past, the Mafia would jump out and beat the chest and tell everyone that they killed this person."

"The Zano family's method is to order the murderer to dump the body at their door,"

"Then call the police immediately and tell the police that someone died at their door,"

"And they also take the initiative to hand over all surveillance records to the police."

"It seems that they hope to solve the case as soon as possible than the police."

Charlie asked curiously: "Uncle,"

"Are you telling the truth, or are you just using a metaphor?"

"It's the truth," Hogan replied.

# Chapter 5789

As Charlie spoke, a plan had already formed in his mind.

Will be here in New York for a while, so some problems should be solved thoroughly.

Since the Zano family has extended its tentacles to Chinatown and the store that Uncle Zhong has worked hard for decades is under threat, it deserves his attention.

So, he said to Jordan: "Jordan, go change out of this chef's clothes and come with me."

Jordan looked at the five Burning Angel members and asked quickly:

"Mr. Wade, what should they do? How about I kill them first? Shoot them one by one, never waste a bullet!"

The five people were so frightened that they shivered.

They never expected that the little cook who was bullied by them to the point where he didn't even dare to fart would now be iron-clad.

Now he wants to kill all five of them!

Seeing Jordan's firm expression, Charlie smiled slightly and said:

"It's too early to kill them now. Let Uncle Zhong and Darwin keep an eye on them first."

"After finishing the business, it won't be too late to kill them."

Hogan quickly asked: "Master What are your plans? Is there anything you need to do?"

Charlie smiled and said, "No, Uncle Zhong, after Jordan and I leave,"

"You will close the shop and wait here for us to come back."

"If during this period, some unsighted people come looking for trouble,"

"You use these five people as hostages and call Stella immediately."

In New York, there is nothing that Stella can't handle.

Let alone some gangsters, even the Zano family is nothing in front of her.

But Charlie didn't want Stella to come forward to help.

Once she comes forward, this matter will not be so interesting.

However, Charlie also knew that he was incapable of doing anything else.

If he took Jordan to see the Zano family, he would have to guard against the roast goose shop being targeted by other members of the Burning Angel.

Hogan naturally knew Charlie's intention and nodded lightly.

Charlie asked Darwin again: "You have been living in New York for many years."

"Do you know the specific situation of the Zano family?"

"For example, where they live, how many people they have, and the name of the person in charge."

Darwin quickly said: "The Zano family lives near Long Island, and there is a Zano Manor."

"The mafia is relatively prosperous, and the direct family members have a large population."

"I estimate there are at least thirty or fifty people. The current patriarch of the Zano family is Antonio Zano."

"Okay." Charlie nodded and said to Hogan:

"Uncle Zhong, I will take Jordan to the Zano Manor."

"If everything goes well, I will be back within two hours."

Hogan said quickly: "Young master, please be more careful!"

...

The Zano family, from Sicily, has been dominant in New York for decades.

This family has been a member of the Mafia for generations,

The family keepsake that they have held for decades is a Thompson submachine gun produced during World War II.

It is said that after the old Zano, who was in charge of the Zano family,

Sold his assets in Sicily and came to New York, he gradually established a foothold in the American underworld with a Thompson submachine gun.

And that submachine gun, known as the Chicago typewriter, became the spiritual inheritance of the Zano family.

It is said that until the year before last, this submachine gun was hung in the position on the wall of the main hall of Zano Manor until the new generation of Zano leaders Deciding to clear his name, took the gun off the wall.

However, taking off this gun does not mean that the Zano family will wash their hands of the situation.

On the contrary, after they split all the illegal business and gave it to the vest gangs below who seemed to have nothing to do with the Zano family,

They secretly continued to promote those gangs to conquer cities in New York and even the entire East Coast,

So as to increase the number of people. Their sphere of influence has comprehensively increased their illegal income.

On the surface, the Zano family, led by Antonio Zano, the leader of this generation, is doing its best to clear its identity and move closer to the upper class.

Antonio Zano knew very well that the more powerful the upper class were, the more they needed tools like the Mafia.

However, they are hypocritical and will not allow themselves to cooperate with the mafia openly.

This means that if a mafia family wants to gain their favor, the first thing they need to do is to clean themselves up.

To put it simply, what the upper class now needs is not a shameful chamber pot hidden under the bed.

What they need is a toilet that can be placed openly in the toilet, is bright and clean, and does not smell at all.

The traditional Mafia is just a dirty and smelly chamber pot,

So Antonio Zano really wants to lead the Zano family to complete the transformation from chamber pots to toilets.

At this time, Antonio Zano was directing his family members and close men in his manor to arrange the manor in a grand manner.

Today, he was going to receive a distinguished guest from afar at his manor.

In order to welcome this distinguished guest,

All members of the Zano family put down their affairs early and rushed home to prepare.

The distinguished guest invited this time is extremely important to the next development of the Zano family.

If cooperation can be reached, the Zano family Will go to the next level.

# Chapter 5790

In the main hall of Zano Manor, a large dining table more than ten meters long has been set up.

The dining table is decorated with flowers flown from France,

As well as the best crystal tableware and metal cutlery.

Forty-seven-year-old Antonio watched the maids busy and arranged everything in an orderly manner,

With anticipation written on his face.

At this time, his seven or eight brothers and sisters, their children,

And their children's spouses were all dressed up and ready, and they all came forward to say hello to Antonio.

Antonio fully plays the role of a patriarch. He greets everyone cordially and is a gentleman.

After almost all the immediate family members lined up to say hello,

Except for his 22-year-old daughter, Antonio couldn't help but ask his brother beside him:

"Marco, where is Julia?"

Marco Zano said quickly: "Brother, I haven't seen Julia all night."

"This child!" Antonio said dissatisfied: "She has been obedient all her life,"

"Why does she have to go against me this time!"

"Doesn't she realize that I gave her a perfect life?"

Marco Zano complimented: "Brother, after all, Julia is still young and lacks social experience."

"Give her more time, she will not only understand your good intentions,"

"But even she will be very grateful to you!"

"Yes!" Antonio nodded slightly, and then he arranged his suit, shirt, and bow tie,

And asked Marco very conceitedly: "How is it? I look good now. Don't you feel like "The Godfather" when you look at me?"

"Yes, of course!" Marco praised:

"Brother, in the entire United States, and even in the entire Europe and America,"

"No one is closer to Marlon Brando than you!"

Antonio nodded slightly and smiled calmly:

"I, Antonio Zano, will definitely become the most successful godfather in history!"

At this time, Antonio's youngest brother Francisco ran over and said respectfully:

"Brother, your distinguished guest's plane has landed at JFK Airport!"

"Expect to arrive at the manor in forty minutes!"

"Very good!" Antonio couldn't hold back the excitement in his heart and said loudly:

"It depends on tonight whether we can go to the next level!"

After that, he carefully smoothed his hair with his palms and said:

"You guys stay here and watch, I'm going to find Julia!"

At the same time.

Charlie drove the inconspicuous Chevrolet, carrying the nervous and anxious Jordan, to the outskirts of Zano Manor.

The two of them could see from the outside that Zano Manor was very busy at this time.

The entire manor was brightly lit, and a large number of mafia members in black suits stood upright on both sides of the door,

As if they were waiting for someone important.

Charlie saw this from afar and couldn't help but smile:

"It seems that we are here today. The Zano family seems to have some major activities."

Jordan swallowed his saliva and asked Charlie:

"Mr. Wade, what is this?"

"At a glance, there seem like at least hundreds of people."

"Do we really want to go in and cause trouble?"

Charlie smiled and said, "Didn't I say that I want to act a play with them?"

"You will follow me later. What should I do? Tell me what to do, just look at my eyes."

After saying that, Charlie added: "But if you are really worried, I can go by myself."

Jordan said without thinking: "Mr. Wade, I am indeed worried,"

"But I'm not afraid! As long as you tell me what to do, I will do it!"

"Okay." Charlie nodded and said, "Let's wait for a good time."

...

At this moment, inside the Zano manor.

Antonio paced to the door of his daughter Julia's room.

He paced at the door for a moment, then stepped forward and knocked on the door.

"Julia, it's me, Dad."

There was no response in the room.

Antonio had no choice but to speak patiently outside the door:

"Julia, you have to know that our tradition is that everything is for the family."

"The reason why I sit in this position today is not for my personal honor,"

"Disgrace or wealth. Everything is For the future of our family,"

"I hope you can, like me, always put the interests of the family first!"

## Chapter 5791

In the room, a young girl angrily

“Everything for the family is just and Will,”

“You can’t impose your personal thoughts and wishes on me!”

“If that happens, I would rather leave this family!”

Antonio said angrily: “Listen to what ba5tard words you said!”

“Don’t forget You are a girl with the blood of Zano flowing in your bones!”

When he saw that his daughter did not respond, he continued to roar aggressively:

“Julia, don’t think that this matter can get over without talking!”

“I will give you three seconds to think about it.”

“If you are sure If you want to confront me,”

“Then I will arrange for you to go to the airport now!”

After that, he raised his voice a little and shouted:

“One! Two!”

The girl in the room shouted nervously:

“Okay, okay! I listen to you! I listen to you!”

Antonio then calmed down a little and said coldly:

“That’s more or less the same! Remember!”

“A Zano girl will serve her family all her life!”

The girl inside said helplessly: “Okay, you are all right.”

“Now please leave. I need some time to dress up!”

Antonio said coldly: “I will give you ten minutes.”

“During these ten minutes, I will wait for you here!”

The girl could only say: “It’s up to you.”

“If you’re willing to wait, no one will stop you.”

Antonio sneered and reminded: “Julia, I advise you not to try to escape through the window,”

“Because I have already arranged it outside your window.”

“There are people watching there. Once you climb out of the window,”

“They will catch you and take you directly to the car to take you to the airport!”

The girl was immediately furious: “You ba5tard!”

Antonio was scolded by his daughter. Without being angry, he said with a smile:

“Remember, Julia, a Zano girl, she will serve her family all her life!”

“If you betray the family, you will bring shame on my face.”

“I would rather let you shear sheep in Sicily for the rest of your life.”

“Than letting you become the shame of the family.”

The girl shouted hysterically:

“Antonio Zano! I hate you!”

Antonio said: “You can hate me, Julia, but remember...”

Before Antonio could speak, inside The girl shouted loudly:

“A Zano girl spends her whole life for the family!”

“I already know it! Don’t say it anymore!”

Antonio smiled and said: “It’s good that you know!”

Ten minutes later, the door opened, and a tall, tall beautiful girl with brown hair, green eyes, and wearing a white evening dress walked out of the room.

This girl is Antonio’s daughter, Julia Zano.

Seeing his daughter dressed up, Antonio couldn’t help but praise her:

“God, Julia, you are definitely the most beautiful girl in Sicily!”

Julia said with a look of disgust: “I am not a girl from Sicily,”

“I was born in New York, and I’ve only spent less than half a year in Sicily in my life!”

“I don’t want to have anything to do with that shabby place anymore!” Antonio

raised the corners of his mouth slightly and said with a smile:

“Julia, you are still young. Sooner or later, you will be like me,”

“Deeply proud of the Sicilian blood flowing in your body!”

“Girls from our family, even if they get married or change their surname,”

“They must never forget their family!”

“The imprint of the family is left in the blood of every member’s heart, in bones, and in soul!”

“Care about your family brand!” the girl said angrily:

“From today on, I will take my mother’s surname!”

“I am no longer Julia Zano! I am Julia Chiricella!”

“I’ve long been tired of the surname Zano!”

“How dare you!” Antonio banged the door angrily and shouted angrily:

“Julia, if you insist on confronting me,”

“Then I will send you to Sicily overnight, to your cousin’s farm,”

"And let you shave the wool for the rest of your life!"

The girl in the room fell silent for a moment.

Antonio's mood was not calmed down at all.

## Chapter 5792

Julia said with a disgusted look on her face.

“Then I would rather go to the hell than let the blood from my body.”

“Change it again!”

Antonio shook his head and sighed:

“Your rebellious period will take longer than I expected,”

“But it doesn’t matter, as long as you obey my arrangements,”

“I won’t argue with you.”

Julia spoke no more and came along following Antonio to the main hall of the manor,

Her eyes were looking around for something.

...

Time passed by minute by minute.

A few minutes later, in the darkness outside the manor, Jordan couldn’t help but ask Charlie:

“Mr. Wade, what are we waiting for?”

Charlie smiled and said, “We are waiting for an opportunity.”

Jordan asked in surprise: “What opportunity?”

Charlie, who was standing beside him, suddenly had a flash of light in his eyes.

He pointed at a black car driving out of the Zano Manor and said with a smile,

“That is the opportunity!”

After that, he turned on the car lights pressed the accelerator, and drove the car away.

In the black car, Julia, who was wearing a white evening gown, drove the car out in a hurry.

She just deliberately found an opportunity to damage the hem of her skirt,

And then used the excuse of dealing with the hem of the skirt to escape from the main hall,

And then found this black car with the key in the yard.

At this time, she had no idea where she should go.

She just wanted to seize the opportunity to escape from this place before anyone reacted.

However, at the moment when she drove the car out of the manor in a panic, A Chevrolet car suddenly drove up on the road in front of the manor. She subconsciously wanted to step on the brakes, but to no avail. She tried her best with her right foot and couldn't push the brake pedal down even half a bit.

She didn't know that she, or rather, the car she drove, was the opportunity that Charlie had been waiting for for a long time.

Therefore, regardless of who was driving the car, He directly blocked the brake pedal and steering column with his spiritual energy, Making the car unable to slow down or turn.

At this time, Julia tried her best but was unable to control the car. She could only watch the car rush out of the manor and land on the side of the trunk of the Chevrolet with a bang.

The Chevrolet was hit and spun in a circle on the road, And she was also shaken by the impact of the explosion and the impact of the exploding airbag.

At this time, the mafia members standing guard had rushed over to check. Everyone recognized the car as belonging to a member of the Zano family, So they quickly stepped forward, opened the cab door, and pulled the driver out. When everyone saw that the eldest lady, Julia, was driving, They couldn't help but exclaim: "Miss?! Why is it you?!"

Julia threw away her hands and sat on the ground slumped, feeling extremely desperate for a moment.

Seeing that she was about to escape, who would have thought that there would be a car accident just as she arrived at the door?

There's no chance to escape now!

What if her father gets the news and sees that she is trying to escape, And she can't imagine how he will punish her.

As long as she doesn't succeed this time, He will definitely take strict precautions against her.

If she tries to escape in the future, she will never have a chance!

Just when Julia was panicked and helpless, not knowing what to do, The door of the Chevrolet car suddenly opened,

And a man with an oriental face got out of the car, pointed at her angrily, and said,  
“Hey, do you not know how to drive?”

“I was driving fine, but you just hit me.”

“Don’t you know how to apply the brakes?”

Faced with the accusation, Julia could only bite the bullet and say:

“I’m sorry, there seems to be something wrong with my car. I couldn’t apply  
breaks...”

“Can’t stop the car?” Charlie said aggressively:

“You have a Maybach! I don’t believe that the Maybach can’t stop!”

“If you don’t have good skills, just say so, there’s no shame in it.”

Julia nodded repeatedly, she said dejectedly:

“You are right... Don’t worry, I will compensate you for your losses...”

Charlie said: “I rely on this car to support my family.”

“If you hit me like this, I will definitely not be able to survive for several days.”

You’re done, you have to compensate me for ten days of lost work,”

“At least 100,000 dollars! I think you live in such a nice house,”

“You must not be short of money, 100,000 dollars is nothing to you,”

“Hurry up and give me the money, I still have things to do!”

All the mafia men in suits and ties around him were stunned.

Is he not afraid?

This guy actually dared to blackmail the daughter of the Mafia family boss at the  
door of the Mafia manor?

For \$100,000, just this crappy Chevrolet??? \$100,000 can buy a lot!

So, one of them immediately shouted angrily:

“A55hole! How dare you fcuking blackmail our eldest lady?”

“Are you done with your life?”

## Chapter 5793

"Blackmail?!"

When Charlie heard this, he suddenly became anxious and blurted out:

"I drove by here without disturbing anyone,"

"And suddenly I was hit by this girl's car."

"It is only natural that I demand compensation."

"How can you say that I am extorting money?"

"You don't want to bully the few because there are many people,"

"And don't think that I am afraid of you because there are many people!"

The mafia member immediately took out a pistol from his waist,

Pointed it at Charlie's head, and said coldly:

"Get out of here right now! If you say one more word of nonsense, I'll shoot you!"

"Fck!" Charlie said angrily:

"You are so capable. You want to shoot me in public?"

At this time, Jordan pushed open the passenger door of the Chevrolet,

Held up his mobile phone in his hand and said loudly:

"Brother Chen, I have called the police!"

"Okay!" Charlie nodded with satisfaction, looked at the mafia member,

And said coldly: "Aren't you going to shoot me? Come on, shoot here!"

After saying that, Charlie pointed to his eyebrows and said,

"If you have the guts, shoot!"

Julia saw this and immediately yelled loudly:

"Robert! Put down the gun!"

In Julia's view, although the strange man in front of her asked for one hundred thousand dollars,

It was indeed too much, but in the end, this matter was her own responsibility,

And she had hit his car. Compensation is definitely unavoidable.

It is completely unreasonable for her father's men to point guns at others.

Seeing that Charlie was so stubborn and not afraid of the gun in his hand,

The man suddenly didn't know what to do.

In fact, he didn't want to actually shoot.

But he just wanted to use the gun to show his identity as a mafia,

So that this oriental man would have some sense and get out of here.

But who would have thought that this guy would be so arrogant?

Normally, he would never hesitate to shoot someone.

But today's situation is really special.

First of all, this is the entrance to the Zano family's estate.

Shooting and killing people here will definitely attract great attention.

Moreover, the other party has already called the police, and the police will definitely come to deal with this traffic accident.

If the person dies, there will be no way to cover it up,

And there will be no time to deal with it.

Not only will he be caught, but the Zano family will also be affected.

What's more, the lady is watching here,

How can he kill someone in front of her?

At this moment, another person walked up to Robert and whispered in his ear:

"The distinguished guest is coming soon!"

"Don't cause trouble, otherwise the boss will be very angry!"

Robert's back was frightened, and he quickly asked:

"What should we do now?"

"This man wants a hundred thousand dollars, and I can't agree to it."

After speaking, Robert glanced at Julia quietly and said:

"The lady is still here, what should I do?"

The man said quickly: "Are you stupid?"

"Can't you see that the lady wants to escape?"

"If you handle it properly, the boss will not blame you,"

"But will think that this car accident happened for a good reason."

"If it weren't for this car accident and the eldest lady drove away,"

"Would the banquet be held tonight?"

Robert came back to his senses instantly and was overjoyed.

He said quickly: "Then I will inform the boss now!"

After that, Robert took out the walkie-talkie and said:

"Please tell the boss that the eldest lady had a car accident at the door."

"Please ask him to come over as soon as possible."

Upon hearing this, Julia quickly struggled to stand up and said to Charlie:

"Sir, don't you want one hundred thousand dollars?"

"You drive me to a place, and I'll give you the money!"

Charlie had long heard the whispers between Robert and the other person,

And then he realized that the young girl in front of him turned out to be the daughter of the boss of the Zano family.

Isn't this just someone giving him a pillow when dozing off?

How could he let go of such a good opportunity?

## Chapter 5794

So, he said with a scoundrel look on his face:

"No, I want cash, and I'll wait here."

"If you don't give me money,"

"I'll wait until the police come!"

Julia looked nervous and desperate as she begged:

"Sir, take me out of here, and I'll give you two hundred thousand!"

Charlie remained unmoved: "I want cash, and I want it now!"

Julia's anxious tears were about to flow out,

She frequently looked back at the manor, fearing that her father would chase her out any time now

However, Charlie didn't give her any chance.

At this time, a tall and fat man in a suit ran out quickly,

Followed by a large group of people. When Julia saw it,

She immediately fell into despair, because the man in a suit running at the front was her father Antonio.

Antonio was angry and anxious at this time.

He never expected that his daughter accidentally broke the hem of her skirt just now.

She said she was going to find a needle and thread to mend it,

But he heard a report from his subordinates that his daughter had a car accident at the gate of the manor!

After hearing the news, his first thought was not to care about his daughter's safety,

But to be afraid that his daughter would escape, so he chased her out in a panic.

When Julia saw him, she struggled to escape,

But was caught by Charlie. He said seriously:

"Miss, if you run away now, it will be a hit and run!"

Julia was anxious. Stomping her feet,

She who was still feeling guilty towards Charlie now wanted to give him a slap in the face.

In desperation, she could only point to her father who was getting closer, and said,

"That man is my father. He will give you money for me."

"Please get out of my way and let me go."

"That won't work,"

Charlie said firmly: "If you hit me, I will ask you for compensation."

"It has nothing to do with anyone else."

"One hundred thousand dollars, not a penny less!"

Tears burst out of Julia's eyes in anger, and she was about to say something, Antonio had already come to her, looked at her, and shouted angrily:

"Julia! Explain to me why you are here!"

Julia also risked her life and shouted loudly:

"Because I want to leave this place! Don't let any of you stop me!"

"How dare you!" Antonio shouted angrily:

"If you leave this home, you will go to Sicily and shear sheep for the rest of your life!"

"I won't go!" Julia said angrily: "I want to sever ties with you!"

"From now on, I will be able to support myself, live and die on my own,"

"And your life and death have nothing to do with me!"

Antonio said angrily: "How outrageous!"

If you were born into the Zano family,"

"You will be a member of the Zano family for the rest of your life!"

After that, he said to Several people around her:

"Take the young lady back!"

Julia immediately wanted to break away,

But there were so many people on the other side that she, a girl, couldn't resist them.

Seeing that she was about to be taken away, Charlie immediately said angrily:

"You guys are working together to play me, right?"

"Where's my money? She hasn't compensated me yet,"

"So she can't go anywhere!"

Antonio frowned at Charlie, he asked coldly: "Who are you?"

Charlie looked at him and said in a neither humble nor condescending manner:

"Your daughter hit me with a car,"

"And you want her to go without paying for it?"

"You are bullying an honest person!"

Antonio frowned and looked at Charlie, then looked at the two cars involved in the car accident.

After a moment of silence, he took out his wallet, took out a thousand dollars in cash,

Handed it to Charlie, and said calmly:

"Look, you stopped it for me. For the sake of my daughter, take this thousand dollars and get out of here!"

Charlie sneered and said disdainfully:

"You want to send me away with a thousand dollars?"

"Are you crazy about being poor, or am I crazy about being poor?"

Antonio didn't expect that Charlie would be so ignorant.

His expression suddenly became extremely cold.

He stared at Charlie and asked sternly: "How much do you want?"

After asking this question, Antonio kept staring at Charlie's eyes, waiting.

Looking at Charlie's quotation, he even thought to himself:

"This ignorant boy dares to be greedy in front of me."

"He is not afraid that he will risk his life for money!"

"He is the only one who dares to say a number that exceeds five thousand US dollars."

"I Just let someone twist his head off!"

At this time, Charlie met Antonio's gaze, cleared his throat, and said loudly:

"Listen up, one hundred thousand US dollars, not a penny less!"

# Chapter 5795

Antonio's mouth twitched twice when he heard Charlie's offer.

He gritted his teeth and smiled: "Okay, you are really capable of blackmailing the Mafia!"

Charlie asked curiously: "Hey, are you a Mafia?"

Antonio sneered: "What? You didn't just see it?"

After that, he took the thousand dollars back into his wallet and said to Charlie with a haughty look:

"Now that you know my identity, you can get out now."

Charlie said disdainfully: "You didn't even give me the money. You want to send me away, are you awake?"

Antonio gritted his teeth and said: "Good boy,"

"If you fail to seize the opportunity given to you, then don't blame me!"

After that, he ordered his subordinates: "You'll break his legs,"

"And then drive and throw him a hundred miles away."

"Move faster, the guests are coming soon."

Several of his men immediately geared up and walked towards Charlie.

At this time, a siren sounded, and several police cars quickly drove up.

After the car stopped, more than a dozen police officers got out of several cars.

One of them came to Antonio and said, "Antonio, we received a call."

"Some people said that the Mafia crashed cars and injured people here."

"What exactly happened?"

Antonio smiled slightly. He was startled and then looked at Charlie subconsciously.

Charlie smiled evilly and immediately said to the police:

"Officer, they hit me with their car."

"Not only did he not deal with the problem, he also pulled out a gun to kill me."

As he said that, he pointed at the mafia member who had just pointed the gun at him and blurted out:

"That's him! He has a gun in his hand!"

Several policemen immediately pointed their guns at the man, and one of them shouted loudly:

"Hold your head with your hands and lie on the ground, immediately!"

He didn't know what to do.

He knew that shooting by the police was more common than eating chewing gum.

In this case, if he didn't cooperate, the other party would probably shoot him to death.

However, the way the police make people cooperate is very hurtful to people's self-esteem.

Because they have a large number of guns here,

The police must ensure that the other party does not pose any threat.

They usually hold their heads with their hands, spread their arms, spread their legs, and lie down on the ground.

It doesn't matter to ordinary people,

But to gang members who want to save face, it's no different than kneeling in the street.

Therefore, many face-loving gang members die every year because of their dignity.

The police asked him to take out his hands and lie on the ground,

But he refused to cooperate. Some even put their hands into their pockets provocatively and said,

"Can't I take out my phone?"

When the police encounter such a pretentious person,

They will not give him a chance to regret it at all.

No matter how many policemen are on their side,

Everyone will empty their magazines in the shortest possible time,

And then go back and write a report saying that they think he inserted his hand into his pocket to take out the gun.

Antonio also felt that it would be a disgrace to his men to lie down here, so he said:

"Officer, this is just an ordinary traffic accident.

My daughter accidentally hit this man while driving.

We are negotiating how to compensate him for his car."

The police officer didn't want to make too much trouble with Antonio,

So he looked at Charlie and asked, "Sir, is the situation what he said?"

Charlie shook his head and said: "Of course not, he hit me."

"Not only did he not pay for it, but he also threatened to kill me."

After saying that, Charlie simply imitated his mother-in-law's style,

Sat down on the curb, and said calmly:

"No matter what, I will be here today to see how he kills me!"

"Also, they all have guns. If you don't deal with it,"

"I will upload all this to the Internet!"

"Let everyone see how the police are covering the mafia."

## Chapter 5796

Jordan, who was not far away, held up his mobile phone and said,

"I am already live! I also told my friends to record the screen,"

"And they will send the video to more people later!"

When the police officer heard this, he coughed awkwardly and said to Antonio:

"You have also seen what happened today."

"First of all, you must resolve this matter properly."

"Secondly, whoever took out the gun must go back with me for investigation."

Antonio was furious.

How could he have imagined that he would be blackmailed and manipulated at his own doorstep?

The key is that he doesn't have any solution yet.

At this time, his confidant walked up to him and whispered:

"Boss, the distinguished guest will be here soon."

Antonio suddenly felt nervous.

He didn't want to see himself arguing with others at the door after the distinguished guests arrived.

The key is that his daughter hit someone else with her car,  
And he is unwilling to compensate for such a shameful thing.

In desperation, he could only nod, pull the man over,  
Took out his pistol from his waist and threw it to the ground,  
Then he pushed him to the police and said: "Take him away."

After saying that, he looked at Charlie again and said,

"You want one hundred thousand dollars, right?"

"Wait, I'll get it for you right now."

When the police heard this, they immediately looked at Charlie in shock and blurted out: "You asked him for 100,000 dollars?"

"Yes," Charlie said matter-of-factly:

"I have a high salary for lost work time,"

"So 100,000 dollars is already a bargain for him."

The policeman swallowed his saliva and asked:

"You don't know who he is, right?"

Charlie curled his lips and said, "Do I need to know?"

The policeman looked at Charlie sympathetically and said seriously:

"Listen, this man's name is Antonio Zano."

"Of course, he won't do anything to you while we are here,"

"But after we leave, you have to think about it for yourself."

"I advise you not to rip him off. Your car is not expensive,"

"And it even costs time to repair it. Ten thousand dollars is enough."

Charlie said disdainfully: "I've never heard of Antonio Zano."

"Besides, you don't know how much money I make in a day."

"Asking him for one hundred thousand dollars is just to give him face and give him a favor."

"After getting a discount, what else is he dissatisfied with?"

Antonio was also confused.

He really didn't expect that this guy was so confident and committed such a death-seeking behavior,

Which was the only time in his life.

So, he said to Charlie: "Since the police officer is here,"

"Don't give me a discount. Tell me the original price."

Charlie was not afraid at all and said calmly:

"The original price is at least one million!"

Antonio nodded, gritted his teeth, and said: "You are really smart,"

"Let's do this, you want one million in cash,"

"I may not be able to come up with it, you leave me your contact information and address,"

"After I get the one million, I'll send it to you."

Charlie said disdainfully: "Don't you think it's embarrassing to live in such a big villa and you cannot pay for one million?"

The policeman felt his head was buzzing.

Fortunately, he didn't understand Chinese,

Otherwise, he would have to say a good word can't persuade a damned devil.

Antonio was also furious.

It's like the chairman of a listed group meets a security guard in a parking lot.

You say a thousand things and use guns and sticks to intimidate and induce, but he refuses to let you in!

So, he suppressed the anger in his heart and asked Charlie:

"Well, you tell me how to solve it, and I will listen to you."

Charlie nodded, pointed to his manor, and said,

"I'll wait at your house, and you can collect money to give me one million,"

"I'll take the money and leave, and this matter is over."

## Chapter 5797

Antonio asked in surprise: "You mean, you want to go in and wait?"

"Yes." Charlie nodded and said matter-of-factly

"Of course, I have to wait at your house,"

"Otherwise what will I do if you close the door and hide from me?"

Antonio suddenly laughed and said, "Okay, since you said so,"

"Please come in and sit for a while."

"I'll arrange for someone to raise money right now!"

From Antonio's point of view,

A guy like Charlie who wants money rather than his life is just trying to commit suicide.

He has already revealed his identity as a mafia,

And he still wants to ask for money from him.

Isn't this asking for money at the expense of his life?

What's more, how could he give him the money?

Must know that although he is worth more than 100 million,

Every penny in it is the hard-earned money that he has worked hard to take out from the pockets of the people at the bottom.

If outsiders want to take away a penny, he will kill them himself.

Originally, he was worried that Charlie had already called the police and the police were right in front of him.

Although he had killed countless people,

He had finally begun to clear his name.

How could he attack this kid in front of the police?

But who would have expected that this kid would take the initiative to follow him into the house to get money?

Isn't this just a wolf entering a tiger's mouth?

As long as he enters his own door and is not under the eyes of the police,

He can directly let his men beat him to death,

And then fake a scene of him stealing at home.

When the police come, they will say that this man tried to steal and was shot dead by his men.

As long as he finds a reliable lawyer will most likely not go to jail.

Even if the lawyer performs abnormally and is sentenced to a real sentence,

The person in jail will still be his man and have nothing to do with him.

Therefore, from the moment Charlie said he wanted to go in with him,

He had already made up his mind not to let Charlie come out alive.

At this time, the policemen also knew that once Charlie went in,

There was a high probability of disaster,

So one of the policemen kindly reminded him:

"Sir, if you have any problems, I advise you to solve them outside. Do not go in."

As he said that, he added: "In addition,"

"I don't think it's a good idea to ask for one million dollars for this matter, sir."

"This is obviously an unreasonable asking price,"

"So I still advise you to accept the suggestion of ten thousand dollars."

Charlie naturally knew the intentions of the police and knew that they had good intentions,

But for him, the play he was going to perform for Antonio today was called different,

So of course he had to go all the way to the end.

So, he said to the police: "I'm sorry,"

"I don't accept the suggestion of ten thousand dollars."

"I insist on claiming one million dollars!"

After that, he turned to look at Antonio and said:

"Let's go in, I Wait until you get the money together."

The policeman had no choice but to ask Charlie again:

"Sir, if you have reached an agreement and there are no objections,"

"Then we will evacuate. Do you have any other questions?"

"No." Charlie smiled slightly and said:

"Thank you, comrade police."

When several American police officers heard the term comrade, they looked confused.

Then they looked at each other, put their guns back into their holsters, returned to the car, and drove away.

As soon as the police left, Antonio's expression changed.

His fake smile quickly disappeared, replaced by a cold face full of murderous intent.

He stretched out his hand, pointed at Charlie contemptuously,

And then pointed at Jordan not far away, and said to his subordinates:

"Take these two VIP guests to the wine cellar."

"After I have entertained the VIP guests, I will personally come to talk to them!"

## Chapter 5798

When Antonio said the word VIP, Charlie even heard the sound of his teeth gritting.

But at this time, Charlie was not worried at all.

Instead, he said with a dissatisfied look on his face:

"Is inviting people to the wine cellar the way you mafia treat guests?"

"Please?"

Antonio's mouth twitched, his expression was cold as he said:

"Today I will let you experience what the real Sicilian hospitality is!"

Julia, who was under control, said to Charlie very nervously:

"He will kill you, come on, don't stay here!"

Charlie said with a smile: "I have never been to Sicily."

"Today I have the opportunity to experience the Sicilian hospitality in New York."

"Wouldn't it be a loss if I don't experience it?"

After that, he walked straight towards the manor and walked in.

Charlie said as he walked: "Oh, to be honest, your manor is not very good."

"The real rich people in New York all live in Long Island."

"What kind of thing is it for you to live in this place?"

"Is it possible that you have to guard the gate here for the rich people who live in Long Island?"

As he spoke he slapped his forehead and said with a smile:

"Look at my brain, I almost forgot your job, the underworld!"

"You are nothing more than the god of death for the poor, the bodyguard of the rich,"

"And the lackey of the powerful. You live on the edge of Long Island."

"They are all rich and powerful, so you are here to be a bodyguard and a dog at the same time."

"It is not easy to wear many hats."

"Dmn it!" Antonio suddenly became furious.

He grabbed Charlie's collar and said sternly:

"Boy! You really don't know how to write the word "death"! When you arrive in my territory today,"

"I will never let you out alive! Remember your arrogance now,"

"You will see what method I will use to kill you later."

"You will beg for mercy!"

Charlie was grabbed by his collar.

He didn't resist or show any dissatisfaction.

He just looked at Antonio with a smile and said,

"I forgot to tell you, you can grab my collar,"

"But the price is Whichever hand grabbed it will be cut off."

"Although your girl is very beautiful, there is absolutely no negotiation on this matter."

Looking at Charlie's look of needing a beating,

Antonio could no longer control his emotions and raised his fist and was about to hit Charlie in the face.

At this moment, a whistle suddenly sounded behind him.

He looked back and saw a convoy of four Cadillacs and a Rolls-Royce Phantom approaching from the corner.

His expression suddenly lit up, and he didn't care to beat Charlie here.

He quickly pushed Charlie aside and said to his confidant:

"Quick! The distinguished guest is here!"

"Come with me to greet them. In addition, send the lady to the banquet hall."

This boy and his companion, send them to the wine cellar!"

After that, without waiting for anyone to react, he took the first step and walked out.

Several men were about to take Charlie, Jordan, and Julia to the manor when Charlie suddenly shouted coldly:

“Don’t even move! Otherwise, I will twist your heads off!”

Charlie said this. When these people heard it, he used some spiritual energy.

After hearing this, they felt their whole souls trembling.

They were stunned on the spot for a while, not daring to make any move at all.

Julia was extremely surprised. She knew what her father’s subordinates were like.

The people who could follow her father were all murderous demons without blinking an eye.

They might be wearing suits and sunglasses now.

They look like humans, but in fact, they started out by burning, killing, and looting.

These people are so fearless, how could they be so frightened by Charlie’s words that they dare not even move?

Moreover, she could clearly see that there was an indescribable fear in the eyes of these people.

But Antonio, and the followers around him at the moment, did not notice the strangeness here.

In the eyes of several people, all they could see was the convoy that was slowly approaching.

When several people hurriedly ran out of the manor, the motorcade just happened to drive up.

Antonio ran directly to the Rolls-Royce Phantom,

Stood outside the car door with a flattering look on his face,

And took the initiative to reach out and open the rear door.

Sitting in the car was a middle-aged man,

And Antonio, who had been arrogant and domineering just now, was bowing like a quail outside the car and said respectfully:

"Dear Mr. Aman, welcome. You came to New York!"

## Chapter 5799

At this time, Aman Ramovich, who is already in his fifties,

He is wearing a very decent high-end suit, with a very neat hairstyle,

And with a well-maintained figure, there is no trace of middle-aged or elderly people at this time.

He looked like he was about forty years old.

The moment Antonio saw Aman Ramovich, flattery was deeply engraved on his face.

This mafia who had just promised to kill Charlie,

Now in front of Aman Ramovich, was like a grandson who was looking forward to a candy from his grandfather.

Amanramovich's expression was very indifferent at this time.

He looked at Antonio and said with a slightly condescending attitude:

"Antonio, you are still here waiting to greet me so late."

"Thank you for your hard work."

Antonio was flattered as he hurriedly said:

"Sir, you are so polite! It is my honor, to serve you,"

"And it is also the honor of the entire Zano family!"

After saying that, he hurriedly said: "Mr. Ramovich, I have already made people ready."

"For a sumptuous dinner, please move to the manor banquet hall!"

Aman Ramovich waved his hand and said calmly:

"It doesn't matter if it's a dinner or not."

"I've already had it on the plane, but it's so late."

"I'm really sorry for the trouble, Miss Julia is waiting for me."

Antonio was a smart man, and when he heard these words, he naturally knew what Aman meant.

In fact, the fundamental purpose of inviting Arman Ramovich to his home this time was to marry his daughter Julia,

Who is in her early twenties, to Arman Ramovich.

And since Aman Ramovich failed in his ambition to marry Helena last time,

He has learned a lesson the hard way.

Due to his special status and background, he was actually marginalized throughout Western Europe.

Even his football club was snatched away by the British on the grounds of justice.

Under such circumstances, it would be basically impossible for him to marry a princess from a European royal family.

Coupled with the outbreak of local wars in Eastern Europe,

His situation in Western Europe became even more difficult.

Moreover, today's Western Europe has become increasingly difficult for Aman Ramovich.

He used to be a successful businessman who often appeared in media headlines,

But now he has become a street rat that everyone calls for beatings.

In Western Europe, there are all kinds of news criticizing and satirizing him on the front page every day.

As long as he is mentioned on TV, something bad is bound to happen.

No matter how strong his psychology is, he can't handle being mixed up in such a series of turns.

Moreover, being ignored for a long time made Aman himself feel uninterested.

Therefore, he thought about it and simply gave up Western Europe and came to the United States to change his life.

Moreover, he is also very aware of his current situation.

The entire Western society is not very welcoming to him.

In many industries, even if they attract people to invest,

If he says that he wants to invest, they will definitely reject him and take him outside the door.

Therefore, Aman Ramovich thought that he might as well come to the United States to temporarily find a suitable place to retire,

And at the same time finds himself a suitable temporary new wife.

For him, the United States is a good place where he can advance and attack and retreat and defend.

If the situation in Eastern Europe can still be alleviated,

Then I will have the opportunity to return to Western Europe as a successful businessman in the future.

If the situation in Eastern Europe gets worse,

He might as well stay in the United States and rely on my billions to retire.

It was precisely because he had this idea that he began to look for some cooperative relationships in the United States.

But after searching around, among those who have a certain amount of energy in the United States,

Except for the Mafia, almost no one is willing to get close to him.

The reason why Antonio was able to catch his eye was because he had a beautiful daughter.

## Chapter 5300

In the living room, after Jemima and Maria sat down, Maria asked her curiously:

“Sister Jemima, why did you choose to develop in Aurous Hill from Hong Kong?”

“There is still a big gap between the first-tier international cities and the second-tier cities in the Mainland.”

Jemima smiled slightly. The set of rhetoric she said to Sister Xian was nothing more than that,

Hong Kong was too fast-paced, with too many people and too little land,

And the city’s resources were severely squeezed.

The overall feeling was that life in second-tier cities in the Mainland was inferior but more comfortable.

Maria nodded in agreement after listening, but she didn’t think so at all in her heart.

She felt that Jemima’s remarks sounded right at first glance.

Hong Kong, a first-tier international city, naturally has a slow pace,

And it is true that Hong Kong has a lot of people and a lot of lands.

Many people work hard all their lives and can’t afford a set of a small houses of 40 square meters,

So many young people from Hong Kong have gradually started to develop in the mainland,

Especially the special zone adjacent to Hong Kong, which has attracted many young people from Hong Kong.

However, Maria is also very clear that Hong Kong is a place where heaven and hell coexist.

There, it is normal for a poor family of six or seven to squeeze into a ten-square-meter room,

And some people even live in places where there is not even room for a bed.

However, also in Hong Kong, the top rich can build super luxury houses,

That look like palaces on the mountainside of the bay,

And live in luxury flats with hundreds of thousands of square meters on skyscrapers.

Over the past few decades, Hong Kong has been a paradise for the rich.

Jemima's family is extremely wealthy.

The pace of Hong Kong's progress, the size of the population,

And the amount of land has almost nothing to do with her.

Her reason is like a top rich man declaring that he decided to leave the United States,

Because of the poor law and order in the United States and frequent shootings.

At first glance, this reason does not seem to be a problem at all.

But thinking about it a bit deeper, this line of argument is not relevant to her as she belongs to a rich family.

Therefore, Maria concluded that there must be other reasons for Jemima's visit to Aurous Hill.

Maria's thinking logic is that rationality must be considered first in everything,

And once this matter goes against common sense, there must be the words:

There must be demons when things go wrong.

Moreover, just like multiplication, the larger the base and multiple,

The larger the result will naturally be, and vice versa.

If the result is large, the base and multiple will not be small.

Therefore, Maria couldn't help thinking to herself:

"Jemima is a wealthy daughter with a family fortune of hundreds of billions,"

"If she can make such an abnormal behavior with a wealthy daughter of hundreds of billions,"

"Then this "monster" is definitely not an ordinary "monster". , must be a big monster..."

"This basic logic is also applicable to me."

"I will come here not really because I like it, or the kind of relationship my ancestors have with this place,"

"But because it is hidden here, a big monster, that monster is Charlie!"

Thinking of this, Maria frowned and said inwardly:

"On the bright side, there are almost no 'monsters' who can be worthy of Jemima's identity,"

"Could it be... she is also here for Charlie?"

## Chapter 5801

He stepped forward at this moment and whispered attentively:

"Mr. Ramovich, please don't worry, Julia has been waiting for you."

"She admires you very much, but she is still young and somewhat shy."

"If there is any neglect later, please don't take it to heart, Mr. Ramovich."

"He smiled and nodded, and said casually:

"I am more than thirty years older than Miss Julia,

So I will naturally give her more tolerance and understanding."

Antonio suddenly beamed with joy and said repeatedly:

"That's good, that's it! Mr. Ramovich, please come inside the manor and chat slowly!"

Aman nodded slightly to agree, and then, accompanied by Antonio, stepped into the gate of the manor.

While walking, Aman looked at Antonio's manor and commented lightly:

"Antonio, the area of your Zano family's manor is a little small,"

"And it doesn't seem to be within the scope of Long Island?"

Antonio looked slightly embarrassed. replied:

"Mr. Ramovich, I am currently preparing to buy a new property,"

"But I am still looking around in the core areas of Long Island are really too expensive,"

"They are costing tens or even hundreds of millions of dollars."

"Our family has spent a lot of money recently,"

"And it's really hard to come up with so much money at once."

Aman Ramovich nodded and said casually:

"It's not very expensive to live in the core area of Long Island."

"I just commissioned my staff to help me buy a manor a few days ago."

"It's in the best part of Long Island, just across the road from the famous Feijia Manor."

"I bought it for my wedding. If you feel like it in the future,"

"You can come and stay at any time if you are interested."

Antonio was overjoyed and said quickly:

"Thank you, Mr. Ramovich!"

Charlie, who came in first, after listening to the conversation between the two,

Looked at Aman Ramovich's superior figure from a distance.

He couldn't help but laugh.

He looked at Julia not far away, smiled to himself, and shook his head.

He thought to himself, this girl's appearance and figure are really not outstanding,

And she is more than enough to match Aman Ramovich.

However, Aman Ramovich is really unlucky.

He wanted to find a wife twice, but he happened to meet me both times.

Julia saw that Charlie was not afraid at this time,

But was looking at her up and down a little frivolously.

She couldn't help but say angrily:

"Don't you know how to be afraid?"

"If my father gets angry, he might kill you!"

Charlie said with a smile: "Don't worry,"

"Your dad doesn't have this ability,"

"But I really want to peel off his skin today."

Julia frowned and asked:

"Who are you? A member of the Chinese Gang?"

Charlie shook his head and said:

"I am from China, but not from the Chinese Gang."

Julia said seriously: "Don't think that this is China."

"Here, as long as my father says a word, his men will grab you."

"Shoot you for him. Even if you die, he will not bear any responsibility at all."

"I am not alarmist. Basically, people die in his hands every month."

"If you still want to live, you must kneel down and beg for mercy, beg for his forgiveness,"

"Beg for his forgiveness. When the time comes, I will try my best to say good things for you,"

"Maybe he can spare your life."

Charlie smiled and said: "You have too much to take care of yourself,"

"Why not? Do you have time to say something nice to me?"

As he spoke, Charlie pointed at Antonio and Aman who were walking in from a distance, and said:

"Your father invited Aman to visit his house, he should be playing a game about you.?"

## Chapter 5802

Julia looked at Charlie in surprise, and blurted out:

"You...how did you know?"

Charlie said calmly: "I still know a little bit about Aman Ramovich."

"He seems to have been looking for a wife everywhere recently."

"Is it possible that your father is planning to marry you to him?"

Julia's expression instantly became extremely unnatural, and she said hesitantly:

"These are not things you need to worry about."

"You should think carefully about how to get out of here alive today!"

Charlie smiled and said: "Don't worry, in half an hour,"

"I will ask your father to kneel down to see me out of this door."

Julia was completely speechless,

She although was not evil-hearted, as the daughter of the Zano family,

She had already seen too many life-and-death killings.

Therefore, she lost the patience to continue to persuade him with her kind words, and then said coldly:

"I've already said what needs to be said."

"If you still want to die, you can only ask for happiness."

As soon as Julia finished speaking, Antonio and Aman had already come closer.

Antonio did not notice Charlie, his attention was all on his daughter Julia,

And the same happened to Aman on the side.

His eyes were always watching Julia looking up and down.

It could be seen that he was interested in Julia. Leah was very satisfied.

Antonio came to Julia and said quickly:

"Julia, say hello to Mr. Ramovich!"

Julia said expressionlessly: "I don't know Mr. Ramovich,"

"I want to leave now, please don't stop me."

Antonio's expression suddenly became very ugly.

He glared at Julia fiercely, then turned around and said to Aman Ramovich:

"I'm sorry, Mr. Ramovich, Julia has a weird temper,"

"And since she is not familiar with you, she may be a little rebellious, so please don't worry about her."

Aman Ramovich looked at Julia's youthful and beautiful appearance and said with a smile:

"It doesn't matter."

"I appreciate Miss Julia's straightforward character."

Antonio breathed a sigh of relief and quickly said to Julia:

"Look! Mr. Ramovich is still high-level enough."

"He's an understanding man. Thank Mr. Ramovich!"

Julia frowned and asked: "Why should I thank him?"

Antonio was furious and angrily shouted:

"Julia! In front of Mr. Ramovich, don't be so uneducated!"

"You forgot what I told you, don't forget that you are a Sicilian girl!"

Julia stubbornly turned her head to the side,

And suddenly saw Charlie, her heart softened, and she said to Antonio:

"You want me to have a better attitude and behave better Be more educated, right?"

"Of course!" Antonio said seriously:

"Always remember, you represent the Zano family!"

"Okay!" Julia nodded, pointed to Charlie not far away, and said:

"You let him go and stop causing trouble for him,"

"And I will try my best to maintain my upbringing!"

Antonio followed Julia's fingers and saw Charlie's smiling face.

The moment he saw Charlie, he was furious and said sternly:

"Didn't I ask you to take him down and kill him?!"

"Why is he still here?!"

As soon as he said this, Aman also subconsciously looked at Charlie,

When he saw Charlie's joking look...

His pupils shrank instantly and his expression immediately became extremely frightened!

He subconsciously asked: "Mr. Wade...Wade, why are you here!"

Charlie smiled and said, "Long time no see, Mr. Amanramovich."

As soon as these words came out, Antonio was completely dumbfounded.

His eyes widened and he tentatively asked Aman Ramovich:

"Mr. Ramovich, you... do you know this person?"

## Chapter 5803

At this moment, Aman felt as if he had seen a ghost.

He never dared to dream that he could actually see the evil star-like Charlie in New York,

That too at the home of a mafia leader!

Ever since his last plan to win Helena failed and it was aborted,

Charlie has become a nightmare in Aman's heart.

Not only because Charlie ruined his plan to marry the royal princess,

But more importantly, Charlie also slapped him in the mouth more than a dozen times.

Although Aman was not of high origin and suffered a lot when he was young,

When he became an oligarch, no one could boss him around,

Let alone beat him. Charlie was definitely the only one.

According to Aman's usual temper, he would definitely find a way to kill Charlie afterward.

But that time, the reason why he chose to swallow his anger in the end was,

Because Charlie was, after all, a member of the Wade family of China.

The assets of the Wade family were much higher than his own,

So of course he would be more or less afraid of it.

But the most important thing is not that the Wade family is richer than him,

But there is a powerful Cataclysmic Front behind the Wade family.

However, in Aman's knowledge, he did not know that the entire Cataclysmic Front had surrendered to Charlie.

He thought that the Wade family gave Cataclysmic Front half of its assets in exchange for Cataclysmic Front's forgiveness.

So in his heart, he somewhat looked down upon the Wade family.

This feeling may be like that of a landowner who met a traitor back then.

Although he looked down upon the landlord and wanted to be a traitor to the country and seek glory,

He still had to be polite and respectful due to the forces behind him.

Realizing that he could not seek revenge against Charlie,

Amanramovich could only break his teeth and swallow it in his stomach,

So he left Northern Europe in despair, thinking that he would never meet Charlie again in this life,

But he did not expect, he come to the United States today.

As soon as he got off the plane and before he found a place to rest at Antonio's house,

He met Charlie again.

At this time, Aman felt depressed and angry.

The previous humiliation suddenly came back to his heart,

Making him clench his fists and grit his teeth.

Antonio on the side saw that Aman didn't respond for a while,

So he couldn't help but ask again:

"Mr. Aman, do you...recognize this kid?"

Charlie looked at him with interest. Look forward to his answer.

Aman came back to his senses at this time,

But did not speak immediately, but repeatedly considered two things in his mind.

First, why is Charlie here?

Did he wait for him here on purpose, or was it a coincidence?

Second, it seems that Charlie only brought one follower,

And Antonio himself wants his younger brother to kill Charlie.

Can he use Antonio's help to facilitate this matter,

So that he can avenge his shame?

Aman knew that mafiosi like Antonio would never blink an eye when killing people,

But as long as they confirmed that they could offend someone,

They would never blink an eye when killing someone.

Antonio doesn't seem to have any respect for Charlie.

Maybe he doesn't know Charlie's true identity.

So, he deliberately pointed at Charlie and asked Antonio:

"Do you know him?"

Antonio shook his head: "No,"

"It's just that there was a little friction just now,"

"And it was a bit uncomfortable."

"Happy, if you know him, for your sake, forget the friction between me and him."

"If you are not satisfied, I will apologize to this gentleman."

"At this time, Antonio also felt a little drumming in his heart.

He was also worried that Charlie and Aman were friends or acquaintances.

If Aman was convicted, it would not end well for him,

So he humbly expressed his attitude first,

Which could be regarded as leaving himself a way out.

## Chapter 5804

When Aman heard this, he suddenly had an idea in his heart and thought to himself:

"I never thought that Charlie and Antonio could actually fight!"

"This is Antonio's manor, Antonio's absolute home court, the entire manor, and the manor don't know how many mafia killers are ambushing nearby,"

"But Charlie and his party seem to have only two people."

"In this case, as long as Antonio gives the order,"

"What if Charlie can fight again? He is not going to be beaten by these killers like a hornet's nest?"

"As for whether Cataclysmic Front will seek revenge on Antonio after Charlie dies,"

"What does that have to do with me?"

"Anyway, I didn't kill the person, nor did I encourage Anthony to kill him."

"Cataclysmic Front can't put it on my head."

"When Julia loses her father, she may be fragile and in need of comfort,"

"And I can just take advantage of it and win the beauty back!"

"If only Julia could listen. If she let me control, I can also support her and let her take over her father's position to control the entire New York Mafia."

"By then, won't the New York Mafia be the same as my own personal armed force?"

With this one thought at this point, Amanramovich tried hard to restrain the joy in his heart,

Pointed at Charlie, and said to Antonio expressionlessly:

"I don't know this person. If you have any personal grudges, you can resolve them yourself."

He deliberately nodded at Antonio and said with a smile:

"Antonio, I heard that you people are decisive and straightforward in doing things and are never timid."

"Today is just an opportunity to open my eyes."

"To be honest, I thought before I came here. I want to strengthen some economic cooperation with you."

"But it all depends on whether you are really courageous and knowledgeable."

Although Antonio is a big boss, he is not a fool.

As soon as he heard these words, he knew what Aman was up to, and he couldn't help but secretly thought:

"This guy's words are clouded and groundless."

"Dmn it, isn't your real intention just to let me kill someone for you to see?"

"Do you think we won't dare to kill with our own hands when they get older?"

"Then I will do it for you today!"

Thinking of this, he said without thinking:

"I originally thought that Mr. Aman knew this boy,"

"But since you don't know him, I have nothing to worry about."

"Today I will kill this boy with my own hands to cheer you up!"

Aman smiled and said: "You are the host and I am the guest."

"You can do whatever you want. Everything is at your disposal."

"If you arrange for me to watch killings, I will watch killings."

"If you arrange for me to watch chickens being killed,"

"I will watch chickens being killed."

Antonio nodded and said with a smile:

"In that case, please let's go to the wine cellar!"

After that, he said to the men around him:

"Take this boy and his follower to the wine cellar,"

"Today Let Mr. Aman see how we solve problems!"

Julia on the side said quickly: "Dad, you can't kill him!"

Antonio asked coldly: "He offended me and didn't give me the respect I deserved."

"This is a great humiliation for me."

"Since he humiliated me, why can't I kill him?"

Julia blurted out: "I hit him with my car."

"I owe him a lot in my heart. Moreover, this incident was all caused by me."

"If I hadn't run out secretly, he wouldn't have fallen into your hands."

"If you kill him, I will never be able to forgive myself in this life!"

"God will not forgive me either!"

Antonio was stunned for a moment, then said with a smile:

"My child, don't worry, God will forgive everyone."

"The people who come out to make trouble will naturally forgive you."

Charlie saw that Aman was playing tricks here,

And Antonio and Julia were chatting about God.

He was already a little impatient, so he became impatient and said:

"Antonio, right? Where did you get all this nonsense?"

"Tell me, where the hell is the fcking wine cellar you're talking about?"

"I will see you there!"

# Chapter 5805

Antonio was dumbfounded. He couldn't clearly see Charlie's movements just now.

He only felt that the bullets were fired in front of his eyes.

Charlie was still looking at him with a smile on his face.

Others were too shocked to speak at this time, and Aman was even more dumbfounded.

He kept staring at Charlie, clearly not seeing Charlie move,

But felt that Charlie's head was blurred. How come he was unscathed all of a sudden?

At this time, Charlie looked at the dumbfounded Antonio and said with a smile:

"Your shooting skills are not good either."

"Fck!" Antonio didn't care to think about it and immediately pulled the trigger towards Charlie's head.

With a bang, the same weird thing happened again.

Charlie actually dodged his bullet again!

Antonio's jaw dropped in shock, and he murmured:

"You...how did you do it?!"

Charlie sarcastically said: "This is the Kung Fu, you sand sculpture."

After that, he suddenly exerted force with both hands, and the three handcuffs were instantly shattered into pieces by the spiritual energy.

The metal fragments seemed to have eyes. With great speed and great force, they quickly penetrated into the heads of Antonio's eight men.

In one fell swoop, all eight of Antonio's men were headshot!

Seeing eight of his men lying on the ground in an instant, with blood flowing all over the floor,

Antonio thought he had seen a ghost, and was so frightened that he turned around and ran away,

But at this time his legs had become weak in extreme fear. Thus he was unable to move at all.

He is like this, and so is Aman.

He stared at Charlie dumbfounded, and kept telling himself:

"I must be dreaming, I must be dreaming!"

Jordan and Julia were also stunned for a long time, couldn't believe what they were seeing.

At this time, Charlie reached out and took the Beretta pistol from Antonio's hand, pointed it at his head, and asked with a smile:

"You like to point guns at other people's heads, don't you?"

Antonio was so frightened that he murmured in extreme panic:

"No...it's not..."

Seeing this situation, Aman quickly and quietly wanted to withdraw,

But at this time, Charlie suddenly pointed his gun at his right knee and pulled the trigger decisively!

boom!

Another gunshot was heard in the wine cellar, and Aman hugged his knee and fell to the ground, wailing in pain.

Charlie said expressionlessly: "Mr. Aman, if you take another step outside,"

"I will hit your special Cap directly with the next shot."

"Do you think I can knock it away with one shot?"

Aman quickly cried and said: "I won't leave, I won't leave."

"Don't worry, Mr. Wade, I will never leave..." "

Mr. Wade?" Antonio, who was covered in a cold sweat, came back to his senses and looked at him collapsed on the ground. Aman asked in shock:

"You...you know him?!"

Before Aman could speak, Charlie said with a smile: "He called me Mr. Wade when he saw me. Have you forgotten?"

"I...I can't remember clearly..."

Antonio was a little stunned and couldn't recall it in his mind.

Charlie sneered and said: "Your IQ is indeed very low."

After that, he looked at Aman and said with a smile:

"Mr. Aman, you are good at killing with a borrowed knife,"

"But you aren't a bit too natural to imagine that you can use the knife that kills chickens to slay dragons?"

Aman said in fear: "Mr. Wade... Mr. Wade... I didn't mean that..."

Charlie waved his hand: "Also before it's time for you to check out, I'll pay for Mr. Zano first."

After that, he looked at Antonio again and said with a smile:

"You always said that your daughter should see blood, but now she has seen so much human blood,"

"But she hasn't seen your blood yet, do you think it's appropriate?"

Julia on the side came to her senses and said quickly: "No! Please don't hurt my dad!"

Charlie looked at her, and said coldly: "You have no place to speak here!"

"Your father wants you to watch how he kills me,"

"And I can also let you watch how I kill him!"

Antonio's legs softened with fright, and he knelt down with a thud on the ground, he cried and said:

"Mr. Wade, spare my life...I...I dare not disrespect you anymore..."

Charlie smiled and said: "Don't be nervous, I don't plan to take your life now,"

"I said it, I will take you to meet a few people later so that you can have a good chat."

"Thank you, Mr. Wade, thank you, Mr. Wade!"

Upon hearing that Charlie did not intend to take his life, Antonio was relieved and quickly cried and thanked him.

But before he could breathe out, Charlie suddenly raised his gun, and there was a bang!

A bullet hit his left knee directly, smashing it to pieces, leaving only the flesh and skin stuck together.

Antonio held his left thigh and cried out in pain, but Charlie asked him calmly:

"Just because I won't kill you yet doesn't mean I won't let you bleed, what are you happy about so early?"

Charlie's ferocity and chill made Antonio couldn't help but tremble all over.

And Charlie's words made him even more frightened,

Because he knew that Charlie only said that he would not kill him for the time being,

But whether to kill him or not, everything depends on his mood.

Thinking of this, he burst into tears and cried to Charlie:

"Mr. Wade, we really just had a small misunderstanding today."

"Now that you have broken my knee, I have also paid a heavy price."

"I hope you can take my sincerity into consideration and don't be as wrong as me... I really know I was wrong..."

Charlie smiled and said: "Look at you, why are you crying?"

"Mafia men can't bleed and sweat. Shedding tears, you cry like this in front of your daughter, are you worthy of the folks?"

Antonio suddenly felt ashamed.

Although he often talked about the mafia spirit, when he was really pointed at a gun and had already received a shot,

He just wanted to beg Charlie to let him go.

At this time, what else could he care about?

With a mafia spirit, as long as Charlie could spare his life and allow him to take off his pants and run from here to Manhattan,

And run around Manhattan's Central Park three times, he would be willing to do so.

There are very few people who are quite successful in a certain field who are not afraid of death.

Even though Antonio has grown up from fighting all the way to today,

He is not as brave and fearless as he was when he was young.

When Antonio was young, he was just like those fourteen-year-old and fifteen-year-old young men.

His family was impoverished and he had no money.

He had never enjoyed a good day. When he went out to kill people, he couldn't afford to take a taxi.\

Take a bus with a machete on your back, and you have to evade the fare when taking the bus.

This kind of person doesn't even understand the meaning of life.

He can only take the bus to kill people while alive.

After death, he can still lie in an ambulance, so even if a knife hits his forehead, he is not afraid.

However, Antonio has hacked his way step by step until today,

When he has become the largest mafia boss in New York, he is most afraid of death.

His bravery will only be shown when he absolutely crushes the opponent.

For example, ten minutes ago, when he felt that Charlie was just an ant and that he could crush him to death at will, he was completely fearless.

However, when he was at an absolute disadvantage and was likely to lose his life, his bravery had long since disappeared without a trace.

In order to survive and suffer less, Antonio could only cry and say:

"Mr. Wade, if you are still not satisfied, I am willing to compensate you with five million US dollars."

"It is a small gesture..."

## Chapter 5806

Charlie smiled and asked him: "Antonio, how much money do you have in total?"

Antonio looked panicked, avoiding Charlie's eyes, and said hesitantly:

"I...I...I probably have tens of millions of dollars net worth..."

Charlie raised his pistol, put the muzzle against his right cheek, and sneered:

"I don't understand, are you afraid of death or afraid of spending money?"

Antonio trembled with fright, and quickly changed his words:

"No, no... I said it wrong... I said it wrong!"

"Mr. Wade, I... I probably have hundreds of millions of dollars..."

After saying that, Antonio quickly added: "But most of them are real estate..."

Charlie looked at him with a cold expression, and suddenly pulled the trigger in his ear.

The huge vibration made Antonio's right ear buzz.

He didn't know whether it was the vibration of the gun or other reasons.

He only felt numbness in his ear, and... Before he could recover,

He felt a stream of heat flow along his ears to his cheeks and chin.

He was suddenly shocked and subconsciously touched it, only to find that his right ear had been shot off!

The Leta 92f pistol made in Italy has always been the most proud light weapon of the Mafia,

And the power of this pistol is indeed amazing.

The powerful muzzle kinetic energy did not pierce Antonio's right ear, but it was directly broken into pieces.

Antonio covered his ears in pain and screamed desperately.

Julia also cried and covered her father's ears with her hands, and angrily asked Charlie:

"Are you crazy?! Are you a fascist?!"

"Fascist?" Charlie laughed: "How can I be a fascist?"

"Unlike your father, this great mafia man might be related to Mussolini."

After saying that, Charlie looked at Julia with a sharp expression and said sternly:

"Lady, I advise you to be more objective. It was your father who wanted to kill me first."

"Just now he wanted to shoot me in the head, and you saw it."

"If I was not very capable. I've already turned into an unrecognizable corpse."

"Although I gave him two shots, I haven't killed him yet. Compared with him, I'm already too kind!"

Julia was speechless for a moment.

She also knew that it was entirely her father's fault for this matter,

And it was also his intention to commit murder first. To a certain extent, this was his own fault.

However, the man who was shot twice was her father after all, so she could only bite the bullet and say to Charlie:

"Although he wanted to kill you, no matter what, he actually didn't hurt you at all!"

"But you broke one of his legs and one of his ears is gone! In comparison, you are scarless!"

Charlie looked at her and asked calmly: "Do you think your words are objective?"

Although Julia felt guilty, she still Pretended to be firm, saying: "Of course objective!"

"Okay." Charlie nodded expressionlessly, the muzzle of the gun suddenly passed across Antonio's face, and he pulled the trigger again!

Bang!

Antonio only felt that what happened just now was repeated in his left ear.

He reached out and touched it and found that his left ear was also covered in blood.

His whole body almost collapsed and he cried:

"My ear! My ear is all covered with blood. It is no more!"

Charlie looked at him, then looked at Julia who looked horrified, and said calmly:

"If I hear another sentence from you to excuse your mafia father,"

"I will break his limbs, and if you continue to defend him,"

"I will chop him into pieces and feed them to the dogs."

"Then you can watch him being cannibalized by the dogs while continuing to accuse me of being a fascist.

Upon hearing this, Antonio said he was so frightened that he almost fainted.

He cried and said to Julia: "My good daughter, from now on, don't say anything..."

Julia was also extremely frightened. When her father said this, she could only nod her head, not daring to speak another word.

Charlie ignored her and asked Antonio: "Are you going to tell the truth now, or will you continue to tell lies?"

Antonio was extremely frightened and cried: "I tell the truth...I tell the truth..."

"My all assets are approximately more than 2 billion US dollars..."

"There are about a quarter of real estate, a quarter of various fixed assets, and another quarter of cash, deposits, stocks, and trusts in various forms,"

"And the remaining quarter are all drug deals and various contraband..."

Charlie sneered: "It's only two billion, what are you keeping a secret? Are you afraid that I will rob you of money?"

Antonio shook his head subconsciously and blurted out: "No, no, that's not what I meant..."

Charlie pulled Jordan beside him, looked at Antonio, and said,

"Let me introduce to you, this is Jordan, he opened a roast goose shop in Chinatown,"

"And a gang called Burning Angel came to him and demanded \$3,000 a month from him. What does this Burning Angel have to do with you?"

"They have nothing to do with me..."

Antonio subconsciously wanted to excuse himself, but before he finished speaking,

He suddenly realized that this might be the reason why Charlie came to find him!

In other words, Charlie already knew about his relationship with Burning Angel!

Aman on the side also completely collapsed!

He cried in his heart: "Dmn it, what kind of bad luck did I have!"

"Charlie clearly came to trouble Antonio today, how could I just happen to come to Antonio's place today!"

"I came half an hour late, Maybe Antonio would be already dead, and I don't have to offend Charlie anymore, let alone get shot..."

Antonio was already scared to death. He never expected Charlie to deliberately act in front of his house today. Its real purpose turns out to be to settle accounts with him!

When he thought that he had been shot three times by Charlie, if he continued to use forceful words at this time, he might get shot again, so he could only say truthfully:

"Mr. Wade... I'll tell you the truth... this Burning Angel, is a small gang controlled by me..."

"Although they are loyal to me, I really don't know that they are so blind that they dare to offend you."

"I hope you will give me a chance. I will call the boss of Burning Angel over and kill him with my own hands. He will give you an explanation!"

Charlie looked at Julia again and asked her: "Do you see clearly? Who is the fascist who is always willing to kill people?"

"Your father will kill others to please me in order to survive."

"Say it yourself, is this kind of trash still a human being?"

"Even worse than a fcking dog! Dogs are more loyal than him."

Julia was too ashamed to raise her head, while Antonio quickly explained:

"Mr. Wade... ..I...I also want to vent your anger with this Jordan..."

Charlie ignored him and asked Jordan: "Jordan, how much money can your store make in a month?"

Jordan said: "Mr. Wade, the store can only earn up to four thousand dollars a month,"

"Because have to pay rent, hire someone to wash the dishes, and hire someone to help during the day. Moreover, have to pay a protection fee, so four thousand dollars is already the limit..."

Charlie nodded, looked at Antonio, and asked:

"Does the mafia like to ask for 75% of other people's profits as protection fees?"

Antonio shook his head repeatedly: "No, no... there may be a misunderstanding here..."

"It may be a decision made by Burning Angel without my permission..."

Charlie waved his hand: "I don't care about this. From now on, Jordan will be the boss of the Chinese Gang."

"You local gangs have to pay him 75% of your profits as protection fees,"

"No matter how much you lose! Do you understand?" Antonio's eyes widened, but he didn't dare to say anything

Now he just wanted to get through the difficulty first, so he could only nod and say:

"I understand... Mr. Wade, don't worry, I will personally hand over the monthly protection fee to Brother Jordan..."

Charlie waved his hand: "You don't have this chance. If you behave well today, tomorrow morning, there will be a ship to take you and Mr. Aman out of New York alive."

"As for the protection fee, you can let your daughter pay on time every month. But if you don't perform well today, you won't survive tomorrow."

Antonio asked in horror: "Mr. Wade...you...where are you going to send me and Mr. Aman?!"

Charlie casually said: "You are going to Syria. A friend of mine has set up a war experience summer camp there."

"You two can go there and experience it. Transportation, food, and accommodation are included,"

"And there are also war experience projects to participate in. You don't have to pay a penny!"

## Chapter 5807

In Charlie's opinion, there are two ways to purge the evil forces in Europe and America.

Either, just like he did before, whether it is the Canadian mafia that trafficked human beings,

Or the Mexican gangsters who did all kinds of evil, will all be taken away, killed, or kidnapped.

or else, they will never stop.

Although he looked down on this little money, since he came today, he naturally couldn't go back empty-handed.

Since he planned to make Jordan bigger and stronger in the future,

Antonio's family was the first nourishing meal he prepared for him to feast on.

At this time, Antonio no longer cares about the 75% profit that Charlie is taking.

He just wants to survive and at least hold on to some of the family business.

If there is another chance in the future, he may be able to seek revenge on Charlie.

If he doesn't have this chance, It doesn't matter, at least he survived.

However, when Charlie said that he was going to be sent to Syria,

He suddenly collapsed and cried: "Mr. Wade, you can tell me anything you want."

"I can give you 75% of my profits or even 85% of my profits."

"I will give it to you without thinking, but you can't let me leave New York!"

Charlie said coldly: "There are only two choices for you, either go to Syria; or die."

Antonio choked up and said: "If I leave, the Zano family will be leaderless,"

"The family is broken up, and the 75% of the profits promised to you are gone."

"If you keep me, I will work hard to make money for you..."

Charlie looked at Julia glanced at her and said:

"After you leave, your daughter will take over your organization."

Julia immediately exclaimed: "I don't want it! I don't want to be a mafia!"

Charlie asked her curiously: "Wasn't your father saying that you need to see more blood?"

"I thought he wanted to train you to be his successor."

Julia shook her head and said, "No... he just wanted to marry me to that man..."

"Oh... .." Charlie suddenly understood, nodded slightly,

Turned around and looked at Aman, and asked with a smile:

"Mr. Aman, you came to the US this time to find a partner?"

Aman was ready to die, and could only say awkwardly:

"Yes... Antonio said that he is willing to marry his daughter to me..."

Charlie smiled and said: "Then we are considered destined to meet each other twice."

"Both times you were busy finding a partner, but I messed it up both times. Mr. Aman, aren't you angry?"

Aman was also extremely depressed, and he didn't expect that.

He wanted to solve the other half's problem twice, and both times he met Charlie.

It was better last time. Although he lost face, he only got a dozen slaps.

Today was really miserable. One of his legs was lost.

Judging from his appearance, Charlie had to send him to Syria.

However, when faced with Charlie's question, how could he dare to be disobedient?

He quickly shook his head and said: "Mr. Wade, how can I be angry with you..."

"If you can not be angry with me, I will be grateful..."

Charlie nodded and said with satisfaction:

"It's best if you have this consciousness so that you can suffer less in the future."

After that, he looked at Antonio again and asked him:

"How many children do you have?"

Antonio subconsciously said: "Three..."

Charlie pointed at Julia and asked him: "Which number is hers?"

Antonio hurriedly said: "Julia is my second child."

Charlie asked again: "Where are the two? Are they boys or girls?"

Antonio answered honestly: "The other two are boys, the older one is 25 years old,"

"The younger one is 19 years old..."

Charlie asked him: "Who do you plan to let take over in the future?"

Antonio quickly said Said: "I plan to let my eldest son take over..."

Charlie nodded and said: "Okay, then let your eldest son take over your position starting from tomorrow."

"I will let Joseph from Cataclysmic Front fly over to follow him. Let's make a connection and let Joseph get to know him."

"If he disobeys in the future, he will know who to target with his gun."

Antonio was horrified when he heard about Cataclysmic Front and Joseph.

The name of Cataclysmic Front is almost known to everyone in the mercenary and gang fields.

Antonio naturally knew about this legendary organization and Joseph's legendary experience.

But he never expected that according to Charlie,

## Chapter 5808

He could call Joseph to New York at any time, giving the impression that Joseph was one of his subordinates.

And Aman couldn't help but begin to re-analyze the relationship between Charlie and Cataclysmic Front.

In the past, he thought that Cataclysmic Front had taken away half of the Wade family's assets,

So he protected the Wade family.

But now it seems that Charlie's strength is astonishingly abnormal,

And his personality is extremely strong. How could such a person succumb to others?

Therefore, whether the Cataclysmic Front conquered the Wade family,

Or whether Charlie conquered the Cataclysmic Front is still a question mark.

However, judging from Charlie's performance, it seems that the latter is more likely.

Thinking of this, Aman was even more horrified in his heart.

If even Cataclysmic Front is defeated by Charlie,

Then what does he mean to him? Isn't he going to be completely manipulated by him?

Antonio was even more frightened at this time.

Because he could hear that Charlie wanted Joseph to supervise the Zano family.

Once the Zano family stopped obeying Charlie's instructions,

They would probably be killed by Joseph.

At this moment, Charlie did not conceal his threat at all, saying coldly:

"From tomorrow on, no matter who in the Zano family speaks out,"

"As long as anyone is disobedient, I will ask Joseph to kill him immediately."

"If anyone is disobedient, Just kill one, and kill two if they disobey,"

"Until there is no one left in your family, do you understand?"

Antonio dared not be careless in the slightest, he nodded desperately while trembling, and murmured:

"I am listening! Got it! I understand!"

Charlie nodded, pointed at Jordan beside him, and said calmly:

"Since Jordan will be your boss in the future, then your family will naturally protect your boss to the death."

"Ensure his personal safety, so from now on, no matter what the situation,"

"As long as Jordan gets an accident or is injured by someone,"

"I will assume that you did not protect him well,"

"Regardless of whether it was you who did it or not."

"If Jordan breaks a leg, I will let all the male members of the Zano family lose two pieces."

"If Jordan dies, I will let all the male members of the Zano family be buried with him."

"Do you understand?"

This was the first time Antonio heard about this exaggerated continuous sitting system,

And his eyes were filled with tears. He almost fell to the ground with his eyes wide open,

But he also knew very well in his heart that Charlie was going to kill the Zano family and would not leave any room for the family at all.

Disobedience would lead to death, and resistance would lead to death.

In this case, the only choice is obedience, and it is all unconditional obedience.

Helpless, he could only cry and nod in agreement and said:

"Don't worry, Mr. Wade, the Zano family will do their best to ensure the personal safety..."

Charlie nodded, looked at Aman again, and said:

"You are also a member of this joint sitting system,"

"So I advise you to leave all your cronies and direct descendants in the hands of Jordan."

"They will be used by him, and protect him at the same time,"

"Otherwise if something happens to him, you will only be more unlucky."

"When you sleep in Syria, don't blame me for not reminding you."

As soon as Aman heard this Charlie insisted on sending him to Syria, and he became panicked and at a loss.

He had no idea what Charlie's intentions were,

And that place was always war-torn. Who would be willing to run there if he didn't care about his life?

When he thought of this, he begged Charlie:

"Mr. Wade, all the mistakes I made today were due to my confusion."

"Please don't be like me. If you are still not satisfied, you can hit me or scold me."

"Just give me an account and I'll give you the money. Just tell me how much you want."

"I just ask you to be noble and let me go..."

Charlie looked at him and said coldly:

"When we were in Northern Europe, I let you go,"

"Otherwise how could you still have a chance to show up here?"

Saying that Charlie shook his head and sighed:

"I gave you a chance, but you didn't grasp it!"

## Chapter 5809

Aman still wanted to beg for mercy, but Charlie was too lazy to talk to him anymore,

And said to him and Antonio in a cold voice:

“Tell both of your men to withdraw.”

“In ten minutes, you two will go to Chinatown with me!”

At this time, Antonio and Aman no longer dared to have any disobedience to Charlie.

So, the two immediately followed his orders and separated their men and their families.

In less than ten minutes, these people had all evacuated from the Zano family’s manor.

Charlie released his spiritual energy to investigate,

And after seeing that the entire manor was indeed empty, he said to Jordan:

"Jordan, go and drive the car to the door."

"Okay Mr. Wade!" Jordan nodded and left quickly.

Charlie looked at Antonio and Aman again, and said calmly:

"You two, get up and go to the door quickly."

Antonio looked at his useless legs and choked up:

"Mr. Wade, I... I can't walk. ..."

"Yes, Mr. Wade..." Aman also said with a dejected face:

"I can't walk either. My right leg hurts so much that I can't even stand up..."

Charlie was cold. He said: "You two, one has a broken right leg,"

"And the other has a broken left leg. You two happened to be helping each other out."

"Since you can't be father-in-law and son-in-law, you can at least be a pair of brothers who support each other."

Julia couldn't stand it anymore and quickly wanted to help her father up, but Charlie warned:

"Don't interfere."

Julia asked angrily: "Why do you torture them like this?"

Charlie asked in return: "This is called torturing"

After that, he pointed to the medieval-style torture rack beside him and asked her:

"Would you like your dad to introduce to you how this thing is usually used?"

"Then use it on him to demonstrate all those tricks for you to see?"

Julia still wanted to refute, but Antonio turned pale with fright.

He quickly pushed his daughter away and said nervously:

"Julia, don't help me, I will do it myself. I can stand up..."

After that, he barely stood on one leg and jumped towards Aman with difficulty.

At this time, Aman was also afraid that Charlie would attack them again,

So he quickly jumped to Antonio on one leg.

After the two hugged each other, they supported each other with their bodies and barely managed to stand still.

Charlie ignored Julia and walked out.

Antonio and Aman also jumped out quickly hugging each other.

Julia followed all the way, and when the four of them came out,

Jordan had already driven the car to the entrance of the manor.

Charlie stuffed Antonio and Aman into the back seat and then walked to the passenger seat.

While opening the door, he said to Julia who was following behind:

"You don't have to follow, go find someone to take the wine from the wine cellar."

"Dispose of the body and tell all the Zano family members and Amoramovich's bodyguards that I will kill anyone who dares to come to avenge them both!"

Julia asked nervously: "Then my father can he come home?"

"He can't," Charlie said:

"He will be in Chinatown tonight, and will get on the boat to Syria tomorrow."

Julia hurriedly said: "We must let him say goodbye to his family. ..."

Charlie nodded and said: "Don't worry, I will let you say goodbye to him tomorrow, just wait for the notice."

After saying that, Charlie got into the car and said to Jordan:

"Drive."

The car quickly left the Zano family's estate and headed towards Chinatown.

At the same time, in the roast goose shop in Chinatown,

The five members of the Burning Angels were still guarded by Hogan and Darwin and they did not dare to move.

At this time, they were hoping that since they had not gone back for a long time,

Their boss and other comrades would realize the problem and seize the time to send someone over to rescue them.

However, they also knew in their hearts that if they didn't go back for just one or two hours,

The boss would not have any suspicion.

If they wanted to make him suspicious, they would have to wait at least until early tomorrow morning.

Just when they were hoping for a miracle to happen, the door was suddenly pushed open.

The five of them looked at the door expectantly, only to see Charlie, whom they least expected to see, step in.

What they didn't expect even more was that they were followed by two weirdos hugging each other and hopping on each other's legs.

However, they soon saw that the reason why these two "weirdos" were so weird was not because they were really weird,

But because their other legs were constantly covered with blood.

If they looked closely, they could see that both men could be seen suffering from gunshot wounds.

# Chapter 5810

At this time, the leader of the five, sharp-eyed Will Johnson,

Suddenly recognized one of the people with a broken leg.

He exclaimed in horror: "Za...Boss Zano?!"

The other four people after hearing this, everyone's eyes widened,

And they subconsciously looked in the direction where Will Johnson was looking.

It didn't matter, all four of them were scared to death!

Who would have thought that their boss's boss, the boss of the New York Mafia,

And the talker of the Zano family, Antonio Zano,

Would be so embarrassed now following Charlie to this small roast goose shop!

You know, this is the most powerful mafia boss in New York!

Just like the emperor of New York's underground kingdom!

But now, this underground emperor, who had unlimited fame and power in the sunset, has become a miserable prisoner.

This contrast is shocking to everyone!

Darwin was also dumbfounded at this time!

He has been the boss of the Chinese Gang for some years,

However the Chinese Gang can only be regarded as the lowest level in the entire low-level gang circle in New York.

It is completely the bottom of the bottom.

He has long been familiar with Antonio,

And in his opinion, he knows that he is not even qualified to surrender to Antonio.

But how could he have imagined that Antonio had become Charlie's prisoner at this moment?

Antonio didn't expect that someone would recognize him here.

When he saw that the other person had dark skin and was dressed,

He knew he must be a gang member.

He immediately realized in his heart that this person should be a member of the peripheral gangs under his command.

Thinking of this, he couldn't help but think of what he had experienced today.

If these blind bastards hadn't collected protection money from Charlie,

He wouldn't have been subjected to such inhuman torture,

And he felt angry.

He had forgotten his current situation, looked at Will Johnson,

Gritted his teeth and cursed:

"You son of a bitch, who is your boss?!"

"Who asked you to come here to collect protection money?!"

"Dog eyes, how dare you come here and act so arrogantly!"

Will Johnson didn't expect that his idol, his boss, would insult him as soon as he opened his mouth.

Naturally, he felt very aggrieved, and could only say angrily:

"Zhao Boss No, I am Will from Burning Angel!"

"My boss is Daniel, and it was Boss Zano who asked him to take over Chinatown and Lower Manhattan,"

"So he gave me the land of Chinatown... All was ordered by you!"

Antonio panicked in his heart, and then he remembered that he had personally defined the sphere of influence for the Burning Angels and other peripheral gangs,

And asked them to allocate themselves to their areas in the shortest possible time.

The occupation was completely cleared, and the Chinatown area was indeed allocated to the Burning Angels.

In other words, no matter who this area is allocated to,

The other party will definitely find this roast goose shop,

And they will definitely offend Charlie for it...

So, he who was furious just now suddenly became silent and looked around without speaking.

Seeing that he was starting to act stupid,

Charlie slapped him in the face and said in a cold voice:

"Look at how cowardly you are, you really embarrass the mafia!"

Antonio received a slap in the face,

But he could only say with a face full of shame:

"I'm sorry, Mr. Wade...it's all my fault..."

Charlie asked coldly: "Do you know who the second boss of Burning Angel is?"

"Yes." Antonio explained: "The second boss is Mike, and Daniel, we grew up together."

Charlie said coldly:

"Call Daniel and ask him to bring that microphone and come here to see you immediately!"

After that, Charlie said again:

"Tonight, I'm going to take you down and meet all the gang leaders and second-in-commands."

# Chapter 5811

Antonio is the underground emperor of the entire New York,

So when he summoned the gang leaders, without exception,

They all responded happily and immediately.

Moreover, the words that Charlie arranged for Antonio were also quite confusing.

According to Charlie's request, he told the gang leader that he had a very important big business to discuss with them,

And asked them to bring one of their most trusted confidants to a roast goose shop in Chinatown for a secret meeting.

In addition, Charlie also asked him to tell the bosses that the business to be discussed this time was very important,

So he chose a place like Chinatown to hide his eyes.

Therefore, Antonio also specifically told them not to tell anyone except the confidants about this,

Otherwise, he will be permanently kicked out of the Zano family.

These gang leaders all follow Antonio for a living.

The reason why they can have their own territory in New York is not only their own fierce competition,

But also relying on Antonio's support.

If they don't have Antonio's support, then their territory will surely be contested by other gangs under Antonio's command.

Therefore, these gangs are very loyal to him and are afraid that if they dissatisfy Antonio in the slightest, they will be kicked out by him.

To put it bluntly, these gangs in New York who are loyal to the Zano family are like countless evil dogs raised by the family, and each evil dog has its own food bowl.

The size of the food bowl may be different,

And the quantity and quality of food in it may also be different,

But because everyone belongs to the same owner,

No dog dares to covet the food in other dogs' bowls.

But once a dog here is abandoned by its owner,

The other dogs will snatch all the food in that dog's food bowl as quickly as possible,

And then tear the dog into pieces and eat it.

What's interesting is that if there are few such dogs,

They may not be able to control them, but the more such dogs are raised, the higher the loyalty of each dog will be.

Soon, the Burning Angel boss Daniel, who was the first to be notified, drove to Chinatown with his confidant Mike.

On the way here, the two of them had been speculating on Antonio's specific purpose of letting them come this time.

After all, Antonio only said on the phone that he had important business to discuss with them,

But did not disclose any specific information.

Both Daniel and Mike felt that Antonio suddenly summoned them in Chinatown,

Probably because they had made good progress in Chinatown recently,

So they got Antonio's special attention.

After all, the Chinese Gang lost completely this time.

The Burning Angels conquered cities and territories in Chinatown and the entire Chinatown area,

And the progress even exceeded their own expectations.

In their own eyes, this was a great victory for them.

After a victory, it is natural for the commander to reward based on his merits.

Therefore, the two people were extremely excited along the way,

Constantly thinking about the bright future of Burning Angel in their hearts.

When they parked the car in front of the roast goose shop,

They first saw the motorcycles of several of their men.

Mike was a little surprised and said:

"Boss, these cars seem to belong to Will and his friends."

Daniel was not only surprised he said:

"In the past few days, Will has been in Chinatown to eliminate those Chinese gang members and disobedient vendors."

"Maybe they did a better job, so the boss was impressed."

Mike quickly whispered and reminded:

"Boss, although Will's sister is your mistress,"

"I still want to remind you, be careful of Will."

"This guy is very ambitious and will never be willing to be a minion under you for too long."

"Maybe his ambition is greater than your current achievements."

"This time he has been appreciated by the boss,"

"And I am afraid that he will be even more prosperous in the future."

"You must be careful!"

## Chapter 5812

Mike's words immediately made Daniel's expression stern.

Daniel is not a smart man.

His biggest advantage is that he dares to kill and fight.

He did gather a lot of gangsters who were loyal to him on the streets.

Coming from a grassroots background, he didn't know much about tactics.

He just felt that if the brothers followed him and worked hard,

He would not treat them badly.

If he had a bowl of rice, his brothers would have a mouthful of soup.

But Mike is much smarter than him.

When Mike graduated from high school, he was the only top student in his black neighborhood who was admitted to a serious public university in the same year.

In that neighborhood, the crime rate and divorce rate are almost sky-high.

Many young people learn to shoot guns and take drugs before their hair grows.

If there is not a gunfight in the neighborhood every day,

Everyone living here will not be able to sleep due to too much silence.

In such an environment, Mike was able to be admitted to the university,

Which shows that his mind is beyond the reach of ordinary people.

However, after Mike went to college, he felt a huge gap in college due to his family's poverty.

He saw the rich people's extravagant pursuit of money and the fanatical pursuit of the rich by female classmates,

But he, because of lack of money and skin color,

He was alienated and ostracized by his classmates.

From that time on, Mike went astray.

He began to steal other students' belongings on campus, including mobile phones, computers, and bicycles.

As long as they could be converted into money, he would not let them go.

So in the second year of college, he was expelled from the school.

Desperate, he simply joined the gang he met when he was writing off his debts,

Which was the predecessor of Burning Angel.

Relying on his own mind, Mike gradually became the second-in-command of the Burning Angel, winning Daniel's respect.

However, Mike has always been worried that his second-in-command position is not stable enough,

And he feels that his biggest threat is Will.

Therefore, Mike took the opportunity to say something bad about Will and asked Daniel to be more wary of Will.

But what the two of them don't know at this moment is that Will's life is already hanging by a thread,

And their current situation will also undergo great changes.

Soon, the two of them entered the roast goose shop.

On the first floor of the Roast Goose Restaurant,

Antonio, who had broken his leg and lost two ears, was sitting behind a table in the deepest part of the hotel, facing the door, wearing a woolen hat.

The two came in and recognized Antonio at a glance, but they didn't feel anything unusual about Antonio.

The only thing they couldn't figure out was why he wore a woolen hat, which made him look nondescript.

As soon as Daniel came in, he said to Antonio very respectfully: "Hello, boss!"

Mike also said respectfully: "Hello, boss!"

Antonio glanced at the two of them with complicated eyes and said,

"Daniel, when we arrive in Syria in the future, Don't blame me."

Daniel was confused and asked subconsciously:

"Boss, what do you mean? Who is going to Syria? Are we going to Syria?"

Antonio sighed deeply, Charlie had told him to share the plan frankly with them.

Tonight, he will use Antonio to invite the leaders of all the organizations under his command,

And the second boss one after another, and then seize them all.

Tomorrow morning, when Joseph arrives, he will take away all the bosses of these gangs,

And let the second boss see them with his own eyes.

After watching the boss being taken away by Joseph of Cataclysmic Front,

He promoted these second-in-commands to top leaders and asked them to take over their gang.

## Chapter 5813

Charlie wanted to use this trick to make the entire gang in New York become his puppets in one night.

After these surviving second masters, the second masters who were completely shocked returned,

Considering that behind Charlie was the powerful Cataclysmic Front,

They would never dare to have any disobedience in the future, and would definitely obey Charlie's orders wholeheartedly.

And the Zano family's decades of hard work will be wiped out by Charlie after this night.

Antonio, who had already resigned himself to his fate, could only lament to Daniel at this time:

"Daniel, not only us but also the leaders of other gangs,"

"After they arrive one after another, everyone will go to Syria together and set off early tomorrow morning."

Daniel even more Surprised, asked him: "Boss, we are a gang, not mercenaries."

"What can we do in Syria? We can't go to Syria to grab territory, right?"

"The people there are much more fierce than us, and we also use nine-millimeter pistols."

"They should be running around carrying RPGs over there to grab territory..."

Antonio lamented: "Let Mr. Wade tell you the details."

"Mr. Wade? Who is this Mr. Wade?"

The two were confused. Didn't understand what Antonio wanted to say at all.

At this time, a man with an East Asian face walked out of the kitchen.

He looked at the two of them and said calmly: "Starting from tomorrow, all gang bosses under the Zano family, including you Burning Angels, will be sent to Syria."

"The position of the boss will automatically be taken over by the gang's second-in-command."

"At the same time, the new boss will hand over 75% of the gang's profits to the Chinese Gang on a monthly basis."

"If anyone dares to disobey, he will also be sent to Syria until an obedient boss is screened out. That's all!"

The two of them seemed to have heard a huge joke, especially Daniel, who was even more disdainful.

In his opinion, the Chinese Gang has been defeated by him and will soon be completely driven out of Chinatown.

He is asked to pay tribute to the Chinese Gang which will take 75% of the profits. This is simply a fantasy.

Daniel subconsciously took out his pistol, pointed it at Charlie, and blurted out:

“Where did you come from? You are so loud here! Are you also a member of the Chinese Gang?”

Charlie took a chopstick out of the chopstick box in front of Antonio at an extremely fast speed.

He pulled out a chopstick and flicked his hand.

The chopstick was like a bullet, piercing the side of Antonio’s pistol.

There was a “chu” sound, and Antonio felt his wrist go numb.

He looked down and saw that the pistol had disappeared.

Then, he heard a thud from the wall behind him. When he turned around, he was almost scared to death!

His beloved Beretta pistol was pierced through with a hole in the side by chopsticks, and was nailed directly to the wall!

He looked at Charlie in horror. He really couldn't understand how humans could use chopsticks made of bamboo to pierce a pistol made of steel!

Moreover, the sleeve of the pistol and the barrel inside are made of high-strength steel.

It is impossible for even bullets to penetrate it, let alone a chopstick!

For a moment, Daniel's legs became weak with fear, and he subconsciously wanted to turn around and run away.

But at this time, two men with East Asian faces walked in at the door.

After they came in, one of them took out a pistol and put the gun directly against the back of their heads.

These two people are Jordan and Darwin who are ambushing outside.

Immediately afterward, the two tied up Daniel and Mike and took them directly to the second floor.

At this time, Will Johnson and the other five people had already been tied into rice dumplings and thrown on the second floor.

Before Daniel could figure out what was happening, Jordan and Darwin tied him tightly with hemp rope and stuffed a rag with a greasy smell into his mouth.

Jordan kicked him to Will's side, took an electric kettle filled with water, pressed the boil button,

And said in a cold voice: "I'm warning you, there will be other gang members coming soon,"

"No one is allowed to make any sound, otherwise, after this pot of water boils, I will pour it all into his mouth!"

Antonio gave full play to his status as the underground emperor of New York.

All the gang leaders who were notified by him came in a hurry and happily.

However, no one could have expected that what awaited them in Chinatown was to be tied up and stuffed with smelly rags.

Finally, they would squat on the second floor of a roast goose shop with a group of first and second leaders from their brothers' units.

As more and more people arrived, Antonio became more and more panicked.

Taking advantage of the gap where the previous group of people had just been brought to the second floor and the next group of people hadn't arrived yet,

He couldn't help but pitifully ask Charlie: "Mr. Wade... these gang bosses were all deceived by me into going to Syria."

"I have sold out all the gang bosses in New York by myself."

"When everyone gets to Syria, if they join forces to beat me, I will die there..."

Charlie smiled and asked him: "Then what do you think we should do?"

Antonio swallowed and said cautiously: "You see I'm so cooperative,"

"Why don't you just leave me in New York and work for you and that strong guy..."

Charlie asked back: "If you stay in New York, you won't be afraid of people seeking revenge on you?"

"You tricked all the gang bosses into going to Syria."

"Do you think their families will come after you to fight for them?"

Antonio twitched the corner of his mouth and asked tentatively:

"Mr. Wade, why don't you just let me go back to Sicily..."

Charlie patted his shoulder and said calmly: "Okay Antonio, stop fcking dreaming,"

"For your safety, you don't have to worry. Although the place you are going to is a little backward,"

"But after all, it is a place where the rule of law is emphasized."

"The main theme is that whoever hits someone will be beaten, and whoever kills will pay with his life."

"Among those people upstairs, if anyone really kills you, my old friend Commander Hamid will definitely avenge you."

"Unlike New York, where you have killed so many people, New York can still let you get away with it."

"If you stay in New York, you will definitely not survive a week."

Antonio saw that Charlie was so rigid that he would not let himself loose at all, and his heart was already filled with despair.

However, Charlie's words gave him a little comfort that was better than nothing.

It felt like everyone was in jail together, and at least there were prison guards and wardens to scare everyone so that they did not dare to be too presumptuous.

However, this time he really offended the people upstairs.

Even if he still has a chance to return to New York in the future, he for sure won't have a good life.

The kidnapping continued until early morning.

The gang bosses who came after the Burning Angel were tied up like hairy crabs before they could figure out what was going on,

And their mouths were tightly gagged. They didn't even have a chance to ask the whole story,

And they still don't know. Why did his always-trusted boss, the pride of Sicily, the famous Antonio Zano, deceive them into being tied up here?

And Charlie didn't talk nonsense to them. When they arrived, he tied them up and threw them upstairs, letting Jordan keep an eye on them.

Anyone who dared to move, struggle, or make inappropriate noises would have a pot of boiling water poured over their crotch.

Pouring boiling water on the crotch may sound cruel, but compared with the methods of these gang members, it is still far worse.

However, this method was surprisingly effective.

With a pot of boiling water in front of him, no one of the dozens of murderous gang bosses dared to make a mistake.

## Chapter 5814

In the early morning, Joseph and more than ten Cataclysmic Front soldiers rushed to New York on a Concorde passenger plane.

Joseph didn't know why Charlie suddenly asked him to come to New York,

So he didn't dare to delay as soon as he got off the plane and went straight to Chinatown.

After Joseph arrived, he saw Charlie on the first floor and immediately said respectfully:

"Mr. Wade, what are your orders?"

Charlie pointed to Antonio beside him and said: "This is the boss of the New York Mafia."

"Get to know each other. There are many well-known figures in the New York gangs upstairs."

"You can also say hello to them one by one in a moment. These people are cheap at heart."

"I can take care of them all by myself, but they won't."

"To be convinced, you need someone with a reputation, a background, and a team to really suppress them."

"After dawn, you take him and his younger brothers to leave the United States by boat,"

"Then transfer them to Syria and hand them over directly to Hamid."

Joseph nodded immediately and said: "Okay Mr. Wade,"

"Is there anything else you want me to do?"

Charlie glanced at Antonio and said: "This Antonio is an absolutely good Sicilian man, but he just has a lame leg."

"Tell Hamid that Syria's medical conditions are limited, so there is no need to bother to treat him."

“Just find a carpenter and give him a crutch, Hamid has been building fortifications, and there must be a shortage of labor. A lame leg will not stop him from working.”

When Antonio heard this, he wanted to die here on the spot.

After working hard all his life, he never thought that he would now reduced to this field.

At this time, Charlie asked Jordan to go upstairs again and bring Aman Ramovich down.

Aman has seen the world, and the moment he saw Joseph, he immediately recognized him.

At this moment, Aman was naturally shocked.

He never expected that Charlie would be able to bring Joseph so quickly.

It had only been a few hours since last night. It was incredible that Joseph could appear in New York in such a short period of time.

Charlie asked Jordan to bring Aman to him and instructed Jordan to take out the rag from his mouth.

Aman quickly said respectfully: "Mr. Wade...you...what orders do you have for me?"

Charlie pointed at Joseph and said calmly: "Aren't you always curious about my relationship with Cataclysmic Front?"

"Well, now that the head of Cataclysmic Front is here, let him talk to you."

Joseph's expression was stern. He was afraid that Aman had said something treacherous, so he immediately said:

"Mr. Wade, everyone from top to bottom of Cataclysmic Front is at your disposal,"

"If this person makes rude remarks and slanders the Wade family, please order your subordinates to give him a long memory!"

Aman was so frightened that he lost his mind.

It seemed that his guess was indeed correct.

It was not the Wade family that was conquered by the Cataclysmic Front, but Charlie who conquered the Cataclysmic Front

As for Joseph, he was also frightened in his heart.

Back in Waderest Mountain, he was so arrogant that he wanted to crush Charlie's parents to ashes.

If Charlie hadn't been so generous and patronizing, his deceased parents would also be implicated because of him.

What's more, he cut off his meridians on his own that day.

If it weren't for Charlie's intervention, he would still be a useless person.

How could he have made successive breakthroughs and become a master of the dark realm?

Therefore, every time he thinks of that time, Joseph feels ashamed.

The key point is that Charlie is too low-key. It is clearly Cataclysmic Front that surrenders to him.

He insists on claiming to the outside world that the Wade family has spent all their wealth to ask Cataclysmic Front to support them.

Therefore, Joseph is unavoidably panicked. He wishes he could tell the whole world that he lost, but Charlie wants to tell the whole world that he was the winner.

As soon as Joseph's words came out, Aman was also horrified.

He quickly apologized in panic: "I'm sorry, Mr. Wade, I also listened to the rumors from the outside world..."

Charlie smiled and said: "If I were familiar with you, I would have learned your methods and did not ask Antonio to kill you."

After saying that, Charlie looked at Antonio and asked him: "Antonio, I will give you a proposal, if you are willing to kill Aman,"

"I will let you stay in New York and continue to be in charge of the Zano family. What do you think?"

When Antonio heard this, he didn't care whether what Charlie said was true or false,

And blurted out without any hesitation: "Mr. Wade! As long as you give me a gun,"

"I will beat Aman's head into a hornet's nest now!"

Aman's face suddenly turned pale.

He didn't know if Charlie really meant this. After all, a few hours ago, he had the idea of borrowing a knife to kill Charlie,

And wanted to use Antonio's hand to kill Charlie.

If Charlie also tried to treat him in the same way, Then he would definitely die in Antonio's hands.

Seeing the fear on Aman's face, Charlie smiled and said,

"You don't have to be so scared. I told you that I won't be the same as you."

Aman breathed a sigh of relief. At this moment, he no longer cares whether he goes to Syria or Afghanistan.

He is willing to go anywhere as long as it can keep him alive.

Charlie looked at him and said seriously: "Aman, you are different from those gang bosses upstairs and Antonio."

"They are all little shrimps who can't stand on the stage, but you are an Oligarch after,"

"I think you were brave and resourceful when you were young,"

"But in the past two years, as you get older, you have gradually been dazzled by beauty."

Aman lowered his head in shame.

He also realized early on that the two times he fell into Charlie's hands were all because of women.

However, he was not really obsessed with s3x, mainly because he had other thoughts besides women both times.

He wanted to win the respect he deserved in Western Europe,

So he wanted to marry Helena. He wanted to quickly establish a foothold in New York, so he wanted to marry Antonio's family.

In the final analysis, it is still forced by the current situation.

It is true that he is an oligarch, but because of his identity and background, he is indeed marginalized in Western Europe and North America.

What's the use of just having money? Although he can live in the best house in the UK, even a three-year-old British kid dares to insult him in front of the TV camera and tell him to get out of the UK.

Just when he felt decadent about his life, Charlie said again:

"Aman, neither Eastern Europe nor Western Europe is suitable for you,"

"And Europe and the United States are not suitable for you either,"

"But you can find the next development in your life in Syria Direction,"

"I will let Hamid focus on you when the time comes. If you can gain his appreciation, you may be able to find a new goal in life in Syria."

In Charlie's view, Hamid has a grassroots background, and the same goes for you.

Hamid relied on the barrel of a gun to make a name for himself,

While Aman relied on his brains to create an oligarch legend of his own.

If these two people can cooperate, they will definitely get very positive results.

Of course, Aman may not look down on Hamid's three-acre land, but now he has no other choice.

Charlie will forcefully lower his expectations and let him regard Hamid as the new partner in his life.

It's like finding a partner for a rich man who has higher eyes than his head.

He wants someone who is tall, thin, beautiful, big, tender, tight, knowledgeable, and pure.

But it doesn't matter to Charlie.

He will use his methods to compress this rich man's demands in one single step, to just one, just to survive..

## Chapter 5815

Aman also knew that if Charlie spared his life, he would be repaying evil with kindness.

In this case, his best choice was to accept it as soon as he saw it and stop trying to plead.

Otherwise, if Charlie changed his mind, he would be very disappointed.

Thus he may get a worse offer.

In desperation, he could only say to Charlie: "Don't worry, Mr. Wade, when I get to Syria,"

"I will try my best to communicate with Commander Hamid deeply and do my little bit..."

Charlie nodded approvingly and said with a smile: "Not bad, not bad,"

"Mr. Aman is the upper class for sure."

"In this society, There are not many people who are really on the road of understanding."

After that, he looked at the time and said to Joseph:

"Joseph, it's dawn, and people are almost arriving one after another."

"Contact the boat, and then go up to the upper floor."

"Give these guys a dose of strong medicine, and you can start taking them out of the United States."

Joseph nodded respectfully and asked Charlie:

"Mr. Wade, how to use the strong medicine specifically?"

"Do you have any instructions?"

Charlie stretched out a finger and said seriously:

"I only have one thing to say: scare them to death,"

"So that whether they are taken away by you or left behind,"

"They will be terrified all day long from the moment they see you.

Joseph understood and immediately said:

"Don't worry, Mr. Wade, the subordinates will definitely take care of it!"

Then, Charlie asked Antonio to hold on to the railing and jumped up to the second floor in front of him.

And he and Joseph followed slowly behind.

At this time, the gang members upstairs were still full of resentment towards Antonio.

Almost none of them knew what happened.

They only knew that Antonio deceived them and tied them up.

It seemed that he had no good intentions.

Some of them even thought in their hearts that they would have to find a way to get away from this person after they got out.

It would be great if they could find an opportunity to turn against him and unite to deal with the Zano family.

Of course, the premise is that they can get out of here alive.

Hearing the heavy footsteps of someone going upstairs,

These people all stared at the stairs,

But no one expected that the sound had been ringing and shaking for a long time,

But they still didn't see who it was.

It's no wonder that Antonio could only jump on one leg.

Not only was the momentum very large, but the efficiency was also very low.

He couldn't jump up again after jumping for a long time.

After waiting for a long time, the people above finally saw Antonio's head.

At this moment, everyone's eyes were full of anger and hatred,

Because they couldn't figure out why Antonio would trick them here,

And tie them up because they were obviously Antonio's followers.

Facing the angry and questioning looks of these people,

Antonio felt very uneasy in his heart.

Half of the people here were going to Syria with him,

And they would not see each other without looking up from now on.

Moreover, he had no shelter, and even less just one leg,

If they really gang up to bully him, he will have no way to ask for help.

These people looked at Antonio with angry eyes and jumped again and again.

After dancing for a long time, their heads slowly popped out from the stairs.

Everyone couldn't help but wonder what kind of medicine he was selling in the gourd.

But when Antonio finally managed to jump out his lower body,

Everyone suddenly discovered that one of his legs was broken.

What's even more surprising is that not only did he have a broken leg,

But he didn't take care of it at all.

The blood in the injured area was still red, which looked shocking.

At this time, Antonio had long lost the momentum and style of the mafia leader.

In order to reduce the hatred of these people towards him as much as possible,

The first thing he did after he jumped up to the second floor with great effort was to immediately take off the hat he was wearing.

This one didn't matter, it shocked the others speechless,

Because they could all see that Antonio's two ears were gone, leaving only bloody scars.

At this point, it was no longer necessary to think about it,

And knew that Antonio must have been subjected to inhuman torture,

So everyone understood in their hearts that there was actually someone else who tricked them into coming here and tied them up today.

At this time, Charlie and Joseph walked up the stairs one after another.

These people had seen Charlie on the first floor before,

But no one knew what Charlie did.

After Charlie walked up and looked around everyone,

The first thing he said was: "I invited everyone here today to chat."

"Let's talk about the division of gang power and profit distribution in New York in the future."

"Because there are so many people here, I won't give everyone a chance to express their opinions one by one."

"Let's go straight to the point."

"From today on, all your gangs will have to report to the Chinese Gang."

"In addition, 75% of all your net income must be handed over to Chinese Gang on a weekly basis."

## Chapter 5816

As soon as Charlie said these words, everyone at the scene widened their eyes,

Although many people were all stuffed with smelly rags,

But it could be seen that their expressions at this time were full of anger.

Recently, Antonio is letting the Burning Rose seize the Chinese Gang's territory in Chinatown.

The other gangs are very aware of this matter,

And in their view, the Chinese Gang has almost no ability to resist.

But now, looking at Charlie's standard East Asian face,

They all thought that this was the Chinese Gang's last struggle.

The Chinese Gang must have been desperate, so they found a way to kidnap Antonio directly,

And then use him to threaten them and other gang bosses.

To put it bluntly, it is nothing more than holding the emperor hostage to deal with the princes.

This method might have been somewhat effective in ancient times,

But in New York's gang society, it was almost useless.

Because although there are hundreds of gangs, large and small,

And the relationships of dependence and subordination between them are complicated,

In fact, every gang in New York has a heart that will never be a slave.

In other words, they don't want to be dependent on anyone.

The reason why they are dependent at the moment is entirely because of the current situation.

When the situation is not in their head, they are just dogs raised by others.

But once the situation comes to them, anyone who has food in his mouth will be torn to pieces,

Chewed up and swallowed into his stomach, and then turned into a pile of hot dog sh!t.

Therefore, it is naturally useless for them to use the emperor to command the princes.

Even if Charlie kills Antonio in front of them today,

It is impossible for them to truly surrender to Charlie.

At most, they will only be soft on the surface.

The first thing they will do after leaving here alive is to bring their brothers and guys with them to fight back, tearing Charlie into pieces.

Moreover, Charlie also said that they should submit to the Chinese Gang and pay protection fees to the Chinese Gang in the future, which means that they can leave alive.

In this case, what else is there to be afraid of? Just wait and find an opportunity to kill him.

Therefore, facing Charlie's conditions, they all sneered in their hearts,

And their mouths were blocked, so they all just pretended to be stupid together.

However, Charlie didn't need their response, he just continued to talk:

"Also, listen to me, every time you starting from tomorrow,"

"A gang must have a full-time accountant who can keep detailed records of all the gang's revenue and expenditures,"

"Report to the Chinese Gang every week, and accept audits by the Chinese Gang."

"Anyone with problems with their accounts will have their left hand chopped off for the first time."

"The second time the right hand, and the third time it is their head."

They took Charlie's harsh words even more seriously.

Although they are not able to communicate with each other yet,

Everyone has their own opinions in their hearts.

Everyone feels that the power of the Chinese Gang is only a little bit large and there are not many members.

If it really comes to a fight, it will not be like this at all.

Opponents with multiple gangs have absolutely no advantage over them.

At this time, Charlie continued: "You should have noticed that all the gang bosses present today brought their second-in-commands,"

"So I won't say anything secretly. I will tell you what I will do next."

"The arrangement, first of all, is that in a few minutes, the current bosses of all gangs must leave New York for Syria by boat."

"The position of the gang boss will be inherited by the accompanying second boss."

"However, if the second boss refuses to fulfill his obligations,"

"Then this matter will be handed over to Mr. Wan next to me."

After saying that, Charlie looked at Joseph and said calmly: "Joseph, come and talk to them."

Joseph nodded, then took a step forward, stood in front of everyone with a military posture,

And said with a solemn expression: "I am Joseph Wan, the master of Cataclysmic Front."

As soon as these words came out, the scene was full of excitement.

Everyone felt as if someone had pried open their skull Cover, and then used an air conditioner to blow cold air inside.

Who is Joseph? Even if gang members didn't know what he looked like,

They certainly knew his legend.

The mercenary king Joseph, who is extremely powerful, has tens of thousands of mercenaries under his command,

And even has a permanent base in Syria, it is his this existence they admire the most.

Although these gangs are very brave on the streets,

In the eyes of the government, they are just a bunch of stray dogs rummaging through garbage on the streets.

If they really offend the officials, there will be no other end than death.

And no gang can have its own permanent base in a functioning country.

But Cataclysmic Front is different. They have a legal base in Syria,

And they have begun to reinforce it in turns.

This has already turned into countless versions in the arena,

And has been boasted about by these gangsters for several rounds.

Therefore, when they heard that the man in front of them claimed to be Joseph Wan,

They all asked themselves a question in their hearts, is this man really the Joseph Wan?

At this time, Joseph cleared his throat and continued:

"You should have heard what Mr. Wade just said."

"I am here to tell you in detail the consequences of disobeying Mr. Wade."

"Anyone who goes to Syria dares to disobey Mr. Wade. If the circumstances are serious,"

"They will be executed directly. If the circumstances are minor, the hands will be chopped off first, then the feet."

"If all the limbs are not enough, the immediate family members will be responsible."

"The order of execution is based on the order of heirs under American law."

As he said, Joseph added: "Besides, if those who stay in New York and run gangs disobey Mr. Wade,"

"I, swear to God that I will let the soldiers of Cataclysmic Front destroy his entire family!"

"After that, not even a single person can escape from his family alive."

"They will have to commit suicide to apologize to Mr. Wade!"

# Chapter 5817

Joseph's words directly scared the gangsters who were full of anger just now,

So that they huddled together and trembled desperately.

This scene is like the emperor penguins huddled together to keep warm and trembling in the biting cold wind of Antarctica in winter.

Charlie was secretly amused when he saw how frightened they were.

This gang of gangsters, who pride themselves on being fearless,

Now have turned into local dogs when frightened.

The best way to deal with evil forces is to treat them as they treat others or even become stronger than them.

If he usually draws a knife and cuts, then you have to draw a gun and hit him;

If he draws a gun and hits you, then you have to kill his whole family.

And, never talk to them morally.

Because the vast majority of people in this industry do not follow morality.

Morality is a code of conduct that is more stringent than the law.

All illegal things violate morality, but not everything that violates morality is necessarily illegal.

Every penny these gangsters make is earned by violating the law.

They don't even care about the law, so how can they care about morality?

Therefore, the best way to deal with such a person is to be more ruthless than him.

And Charlie also knew that his deterrence was far from enough for these gang members.

If you want to scare them from the bottom of their bones,

You must first establish enough fear in their hearts.

But to establish enough fear, you must first make them fully aware,

Of your own strength and their determination to destroy them.

The upfront cost of doing this kind of thing is too high.

Spending so much effort, if it is just used to subdue a bunch of gangsters, it is really not worth the gain.

Therefore, Charlie called Joseph over,

And asked him to make a bad face for these people, which was a straightforward step.

After all, in terms of having manpower,

Who can compare to Cataclysmic Front?

When it comes to killing people, these gangsters are no match.

Moreover, they are not equal in front of Cataclysmic Front.

The Cataclysmic Front knows their identity and can find them at any time and kill their whole family if they want.

It will not work for them wherever they hide.

But on the other hand, what can they do even if they know that the base of Cataclysmic Front is in Syria?

They can't just come and kill Joseph.

For this reason, when Joseph said those threatening words, everyone in this group was frightened.

But Charlie didn't intend to spare them so easily.

He wanted to establish absolute authority in the hearts of these people.

So, he looked around and said to Joseph:

"Joseph, later you will record all the identity information of these people clearly,"

"And then use the fastest time to find out their family relationships."

"Once they are disobedient, , don't let anyone related to them go."

Joseph immediately nodded and said, "I understand!"

Charlie pointed at Jordan beside him and said to Joseph,

"Also, from now on, If something happens to Jordan,"

"Whether it's a natural disaster or a man-made disaster,"

"You will kill all of these people and leave no one alive!"

When everyone heard this, they couldn't hold back at all,

And they kept snorting from their noses.

There seems to be considerable opposition to this decision.

Seeing this, Charlie said to Joseph:

"Since we are all discussing together, we have to let them talk."

"Come, pull the things out of their mouths, and let's listen to their opinions."

Nodding his head, Joseph immediately stepped forward with his men and took out all the things stuffed in these people's mouths.

At this time, a gang boss trembled and blurted out:

"This... this is not fair!"

"If we didn't kill him and he had an accident, why would he kill us?!"

Others heard someone say what was in their hearts,

They quickly nodded in agreement and shouted:

"Yes! This is not fair!"

Charlie smiled and asked: "What? Did I hear it right?"

"Our underworld is a fair place?"

Seeing that his words were echoed by everyone, the man plucked up the courage and said,

"You ask us to go to Syria and hand over 75% of our profits to the Chinese Gang."

"We can do this, but you can't forcibly tie other people's life and death to ours!"

"If we cooperate actively, and in the end we have to be buried together because of unknown reasons,"

"Wouldn't that be too unfair to us?"

Charlie nodded: "You want it to be fair, right?"

The other party nodded heavily: "Yes! I want it to be fair!"

Charlie smiled and said, "Check again,"

"You are sure you don't accept my proposal, but want to be fair?"

## Chapter 5818

The man said without hesitation: "I'm sure!"

Charlie smiled and said: "Okay, let's be fair."

"Tell me first what your name is and which gang you belong to?"

The man said: "My name is Todd."

"Todd Gilbert in charge of the Desperados..."

Charlie smiled and said: "Desperados... a good name."

After saying that, he said to Joseph: "Joseph,"

"Since Gilber likes fairness, so let's do this."

"You take him to Syria first, and then send someone to find out all his background for me."

"I want to know if he has done anything unfair to anyone else in his life."

"Even if he just relies on being the boss of the outlaws and goes out without paying for parking,"

"Buying watermelon, or going to restaurants without paying, you have to check it out for me,"

"Including all the big and small things,"

"As long as there are more than ten, just dig a hole and bury him alive."

Todd was instantly frightened, and he blurted out:

"This... this is so unfair..."

Before he could say the word "fair", he swallowed it again.

He knew that if he opened his mouth to say it was unfair at this time, it would be a bit too unfair...

So he could only say angrily: "Sir, if this is what you mean by fairness, then I give up..."

Charlie asked back: "What? Don't you want fairness?"

"If you want fairness from me, then I will also want fairness from you."

"For those who have been treated unfairly by you. Why have you given up?"

After that, he said to Joseph: "Oh, by the way, Joseph, if you find out that this person has hurt the innocent family members of the other party when dealing with enemies and competitors,"

"Then just treat him in the same way."

"If he has killed someone's wife, you will kill his,"

"And if he has killed a son, you will kill his son too."

"After all, this is what he asked for, so we must pay attention to absolute fairness."

Joseph immediately said: "Don't worry, Mr. Wade. The subordinates must investigate everything!"

When Todd heard this, his whole face was ashen,

And the muscles of his face and limbs were beating violently visible to the naked eye.

One of the "Emperor Penguins" who joined the group to keep warm blurted out:

"Sir, this son of a b!tch kidnapped a son of a friend of mine many years ago in order to steal his goods."

"My friend gave the goods to this ba5tard."

"But this ba5tard killed all my friend and his son! Many people present know this!"

Charlie nodded and praised: "You did a good job, are you the boss or the second in your gang?"

The man quickly said: "I'm the second..."

Charlie said to Jordan beside him: "Jordan, remember after this matter is verified,"

"You can just charge him 70% of the gang earnings."

Jordan said quickly: "Okay, Mr. Wade, I'll take note of it!"

The man was overjoyed hearing the reduction of the price by 5% in one sentence,

Which corresponds to the gang's monthly income of millions of dollars. This is no small amount.

At this time, someone else in the crowd said: "Sir,"

"I want to report Gilberto! Ten years ago, in order to force an Algerian prostitute to make money for him,"

"He personally killed one of the prostitute's two children!"

"At that time, the child was just five years old!"

Charlie nodded: "Okay, I'll give you a 4% discount after verification!"

Someone else in the crowd said: "I want to report it too!"

"Last year, in order to grab the business of a nightclub,"

"Gilbert led someone to take down the nightclub. The boss's wife was raped in turn!"

Charlie said: "Okay, I'll give you a 3% discount after verification!"

Others realized that the discount was getting smaller and smaller, and they all wanted to report it,

But Charlie stretched out his hand to signal everyone to accept it.

He turned to look at the pale-faced Todd Gilberto:

"Is what they said true?"

Todd Gilbert was completely frightened. He cried subconsciously and said:

"I was wrong. Mr. Wade, I was really wrong!"

"I don't want any fairness, whatever you say is what it is..."

"My son has just grown up... Please be noble and let him go..."

Charlie smacked his lips and said in embarrassment:

"It's hard for me to do this. After all, I gave you my proposal but you didn't want to accept it."

"To be fair, you proposed it yourself. Can't go back on words in front of so many people, right?"

Todd slapped himself seven or eight times and cried,

"It's all my fault, it's all my fault!"

"From now on, no matter what you say, I will accept it unconditionally!"

Charlie said waving his hand: "You said you wanted fairness, and I made an exception to give you fairness,"

"But you said no more. Not only did you go back on your word, you also wasted my time and energy."

"If all of them learn from you, and everyone proposes a plan that they want,"

"And then everyone has to wait for me to give another plan and then regret it like you,"

"Then do I still need to lead this team? How can I waste so much time on you?"

Todd knelt on the ground tremblingly. Although his hands were tied behind his back, he still bent over and kowtowed.

He begged bitterly: "I really know that I was wrong..."

"Please look at me. I am a first-time offender, please forgive me this time..."

Charlie waved his hand: "No way, I will give you two choices."

"The first one is to follow what you said, let's take a fair route,"

"But I just don't know your family enough? After all, you have done many evil things."

"If we really want to investigate carefully, still don't know how many lives you have to pay for."

"Therefore, I will give you one more choice."

"If you die today to apologize, what you have done after you die will be forgiven."

## Chapter 5813

Charlie wanted to use this trick to make the entire gang in New York become his puppets in one night.

After these surviving second masters, the second masters who were completely shocked returned,

Considering that behind Charlie was the powerful Cataclysmic Front,

They would never dare to have any disobedience in the future, and would definitely obey Charlie's orders wholeheartedly.

And the Zano family's decades of hard work will be wiped out by Charlie after this night.

Antonio, who had already resigned himself to his fate, could only lament to Daniel at this time:

"Daniel, not only us but also the leaders of other gangs,"

"After they arrive one after another, everyone will go to Syria together and set off early tomorrow morning."

Daniel even more Surprised, asked him: "Boss, we are a gang, not mercenaries."

"What can we do in Syria? We can't go to Syria to grab territory, right?"

"The people there are much more fierce than us, and we also use nine-millimeter pistols."

"They should be running around carrying RPGs over there to grab territory..."

Antonio lamented: "Let Mr. Wade tell you the details."

"Mr. Wade? Who is this Mr. Wade?"

The two were confused. Didn't understand what Antonio wanted to say at all.

At this time, a man with an East Asian face walked out of the kitchen.

He looked at the two of them and said calmly: "Starting from tomorrow, all gang bosses under the Zano family, including you Burning Angels, will be sent to Syria."

"The position of the boss will automatically be taken over by the gang's second-in-command."

"At the same time, the new boss will hand over 75% of the gang's profits to the Chinese Gang on a monthly basis."

"If anyone dares to disobey, he will also be sent to Syria until an obedient boss is screened out. That's all!"

The two of them seemed to have heard a huge joke, especially Daniel, who was even more disdainful.

In his opinion, the Chinese Gang has been defeated by him and will soon be completely driven out of Chinatown.

He is asked to pay tribute to the Chinese Gang which will take 75% of the profits. This is simply a fantasy.

Daniel subconsciously took out his pistol, pointed it at Charlie, and blurted out:

“Where did you come from? You are so loud here! Are you also a member of the Chinese Gang?”

Charlie took a chopstick out of the chopstick box in front of Antonio at an extremely fast speed.

He pulled out a chopstick and flicked his hand.

The chopstick was like a bullet, piercing the side of Antonio’s pistol.

There was a “chu” sound, and Antonio felt his wrist go numb.

He looked down and saw that the pistol had disappeared.

Then, he heard a thud from the wall behind him. When he turned around, he was almost scared to death!

His beloved Beretta pistol was pierced through with a hole in the side by chopsticks, and was nailed directly to the wall!

He looked at Charlie in horror. He really couldn't understand how humans could use chopsticks made of bamboo to pierce a pistol made of steel!

Moreover, the sleeve of the pistol and the barrel inside are made of high-strength steel.

It is impossible for even bullets to penetrate it, let alone a chopstick!

For a moment, Daniel's legs became weak with fear, and he subconsciously wanted to turn around and run away.

But at this time, two men with East Asian faces walked in at the door.

After they came in, one of them took out a pistol and put the gun directly against the back of their heads.

These two people are Jordan and Darwin who are ambushing outside.

Immediately afterward, the two tied up Daniel and Mike and took them directly to the second floor.

At this time, Will Johnson and the other five people had already been tied into rice dumplings and thrown on the second floor.

Before Daniel could figure out what was happening, Jordan and Darwin tied him tightly with hemp rope and stuffed a rag with a greasy smell into his mouth.

Jordan kicked him to Will's side, took an electric kettle filled with water, pressed the boil button,

And said in a cold voice: "I'm warning you, there will be other gang members coming soon,"

"No one is allowed to make any sound, otherwise, after this pot of water boils, I will pour it all into his mouth!"

Antonio gave full play to his status as the underground emperor of New York.

All the gang leaders who were notified by him came in a hurry and happily.

However, no one could have expected that what awaited them in Chinatown was to be tied up and stuffed with smelly rags.

Finally, they would squat on the second floor of a roast goose shop with a group of first and second leaders from their brothers' units.

As more and more people arrived, Antonio became more and more panicked.

Taking advantage of the gap where the previous group of people had just been brought to the second floor and the next group of people hadn't arrived yet,

He couldn't help but pitifully ask Charlie: "Mr. Wade... these gang bosses were all deceived by me into going to Syria."

"I have sold out all the gang bosses in New York by myself."

"When everyone gets to Syria, if they join forces to beat me, I will die there..."

Charlie smiled and asked him: "Then what do you think we should do?"

Antonio swallowed and said cautiously: "You see I'm so cooperative,"

"Why don't you just leave me in New York and work for you and that strong guy..."

Charlie asked back: "If you stay in New York, you won't be afraid of people seeking revenge on you?"

"You tricked all the gang bosses into going to Syria."

"Do you think their families will come after you to fight for them?"

Antonio twitched the corner of his mouth and asked tentatively:

"Mr. Wade, why don't you just let me go back to Sicily..."

Charlie patted his shoulder and said calmly: "Okay Antonio, stop fcking dreaming,"

"For your safety, you don't have to worry. Although the place you are going to is a little backward,"

"But after all, it is a place where the rule of law is emphasized."

"The main theme is that whoever hits someone will be beaten, and whoever kills will pay with his life."

"Among those people upstairs, if anyone really kills you, my old friend Commander Hamid will definitely avenge you."

"Unlike New York, where you have killed so many people, New York can still let you get away with it."

"If you stay in New York, you will definitely not survive a week."

Antonio saw that Charlie was so rigid that he would not let himself loose at all, and his heart was already filled with despair.

However, Charlie's words gave him a little comfort that was better than nothing.

It felt like everyone was in jail together, and at least there were prison guards and wardens to scare everyone so that they did not dare to be too presumptuous.

However, this time he really offended the people upstairs.

Even if he still has a chance to return to New York in the future, he for sure won't have a good life.

The kidnapping continued until early morning.

The gang bosses who came after the Burning Angel were tied up like hairy crabs before they could figure out what was going on,

And their mouths were tightly gagged. They didn't even have a chance to ask the whole story,

And they still don't know. Why did his always-trusted boss, the pride of Sicily, the famous Antonio Zano, deceive them into being tied up here?

And Charlie didn't talk nonsense to them. When they arrived, he tied them up and threw them upstairs, letting Jordan keep an eye on them.

Anyone who dared to move, struggle, or make inappropriate noises would have a pot of boiling water poured over their crotch.

Pouring boiling water on the crotch may sound cruel, but compared with the methods of these gang members, it is still far worse.

However, this method was surprisingly effective.

With a pot of boiling water in front of him, no one of the dozens of murderous gang bosses dared to make a mistake.

## Chapter 5814

In the early morning, Joseph and more than ten Cataclysmic Front soldiers rushed to New York on a Concorde passenger plane.

Joseph didn't know why Charlie suddenly asked him to come to New York,

So he didn't dare to delay as soon as he got off the plane and went straight to Chinatown.

After Joseph arrived, he saw Charlie on the first floor and immediately said respectfully:

"Mr. Wade, what are your orders?"

Charlie pointed to Antonio beside him and said: "This is the boss of the New York Mafia."

"Get to know each other. There are many well-known figures in the New York gangs upstairs."

"You can also say hello to them one by one in a moment. These people are cheap at heart."

"I can take care of them all by myself, but they won't."

"To be convinced, you need someone with a reputation, a background, and a team to really suppress them."

"After dawn, you take him and his younger brothers to leave the United States by boat,"

"Then transfer them to Syria and hand them over directly to Hamid."

Joseph nodded immediately and said: "Okay Mr. Wade,"

"Is there anything else you want me to do?"

Charlie glanced at Antonio and said: "This Antonio is an absolutely good Sicilian man, but he just has a lame leg."

"Tell Hamid that Syria's medical conditions are limited, so there is no need to bother to treat him."

“Just find a carpenter and give him a crutch, Hamid has been building fortifications, and there must be a shortage of labor. A lame leg will not stop him from working.”

When Antonio heard this, he wanted to die here on the spot.

After working hard all his life, he never thought that he would now reduced to this field.

At this time, Charlie asked Jordan to go upstairs again and bring Aman Ramovich down.

Aman has seen the world, and the moment he saw Joseph, he immediately recognized him.

At this moment, Aman was naturally shocked.

He never expected that Charlie would be able to bring Joseph so quickly.

It had only been a few hours since last night. It was incredible that Joseph could appear in New York in such a short period of time.

Charlie asked Jordan to bring Aman to him and instructed Jordan to take out the rag from his mouth.

Aman quickly said respectfully: "Mr. Wade...you...what orders do you have for me?"

Charlie pointed at Joseph and said calmly: "Aren't you always curious about my relationship with Cataclysmic Front?"

"Well, now that the head of Cataclysmic Front is here, let him talk to you."

Joseph's expression was stern. He was afraid that Aman had said something treacherous, so he immediately said:

"Mr. Wade, everyone from top to bottom of Cataclysmic Front is at your disposal,"

"If this person makes rude remarks and slanders the Wade family, please order your subordinates to give him a long memory!"

Aman was so frightened that he lost his mind.

It seemed that his guess was indeed correct.

It was not the Wade family that was conquered by the Cataclysmic Front, but Charlie who conquered the Cataclysmic Front

As for Joseph, he was also frightened in his heart.

Back in Waderest Mountain, he was so arrogant that he wanted to crush Charlie's parents to ashes.

If Charlie hadn't been so generous and patronizing, his deceased parents would also be implicated because of him.

What's more, he cut off his meridians on his own that day.

If it weren't for Charlie's intervention, he would still be a useless person.

How could he have made successive breakthroughs and become a master of the dark realm?

Therefore, every time he thinks of that time, Joseph feels ashamed.

The key point is that Charlie is too low-key. It is clearly Cataclysmic Front that surrenders to him.

He insists on claiming to the outside world that the Wade family has spent all their wealth to ask Cataclysmic Front to support them.

Therefore, Joseph is unavoidably panicked. He wishes he could tell the whole world that he lost, but Charlie wants to tell the whole world that he was the winner.

As soon as Joseph's words came out, Aman was also horrified.

He quickly apologized in panic: "I'm sorry, Mr. Wade, I also listened to the rumors from the outside world..."

Charlie smiled and said: "If I were familiar with you, I would have learned your methods and did not ask Antonio to kill you."

After saying that, Charlie looked at Antonio and asked him: "Antonio, I will give you a proposal, if you are willing to kill Aman,"

"I will let you stay in New York and continue to be in charge of the Zano family. What do you think?"

When Antonio heard this, he didn't care whether what Charlie said was true or false,

And blurted out without any hesitation: "Mr. Wade! As long as you give me a gun,"

"I will beat Aman's head into a hornet's nest now!"

Aman's face suddenly turned pale.

He didn't know if Charlie really meant this. After all, a few hours ago, he had the idea of borrowing a knife to kill Charlie,

And wanted to use Antonio's hand to kill Charlie.

If Charlie also tried to treat him in the same way, Then he would definitely die in Antonio's hands.

Seeing the fear on Aman's face, Charlie smiled and said,

"You don't have to be so scared. I told you that I won't be the same as you."

Aman breathed a sigh of relief. At this moment, he no longer cares whether he goes to Syria or Afghanistan.

He is willing to go anywhere as long as it can keep him alive.

Charlie looked at him and said seriously: "Aman, you are different from those gang bosses upstairs and Antonio."

"They are all little shrimps who can't stand on the stage, but you are an Oligarch after,"

"I think you were brave and resourceful when you were young,"

"But in the past two years, as you get older, you have gradually been dazzled by beauty."

Aman lowered his head in shame.

He also realized early on that the two times he fell into Charlie's hands were all because of women.

However, he was not really obsessed with s3x, mainly because he had other thoughts besides women both times.

He wanted to win the respect he deserved in Western Europe,

So he wanted to marry Helena. He wanted to quickly establish a foothold in New York, so he wanted to marry Antonio's family.

In the final analysis, it is still forced by the current situation.

It is true that he is an oligarch, but because of his identity and background, he is indeed marginalized in Western Europe and North America.

What's the use of just having money? Although he can live in the best house in the UK, even a three-year-old British kid dares to insult him in front of the TV camera and tell him to get out of the UK.

Just when he felt decadent about his life, Charlie said again:

"Aman, neither Eastern Europe nor Western Europe is suitable for you,"

"And Europe and the United States are not suitable for you either,"

"But you can find the next development in your life in Syria Direction,"

"I will let Hamid focus on you when the time comes. If you can gain his appreciation, you may be able to find a new goal in life in Syria."

In Charlie's view, Hamid has a grassroots background, and the same goes for you.

Hamid relied on the barrel of a gun to make a name for himself,

While Aman relied on his brains to create an oligarch legend of his own.

If these two people can cooperate, they will definitely get very positive results.

Of course, Aman may not look down on Hamid's three-acre land, but now he has no other choice.

Charlie will forcefully lower his expectations and let him regard Hamid as the new partner in his life.

It's like finding a partner for a rich man who has higher eyes than his head.

He wants someone who is tall, thin, beautiful, big, tender, tight, knowledgeable, and pure.

But it doesn't matter to Charlie.

He will use his methods to compress this rich man's demands in one single step, to just one, just to survive..

## Chapter 5815

Aman also knew that if Charlie spared his life, he would be repaying evil with kindness.

In this case, his best choice was to accept it as soon as he saw it and stop trying to plead.

Otherwise, if Charlie changed his mind, he would be very disappointed.

Thus he may get a worse offer.

In desperation, he could only say to Charlie: "Don't worry, Mr. Wade, when I get to Syria,"

"I will try my best to communicate with Commander Hamid deeply and do my little bit..."

Charlie nodded approvingly and said with a smile: "Not bad, not bad,"

"Mr. Aman is the upper class for sure."

"In this society, There are not many people who are really on the road of understanding."

After that, he looked at the time and said to Joseph:

"Joseph, it's dawn, and people are almost arriving one after another."

"Contact the boat, and then go up to the upper floor."

"Give these guys a dose of strong medicine, and you can start taking them out of the United States."

Joseph nodded respectfully and asked Charlie:

"Mr. Wade, how to use the strong medicine specifically?"

"Do you have any instructions?"

Charlie stretched out a finger and said seriously:

"I only have one thing to say: scare them to death,"

"So that whether they are taken away by you or left behind,"

"They will be terrified all day long from the moment they see you.

Joseph understood and immediately said:

"Don't worry, Mr. Wade, the subordinates will definitely take care of it!"

Then, Charlie asked Antonio to hold on to the railing and jumped up to the second floor in front of him.

And he and Joseph followed slowly behind.

At this time, the gang members upstairs were still full of resentment towards Antonio.

Almost none of them knew what happened.

They only knew that Antonio deceived them and tied them up.

It seemed that he had no good intentions.

Some of them even thought in their hearts that they would have to find a way to get away from this person after they got out.

It would be great if they could find an opportunity to turn against him and unite to deal with the Zano family.

Of course, the premise is that they can get out of here alive.

Hearing the heavy footsteps of someone going upstairs,

These people all stared at the stairs,

But no one expected that the sound had been ringing and shaking for a long time,

But they still didn't see who it was.

It's no wonder that Antonio could only jump on one leg.

Not only was the momentum very large, but the efficiency was also very low.

He couldn't jump up again after jumping for a long time.

After waiting for a long time, the people above finally saw Antonio's head.

At this moment, everyone's eyes were full of anger and hatred,

Because they couldn't figure out why Antonio would trick them here,

And tie them up because they were obviously Antonio's followers.

Facing the angry and questioning looks of these people,

Antonio felt very uneasy in his heart.

Half of the people here were going to Syria with him,

And they would not see each other without looking up from now on.

Moreover, he had no shelter, and even less just one leg,

If they really gang up to bully him, he will have no way to ask for help.

These people looked at Antonio with angry eyes and jumped again and again.

After dancing for a long time, their heads slowly popped out from the stairs.

Everyone couldn't help but wonder what kind of medicine he was selling in the gourd.

But when Antonio finally managed to jump out his lower body,

Everyone suddenly discovered that one of his legs was broken.

What's even more surprising is that not only did he have a broken leg,

But he didn't take care of it at all.

The blood in the injured area was still red, which looked shocking.

At this time, Antonio had long lost the momentum and style of the mafia leader.

In order to reduce the hatred of these people towards him as much as possible,

The first thing he did after he jumped up to the second floor with great effort was to immediately take off the hat he was wearing.

This one didn't matter, it shocked the others speechless,

Because they could all see that Antonio's two ears were gone, leaving only bloody scars.

At this point, it was no longer necessary to think about it,

And knew that Antonio must have been subjected to inhuman torture,

So everyone understood in their hearts that there was actually someone else who tricked them into coming here and tied them up today.

At this time, Charlie and Joseph walked up the stairs one after another.

These people had seen Charlie on the first floor before,

But no one knew what Charlie did.

After Charlie walked up and looked around everyone,

The first thing he said was: "I invited everyone here today to chat."

"Let's talk about the division of gang power and profit distribution in New York in the future."

"Because there are so many people here, I won't give everyone a chance to express their opinions one by one."

"Let's go straight to the point."

"From today on, all your gangs will have to report to the Chinese Gang."

"In addition, 75% of all your net income must be handed over to Chinese Gang on a weekly basis."

## Chapter 5816

As soon as Charlie said these words, everyone at the scene widened their eyes,

Although many people were all stuffed with smelly rags,

But it could be seen that their expressions at this time were full of anger.

Recently, Antonio is letting the Burning Rose seize the Chinese Gang's territory in Chinatown.

The other gangs are very aware of this matter,

And in their view, the Chinese Gang has almost no ability to resist.

But now, looking at Charlie's standard East Asian face,

They all thought that this was the Chinese Gang's last struggle.

The Chinese Gang must have been desperate, so they found a way to kidnap Antonio directly,

And then use him to threaten them and other gang bosses.

To put it bluntly, it is nothing more than holding the emperor hostage to deal with the princes.

This method might have been somewhat effective in ancient times,

But in New York's gang society, it was almost useless.

Because although there are hundreds of gangs, large and small,

And the relationships of dependence and subordination between them are complicated,

In fact, every gang in New York has a heart that will never be a slave.

In other words, they don't want to be dependent on anyone.

The reason why they are dependent at the moment is entirely because of the current situation.

When the situation is not in their head, they are just dogs raised by others.

But once the situation comes to them, anyone who has food in his mouth will be torn to pieces,

Chewed up and swallowed into his stomach, and then turned into a pile of hot dog sh!t.

Therefore, it is naturally useless for them to use the emperor to command the princes.

Even if Charlie kills Antonio in front of them today,

It is impossible for them to truly surrender to Charlie.

At most, they will only be soft on the surface.

The first thing they will do after leaving here alive is to bring their brothers and guys with them to fight back, tearing Charlie into pieces.

Moreover, Charlie also said that they should submit to the Chinese Gang and pay protection fees to the Chinese Gang in the future, which means that they can leave alive.

In this case, what else is there to be afraid of? Just wait and find an opportunity to kill him.

Therefore, facing Charlie's conditions, they all sneered in their hearts,

And their mouths were blocked, so they all just pretended to be stupid together.

However, Charlie didn't need their response, he just continued to talk:

"Also, listen to me, every time you starting from tomorrow,"

"A gang must have a full-time accountant who can keep detailed records of all the gang's revenue and expenditures,"

"Report to the Chinese Gang every week, and accept audits by the Chinese Gang."

"Anyone with problems with their accounts will have their left hand chopped off for the first time."

"The second time the right hand, and the third time it is their head."

They took Charlie's harsh words even more seriously.

Although they are not able to communicate with each other yet,

Everyone has their own opinions in their hearts.

Everyone feels that the power of the Chinese Gang is only a little bit large and there are not many members.

If it really comes to a fight, it will not be like this at all.

Opponents with multiple gangs have absolutely no advantage over them.

At this time, Charlie continued: "You should have noticed that all the gang bosses present today brought their second-in-commands,"

"So I won't say anything secretly. I will tell you what I will do next."

"The arrangement, first of all, is that in a few minutes, the current bosses of all gangs must leave New York for Syria by boat."

"The position of the gang boss will be inherited by the accompanying second boss."

"However, if the second boss refuses to fulfill his obligations,"

"Then this matter will be handed over to Mr. Wan next to me."

After saying that, Charlie looked at Joseph and said calmly: "Joseph, come and talk to them."

Joseph nodded, then took a step forward, stood in front of everyone with a military posture,

And said with a solemn expression: "I am Joseph Wan, the master of Cataclysmic Front."

As soon as these words came out, the scene was full of excitement.

Everyone felt as if someone had pried open their skull Cover, and then used an air conditioner to blow cold air inside.

Who is Joseph? Even if gang members didn't know what he looked like,

They certainly knew his legend.

The mercenary king Joseph, who is extremely powerful, has tens of thousands of mercenaries under his command,

And even has a permanent base in Syria, it is his this existence they admire the most.

Although these gangs are very brave on the streets,

In the eyes of the government, they are just a bunch of stray dogs rummaging through garbage on the streets.

If they really offend the officials, there will be no other end than death.

And no gang can have its own permanent base in a functioning country.

But Cataclysmic Front is different. They have a legal base in Syria,

And they have begun to reinforce it in turns.

This has already turned into countless versions in the arena,

And has been boasted about by these gangsters for several rounds.

Therefore, when they heard that the man in front of them claimed to be Joseph Wan,

They all asked themselves a question in their hearts, is this man really the Joseph Wan?

At this time, Joseph cleared his throat and continued:

"You should have heard what Mr. Wade just said."

"I am here to tell you in detail the consequences of disobeying Mr. Wade."

"Anyone who goes to Syria dares to disobey Mr. Wade. If the circumstances are serious,"

"They will be executed directly. If the circumstances are minor, the hands will be chopped off first, then the feet."

"If all the limbs are not enough, the immediate family members will be responsible."

"The order of execution is based on the order of heirs under American law."

As he said, Joseph added: "Besides, if those who stay in New York and run gangs disobey Mr. Wade,"

"I, swear to God that I will let the soldiers of Cataclysmic Front destroy his entire family!"

"After that, not even a single person can escape from his family alive."

"They will have to commit suicide to apologize to Mr. Wade!"

# Chapter 5817

Joseph's words directly scared the gangsters who were full of anger just now,

So that they huddled together and trembled desperately.

This scene is like the emperor penguins huddled together to keep warm and trembling in the biting cold wind of Antarctica in winter.

Charlie was secretly amused when he saw how frightened they were.

This gang of gangsters, who pride themselves on being fearless,

Now have turned into local dogs when frightened.

The best way to deal with evil forces is to treat them as they treat others or even become stronger than them.

If he usually draws a knife and cuts, then you have to draw a gun and hit him;

If he draws a gun and hits you, then you have to kill his whole family.

And, never talk to them morally.

Because the vast majority of people in this industry do not follow morality.

Morality is a code of conduct that is more stringent than the law.

All illegal things violate morality, but not everything that violates morality is necessarily illegal.

Every penny these gangsters make is earned by violating the law.

They don't even care about the law, so how can they care about morality?

Therefore, the best way to deal with such a person is to be more ruthless than him.

And Charlie also knew that his deterrence was far from enough for these gang members.

If you want to scare them from the bottom of their bones,

You must first establish enough fear in their hearts.

But to establish enough fear, you must first make them fully aware,

Of your own strength and their determination to destroy them.

The upfront cost of doing this kind of thing is too high.

Spending so much effort, if it is just used to subdue a bunch of gangsters, it is really not worth the gain.

Therefore, Charlie called Joseph over,

And asked him to make a bad face for these people, which was a straightforward step.

After all, in terms of having manpower,

Who can compare to Cataclysmic Front?

When it comes to killing people, these gangsters are no match.

Moreover, they are not equal in front of Cataclysmic Front.

The Cataclysmic Front knows their identity and can find them at any time and kill their whole family if they want.

It will not work for them wherever they hide.

But on the other hand, what can they do even if they know that the base of Cataclysmic Front is in Syria?

They can't just come and kill Joseph.

For this reason, when Joseph said those threatening words, everyone in this group was frightened.

But Charlie didn't intend to spare them so easily.

He wanted to establish absolute authority in the hearts of these people.

So, he looked around and said to Joseph:

"Joseph, later you will record all the identity information of these people clearly,"

"And then use the fastest time to find out their family relationships."

"Once they are disobedient, , don't let anyone related to them go."

Joseph immediately nodded and said, "I understand!"

Charlie pointed at Jordan beside him and said to Joseph,

"Also, from now on, If something happens to Jordan,"

"Whether it's a natural disaster or a man-made disaster,"

"You will kill all of these people and leave no one alive!"

When everyone heard this, they couldn't hold back at all,

And they kept snorting from their noses.

There seems to be considerable opposition to this decision.

Seeing this, Charlie said to Joseph:

"Since we are all discussing together, we have to let them talk."

"Come, pull the things out of their mouths, and let's listen to their opinions."

Nodding his head, Joseph immediately stepped forward with his men and took out all the things stuffed in these people's mouths.

At this time, a gang boss trembled and blurted out:

"This... this is not fair!"

"If we didn't kill him and he had an accident, why would he kill us?!"

Others heard someone say what was in their hearts,

They quickly nodded in agreement and shouted:

"Yes! This is not fair!"

Charlie smiled and asked: "What? Did I hear it right?"

"Our underworld is a fair place?"

Seeing that his words were echoed by everyone, the man plucked up the courage and said,

"You ask us to go to Syria and hand over 75% of our profits to the Chinese Gang."

"We can do this, but you can't forcibly tie other people's life and death to ours!"

"If we cooperate actively, and in the end we have to be buried together because of unknown reasons,"

"Wouldn't that be too unfair to us?"

Charlie nodded: "You want it to be fair, right?"

The other party nodded heavily: "Yes! I want it to be fair!"

Charlie smiled and said, "Check again,"

"You are sure you don't accept my proposal, but want to be fair?"

## Chapter 5818

The man said without hesitation: "I'm sure!"

Charlie smiled and said: "Okay, let's be fair."

"Tell me first what your name is and which gang you belong to?"

The man said: "My name is Todd."

"Todd Gilbert in charge of the Desperados..."

Charlie smiled and said: "Desperados... a good name."

After saying that, he said to Joseph: "Joseph,"

"Since Gilber likes fairness, so let's do this."

"You take him to Syria first, and then send someone to find out all his background for me."

"I want to know if he has done anything unfair to anyone else in his life."

"Even if he just relies on being the boss of the outlaws and goes out without paying for parking,"

"Buying watermelon, or going to restaurants without paying, you have to check it out for me,"

"Including all the big and small things,"

"As long as there are more than ten, just dig a hole and bury him alive."

Todd was instantly frightened, and he blurted out:

"This... this is so unfair..."

Before he could say the word "fair", he swallowed it again.

He knew that if he opened his mouth to say it was unfair at this time, it would be a bit too unfair...

So he could only say angrily: "Sir, if this is what you mean by fairness, then I give up..."

Charlie asked back: "What? Don't you want fairness?"

"If you want fairness from me, then I will also want fairness from you."

"For those who have been treated unfairly by you. Why have you given up?"

After that, he said to Joseph: "Oh, by the way, Joseph, if you find out that this person has hurt the innocent family members of the other party when dealing with enemies and competitors,"

"Then just treat him in the same way."

"If he has killed someone's wife, you will kill his,"

"And if he has killed a son, you will kill his son too."

"After all, this is what he asked for, so we must pay attention to absolute fairness."

Joseph immediately said: "Don't worry, Mr. Wade. The subordinates must investigate everything!"

When Todd heard this, his whole face was ashen,

And the muscles of his face and limbs were beating violently visible to the naked eye.

One of the "Emperor Penguins" who joined the group to keep warm blurted out:

"Sir, this son of a b!tch kidnapped a son of a friend of mine many years ago in order to steal his goods."

"My friend gave the goods to this ba5tard."

"But this ba5tard killed all my friend and his son! Many people present know this!"

Charlie nodded and praised: "You did a good job, are you the boss or the second in your gang?"

The man quickly said: "I'm the second..."

Charlie said to Jordan beside him: "Jordan, remember after this matter is verified,"

"You can just charge him 70% of the gang earnings."

Jordan said quickly: "Okay, Mr. Wade, I'll take note of it!"

The man was overjoyed hearing the reduction of the price by 5% in one sentence,

Which corresponds to the gang's monthly income of millions of dollars. This is no small amount.

At this time, someone else in the crowd said: "Sir,"

"I want to report Gilberto! Ten years ago, in order to force an Algerian prostitute to make money for him,"

"He personally killed one of the prostitute's two children!"

"At that time, the child was just five years old!"

Charlie nodded: "Okay, I'll give you a 4% discount after verification!"

Someone else in the crowd said: "I want to report it too!"

"Last year, in order to grab the business of a nightclub,"

"Gilbert led someone to take down the nightclub. The boss's wife was raped in turn!"

Charlie said: "Okay, I'll give you a 3% discount after verification!"

Others realized that the discount was getting smaller and smaller, and they all wanted to report it,

But Charlie stretched out his hand to signal everyone to accept it.

He turned to look at the pale-faced Todd Gilberto:

"Is what they said true?"

Todd Gilbert was completely frightened. He cried subconsciously and said:

"I was wrong. Mr. Wade, I was really wrong!"

"I don't want any fairness, whatever you say is what it is..."

"My son has just grown up... Please be noble and let him go..."

Charlie smacked his lips and said in embarrassment:

"It's hard for me to do this. After all, I gave you my proposal but you didn't want to accept it."

"To be fair, you proposed it yourself. Can't go back on words in front of so many people, right?"

Todd slapped himself seven or eight times and cried,

"It's all my fault, it's all my fault!"

"From now on, no matter what you say, I will accept it unconditionally!"

Charlie said waving his hand: "You said you wanted fairness, and I made an exception to give you fairness,"

"But you said no more. Not only did you go back on your word, you also wasted my time and energy."

"If all of them learn from you, and everyone proposes a plan that they want,"

"And then everyone has to wait for me to give another plan and then regret it like you,"

"Then do I still need to lead this team? How can I waste so much time on you?"

Todd knelt on the ground tremblingly. Although his hands were tied behind his back, he still bent over and kowtowed.

He begged bitterly: "I really know that I was wrong..."

"Please look at me. I am a first-time offender, please forgive me this time..."

Charlie waved his hand: "No way, I will give you two choices."

"The first one is to follow what you said, let's take a fair route,"

"But I just don't know your family enough? After all, you have done many evil things."

"If we really want to investigate carefully, still don't know how many lives you have to pay for."

"Therefore, I will give you one more choice."

"If you die today to apologize, what you have done after you die will be forgiven."

# Chapter 5819

Charlie's tone was firm and cold, and his words were full of chilling meaning,

Which made everyone present feel numb,

And even made Todd extremely scared.

Todd naturally does not want to die, nor does he want his family to be treated like the family members of other people he has killed.

Killing, for a moment, he was extremely upset.

Asking Charlie for so-called fairness became the most regretful and stupid thing he had ever done in his life.

With tears streaming down his face,

He knelt down and kept bowing and kowtowing with his hands,

Praying for Charlie's forgiveness, but Charlie didn't give him any chance at all.

Seeing that he didn't speak, Charlie said:

"Since you don't choose it yourself, then I will choose it for you."

After that, he said to Joseph beside him:

"Just do the first thing I just said."

"Investigate clearly before doing anything, remember to take a video when you do it,"

"Show it to him to take a good look at it,"

"And see what it means to treat others in their own way."

"This guy has killed so many people, and he should not be spared,"

"He can be sent on his way after his family is almost dealt with."

Joseph immediately nodded and said,

“Don’t worry, Mr. Wade, the subordinates will definitely take care of it!”

When Todd heard about it, Even if his relatives were killed,

He still could not escape death, and his whole mood collapsed completely.

Although he was timid and afraid of death,

He still gritted his teeth and said:

“I...I choose the second one...”

At this point, it is better for one person to die than to implicate the whole family.

Todd can still tell the difference between 1 and N+1.

At this moment, he could only sacrifice himself to save his family.

Otherwise, judging from the things he had done, none of his family members would survive.

Charlie didn't originally want to kill Todd.

He was not Zynn, nor was he Ruoli who devoted their lives to the Su family.

Since Todd chose the second one, he would help him.

And also give these people a reminder to realize the cost of betrayal and resistance.

So, he pointed to the ceiling fan on the roof and said to Todd:

"I'll ask someone to prepare a rope for you."

"You can break it yourself."

After that, he signaled to Jordan, who immediately walked downstairs.

He went to the kitchen and found a very strong nylon rope.

Everyone turned pale with fright.

No one expected that Charlie would let Todd kill him right here.

Wouldn't that mean everyone would watch him commit suicide?

And Charlie indeed thought so.

Since Todd is seeking his own death,

Why not let these brutal gang members witness it with their own eyes?

It would be best to leave some indelible scars on their hearts.

Soon, Jordan used nylon rope to make a tighter rope noose under the ceiling fan,

Then brought a chair and placed it under the ceiling fan.

Seeing that he had prepared all this, Charlie said to Todd:

“Everything is ready. Let’s go on the road with peace of mind.”

Todd was completely limp and had no strength to get up at this moment.

Charlie, then pointed at several gang members around him and said in a cold voice:

“You guys, help him stand up on the chair!”

The people who were pointed at did not dare to disobey,

And quickly lifted Todd Got to that chair.

At this time, the nylon rope noose was placed in front of Todd’s face.

Some of them even took the initiative to put the noose around Todd’s neck,

And Todd subconsciously wanted to hide,

But when he thought of the other choice Charlie gave him, he gave up in an instant.

The noose was put around his neck. Charlie looked at him and asked:

"Do you want to kick the chair by yourself, or let others help?"

## Chapter 5820

Todd knew that he was certain to die, so he cried and said:

"Mr. Wade, Please help me..."

Charlie shook his head, without concealing his sarcasm, and said disdainfully:

"A person like you is not worthy of me killing you with my own hands."

After that, he looked at the man he was talking to Todd before.

The middle-aged man who came with Gilbert said calmly:

"You should be the second in command of the Desperadoes, right?"

The man nodded quickly and said respectfully and attentively:

"Hello, Mr. Wade, my name is Blunt, and am the second-in-command of the outlaws..."

After saying that, he quickly added: "Mr. Wade,"

"Please don't think that Todd and I are the same person."

"He doesn't talk about politics. He is morally not righteous and cruel."

"I have reminded him many times in a subtle way,"

"But this person never knows how to repent, but becomes more and more excessive."

"I work under his hands and there is nothing I can do to change him..."

Todd didn't expect that the second boss would rebel at this time, and reprimanded him angrily:

"Angelou, you ungrateful ba5tard, don't forget,"

"It was me who brought you to your current position step by step!"

Angelou nodded and said: "Yes, it is you who promoted me, but this cannot cover up the fact that you killed innocent people indiscriminately and broke the rules of the gang!"

"Everyone in the whole gang has opinions on you, but you just didn't know!"

"When those innocent people died in your hands,"

"You should have expected that there would be a day when everyone around you would betray you!"

Charlie looked at Angelou and pointed to Todd standing on the chair.

And he said calmly: "From now on, you will be the person in charge of the desperadoes."

"It is up to you, the former boss, to send him on his way."

Angelou Blunt was slightly stunned, and then immediately said respectfully:

"I obey the orders!"

He looked up at Todd, who was trembling on the chair, and said lightly:

"Todd, Go on your way with peace of mind, I hope God can forgive you after you die."

After that, he raised his right leg and kicked the chair at the feet of Todd.

The chair was kicked down by him, and Todd's body fell instantly due to loss of support.

Due to the sudden acceleration of gravity, the rope strangled his neck tightly in an instant.

He grabbed the neck collar with both hands and tried to struggle,

But he did not expect that the more his body struggled, the lock collar on his neck would become tighter.

The complete sense of suffocation made him surprisingly awake.

He could clearly feel that his trachea was being strangled so that he couldn't breathe at all.

He could also feel that his whole body was getting hotter and number,

And at the same time, he was getting more and more numb.

Everyone watched Todd being hanged right in front of their eyes, and everyone was terrified.

They had almost all experienced killings,

But they had never experienced this kind of retro execution-style killing.

Todd, who was hanging in mid-air, struggled violently for several minutes,

But the extent of his body's struggle began to weaken significantly.

Five minutes later, almost all his body was left with was instinctive muscle twitching,

And he had completely lost consciousness and even lost basic vital signs.

After a few dozen seconds, even the muscle twitching in Todd's body disappeared.

His whole body turned into a corpse, swaying irregularly in mid-air as if he wanted to invite the people to have a look.

Charlie said to Angelou at this time: "Take the body and dispose of it."

Angelou said loudly without thinking, "Please rest assured,"

"Mr. Wade, the subordinates will handle it properly!"

Charlie nodded, looked around again, and said:

"It's almost time. Those who should go to Syria should prepare to leave immediately."

"Those who stay and continue to run the gang can go back and start looking for finances."

"From now on, profits will be handed over once a week, and work reports will be made every two weeks."

"Those who disobey will be killed; those who hide their income will be killed;"

"Those who line their own pockets will be killed;"

"Those who secretly collaborate with the enemy will be killed!"

# Chapter 5821

At dawn in New York, Joseph and his men took Aman Ramovich, Antonio, and the bosses of the gangs under the Zano family away from Chinatown and headed to the port.

The remaining second-in-commands will all be promoted to full-time positions.

At this time, Jordan was still in a daze.

Although he saw Charlie take down the entire Zano family overnight,

He still had an unrealistic feeling.

Charlie saw the curtain fall and Jordan was a little confused, so he asked him:

“Jordan, how do you feel now?”

Jordan came back to his senses, scratched his head, and said:

"Mr. Wade... I feel... I feel a little uncomfortable. I can't believe it..."

Charlie smiled and said, "Then you have to adapt as soon as possible,"

"Because starting from today, you have to reorganize your gang as soon as possible."

"Although the Zano family is the largest mafia in New York,"

"It is not the only one you will face many challenges from in the future."

"Since you have chosen this path, you must find a way to go further on this path."

Jordan nodded heavily and said respectfully:

"Mr. Wade, From now on, the Chinese gang will find a way to support themselves,"

"And I will submit the profits handed over by those gangs to you on a monthly basis!"

Charlie waved his hand: "Most of the money is obtained by bullying ordinary people,"

"Getting that money in my hands, there is essentially no difference between me and them."

After saying that, Charlie smiled and said: "Uncle Zhong regards you as half his son,"

"And you and I are considered acquaintances."

"Since you have chosen and you want to take this path, then you should hold on to this money safely."

"If you are ambitious, use this money to grow your gang and pave the way for yourself in advance."

"In that case, when the age is up, You can suddenly become a well-known entrepreneur,"

"Or simply run for parliament; if you don't have great ambitions and save more money,"

"You will have enough food and clothing in your life."

Jordan said firmly: "Mr. Wade Don't worry,"

"Since I have chosen this path, I will definitely go all out!"

Charlie nodded and said: "But remember, Jordan, although these gangs under the Zano family do not dare to do anything to you."

"This does not mean that you have no other opponents,"

"And I could only help you this time."

"If one day a more powerful opponent appears in New York and wants to take your life,"

"You can only rely on yourself. Go all out and defeat the opponent, do you understand?"

Jordan said solemnly: "Don't worry, Mr. Wade, I understand!"

Charlie looked at Darwin, the former leader of the Chinese Gang, and said, "Mr. Ni."

Darwin's body shook. He trembled and said respectfully:

"Mr. Wade, what are your orders..."

Charlie said: "You are a member of this gang, and you live in Chinatown."

"Here, you represent all the Chinese who are making a living in Chinatown,"

"So, You must not be so cowardly again in the future."

"Facts have proved that in your industry, cowardice cannot guarantee safety."

"The more cowardly you are, the more people will want to ride on your neck and sh!t."

Darwin was ashamed, he lowered his head and said: "Mr. Wade is saying...from now on,"

"I will fully cooperate with Brother Qiang, and I will never embarrass him!"

Charlie nodded and said very seriously: "When I was a child, I also heard the story of the Chinese gang's development overseas."

"At that time, Members of the Chinese gangs dared to fight hard,"

"And they had built a considerable foundation in Canada, the United States, and even Europe."

"However, I did not expect that in the 21st century, Chinese gangs in various places have declined rapidly."

"Many have disappeared, and the remaining Those who have fallen ill can only survive by huddled in various Chinatowns, do you know why?"

Darwin said awkwardly: "Over the years...Europe and the United States have indeed become more and more aggressive in cracking down on gangs,"

"And the degree of unity among compatriots overseas is indeed worse than that of Koreans and Vietnamese,"

"So it is indeed much more difficult overall..."

Charlie waved his hands and said seriously: "What you said are just excuses."

"In my opinion, the reason why overseas Chinese gangs are declining rapidly is because they have lost their blood!"

After saying that, Charlie said again: "In the last century Many of the members of the Chinese Gang came off the battlefield."

"After leaving the battlefield and leaving the army, some wanted to see the outside world,"

"So they traveled across the ocean to come here to make a living."

"At that time, when they came to Europe and the United States, they had to escape death by riding on a sampan."

"They just came here, so they were not afraid of death,"

"In their eyes, the Mafia was nothing."

"When they stood on this land, their lives only had the words:"

"look down on life and death, and do it if you don't accept it!"

At this point, Charlie pointed at Darwin and continued: "Look at yourself again,"

"These so-called second-rate generations, three generations past, you have long lost the blood of your fathers!"

"Many of you were even born in the United States, and got a U.S. passport without crossing the ocean,"

"And then grew up drinking milk, cola, and eating hamburgers and cereal."

"Even if you were wolves you had already lived the life as a husky."

"Not to mention letting you have the blood of your fathers."

"Now I ask you to sit on the sampan that your fathers used when they came and walk their route again."

"I'm afraid you haven't boarded the ship yet. Your legs would feel already weak!"

Darwin buried his head deeper.

He knew that Charlie was telling the truth.

Thinking back then, his father had participated in the Southwest War."

"His old superior came to North America before him. After making some money,"

"He invited him to come to the United States to make money."

"At that time, they were armed with guns. The middle-aged man with bullet scars formed a gang in Chinatown and made a name for himself in the United States and Canada.

In that era, North America was like a sponge, frantically absorbing immigrants legal and illegal from all over the world,

And gangs established by various ethnic groups sprung up.

# Chapter 5822

Generally speaking, New York City alone had at least a thousand gangs,

Large and small, and across the United States, there were tens of thousands of gangs.

However, the Chinese gang of that era, who had just arrived,

Was able to fight its way out of tens of thousands of gangs.

However, by Darwin's generation, the bloody spirit has almost disappeared,

So the Chinese Gang continued to lose in various gang struggles, continued to retreat,

And continued to shrink. Originally, they naively thought that at least there was still a stronghold of Chinatown,

But who knew? It can be imagined that the enemy's strength has long been overwhelming,

And a few risky attempts have defeated them.

At this moment, Darwin was extremely ashamed.

Recalling that when his father was still alive, he never bowed his head to anyone,

But when it came to him, although he inherited the inheritance he left behind,

In his hands, this estate was quickly destroyed.

Thinking of this, he said to Charlie with red eyes:

"Mr. Wade, I swear to you that I will definitely bring back the blood of the Chinese Gang!"

Charlie nodded slightly, stood up, stretched, and said:

"I've said what needs to be said, so I won't delay here any longer."

"From now on, you have to take care of yourself."

"If you encounter trouble in the future, you can only rely on yourself."

Both of them nodded, and Charlie continued:

"By the way, there is one more thing."

"You should restrain yourselves with the moral principles of the world."

"Always compete with the strong for food. Don't bully the weak, the dominant, and don't harm nature."

"If one day you two become like those people, full of evil,"

"I will come to the United States again to kill you with my own hands!"

When Charlie and Hogan left the roasted goose shop together,

Hogan looked back at the simple facade and sighed softly:

"From now on, my father's roasted goose skill will be lost."

Charlie asked him with a smile:

"Uncle Zhong, do you doubt or object to my decision today?"

Hogan was silent for a moment and said seriously:

"Master, Jordan is an orphan I adopted, not a domesticated pet."

"From the day I adopted him, I never thought of making any plans for his life."

"He learned how to cook roast goose with me, and for him, this was not my intention,"

"But he had a wandering childhood, had neither read much nor had the heart to read,"

"And his status as an illegal immigrant meant that it would be difficult for him to get out of Chinatown,"

"So I taught him how to make roast goose,"

"And at least let him have the ability to make a living."

Speaking of this, Hogan added: "As for whether he chooses to sell roast goose or give up selling roast goose,"

"I respect his choice, but the opportunity given to him by the young master today is too great."

"I am afraid that his experience is not enough and I can't grasp it."

Charlie said seriously:

"Uncle Zhong might as well look at this problem in a different way."

Hogan said respectfully: "Master, please say it."

Charlie said: "Before you and I came, Jordan was already under their radar."

"Bullied and have already been beaten. Today they came to visit,"

"And Jordan definitely couldn't come up with the three thousand dollars."

"So if we hadn't come, what would have happened to Jordan now?"

"At best, he would have been beaten more seriously."

"The beatings, judging from the brutality of those gang members,"

"There is a high probability that Jordan will have lifelong sequelae,"

"Ranging from disability to paralysis, and this is only a relatively good result;"

After a pause, Charlie said again: "To think about the worst, these people have already started killing in Chinatown,"

"And they have killed more than one or two people."

"If they want to use Jordan to kill chickens and monkeys today,"

"Or if Jordan resists too fiercely today, once they pull out their guns,"

"Jordan will definitely die today."

"So, it can range from serious injury to death."

"In this case, Jordan has nothing to lose. From now on, he will gain everything;"

"Besides, When Jordan was about to shoot and kill those few gangsters,"

"He was really murderous. Being able to be murderous in the face of the enemy who oppressed him means that he still has blood."

"Taking this path is definitely for him. It's better than not leaving."

Hogan nodded slightly in agreement and then asked:

"By the way, young master, why didn't Jordan shoot and kill those people again?"

Charlie said: "He will definitely kill people in the future,"

"But it shouldn't be now."

"Killing so many people right off the bat can easily lead to cruelty and bloodlust."

"It's better to let him adapt slowly."

After saying that, Charlie asked Hogan:

"Uncle, you didn't rest all night, do you want to start?"

"Go to the hotel to catch up on some sleep?"

"No." Hogan waved his hand quickly and said:

"I came with the young master to do business."

"Let's wait until the business is done."

"Let's go to Queens now and find a place to have a cup of coffee."

"It's time for Peter's antique shop to open."

"Okay." Charlie nodded: "Then let's go directly to Queens."

# Chapter 5823

New York, Queens.

Queens is a large area. Although it is not as prosperous as Manhattan,

Its central location can be regarded as a smaller version of Manhattan.

Moreover, Queens has a dense population and a lot of immigrants of all ethnic groups,

So it is relatively lively.

The famous Flushing is a neighborhood where Chinese and Chinese traders gather.

Peter Zhou's antique shop is located in the center of Queens.

Although the store is not large, the location is really not a choice.

When Charlie and Hogan parked opposite the antique store,

They found that the antique store was not open.

At first, Hogan didn't notice anything wrong.

After all, it was still morning, and a few antique shops opened early in the morning.

But Charlie, who was obviously more powerful, discovered something unusual.

He saw the mottled rust on the iron door and handle of the antique store,

As if no one had taken care of it for a while.

He originally planned to have a cup of coffee opposite,

So he drove the car to the opposite side of the road and stopped.

When he walked closer to check, he discovered that the antique shop had indeed not been open for a long time,

And there were even spider webs hanging above the folding iron door.

Looking inside through the window, the displays inside were all dirty and seemed to have not been maintained for a long time.

Hogan on the side couldn't help frowning:

"It feels like this place has been closed for at least a few months."

"Yes." Charlie nodded: "Didn't it mean that the Zhou family has run many antique shops in Europe and the United States?"

"Maybe this place has been abandoned?"

Hogan took a look at the second-hand store next door,

And found that although the store still had a closed sign,

There were already people inside, so he walked up, knocked on the door, and chatted with people.

After chatting, he turned around and came out and said to Charlie:

"Master, let's go back to the car and talk."

Charlie realized that Hogan might have found some sensitive clues,

So he returned to the car with him.

After getting in the car, Hogan said:

"Master, I just asked the owner next door."

"The owner said that Peter Zhou was arrested in this store four months ago,"

"And the store was closed accordingly."

"Caught?" Charlie curiously asked: "Why was he arrested?"

Hogan said: "It is said that it was because of fraud, but the shop owner next door said that his situation was very special and different from ordinary fraud."

"When he was arrested, it was the FBI. The people who came to arrest were very involved."

"FBI..."

Charlie muttered and asked him: "Uncle Zhong, shouldn't the police be responsible for cases like fraud?"

Hogan said: "No. Certainly, if the circumstances are serious,"

"Endanger national security, or involve important people and items,"

"The FBI may be responsible. Since Peter Zhou is suspected of fraud,"

"And if arrested by the FBI, it proves that the situation should be quite serious."

Charlie asked: "Does the shop owner just now know about Peter Zhou's current situation?"

Hogan shook his head and said: "That person doesn't know very well."

"He only knows that the Zhou family's antique shops in the United States seem to have been closed."

"As for his current situation, that person has not received any information."

As he spoke, Hogan sighed helplessly and said, "In these years in New York,"

"I have basically been bored in Chinatown and rarely come out."

"I don't know anyone. I can't find a suitable person to ask for news."

Charlie pursed his lips and said, "It's okay. Regarding matters in New York,"

"It's probably reliable to ask Miss Fei."

"Her connections and information channels are definitely much better than the two of us."

After saying that, he took out his mobile phone and called Stella.

The phone rang seven or eight times before it was finally picked up.

Stella asked as soon as she opened her mouth: "Mr. Bai, how is the situation in Atlanta?"

Charlie realized that Stella might not be able to speak easily,

And she had completely made up a title,

Probably because she was with his wife at the moment.

So Charlie asked, "If it's inconvenient for Miss Fei, we can talk later."

Stella said, "I'm working on a project in New York right now."

"Give me a moment. I'll get back to you in five minutes."

"Okay," Charlie responded and hung up the phone.

Five minutes later, Stella's phone call came on time.

As soon as the call came through, she said respectfully:

"Mr. Wade, I was discussing plans with your missess."

"I was afraid that she would misunderstand,"

"So I didn't dare to talk to you directly. Could you please forgive me?"

Charlie smiled and said: "It's okay,"

"You are more thoughtful than me. How is she doing with you recently?"

Stella said: "She has been busy with the project these days."

"Because I wasn't sure how long you needed me to hold off,"

"So I pretended to be real and entrusted her with full responsibility for the project here."

"It may be a little tiring, but she is still very involved."

Charlie smiled. He said: "My wife is still very enterprising, much better than me."

Stella smiled slightly and said: "Mr. Wade must be very enterprising,"

"Otherwise he wouldn't have let me invite his wife to New York."

After saying that, Stella quickly asked:

"By the way, Mr. Wade, do you have anything to do with me?"

Charlie hummed and said, "I want you to help me find out about a person."

Stella said without thinking: "Tell me the situation and I will start immediately."

Charlie said: "There is an antique dealer named Zhou Peter."

"It is said that the Zhou family is quite famous for antiques in Europe and the United States."

"I don't know if you have heard of them?"

Stella said with a smile: "Peter Zhou, his family is indeed quite famous in the Chinese antique circle."

"They have been mainly engaged in Chinese antiques overseas for so many years."

"From the beginning of the Opium War to the end of the Anti-Japanese War,"

"There are a large number of European and American antiques they dealt in."

"Peter Zhou's family's main business is to take these Chinese antiques from overseas and then sell them."

"Some precious cultural relics were often donated to China for free."

"My grandfather often bought some from them in the past."

"It's just that he has gotten older and played less in the past few years."

## Chapter 5824

Charlie smiled and said, "Miss Fei would be the best if she knew him."

"To tell you the truth, I have some very important matters to consult with him."

"But after I arrived in New York, I found that their store had been closed."

"It is said that he was arrested by the FBI on suspicion of fraud."

"I wonder if you can help me check his whereabouts?"

Stella said in surprise: "Wade Sir, have you come to New York? Does Madam know?"

Charlie said: "I came in a hurry this time, and the investigation was a bit sensitive,"

"So I didn't tell her, and I ask you Miss Fei to keep it a secret for me."

Stella said hurriedly: "Mr. Wade, don't worry, I won't tell anyone."

As she spoke, she added: "You just said that Peter Zhou was arrested."

"I have never heard of this. But don't worry,"

"I'll ask someone to collect clues and let you know after I figure it out!"

"Okay." Charlie thanked, "Thank you, Miss Fei."

After hanging up the phone, Charlie said to Hogan:

"Uncle Zhong, Miss Fei will help us check."

"It will probably take some time. Let's go to Shangri-La to have some breakfast and then take a rest."

"No problem." Hogan nodded and smiled:

"It's just that it's a short distance from Shangri-La."

"If Miss Fei's side progresses quickly, the news may come in less than half an hour."

"Or we might as well just have something to eat across the street."

"As long as you give me a cup of coffee, I won't have to sleep all day."

Charlie also felt that what he said made sense, so he agreed.

The two of them arrived at the restaurant opposite,

Ordered some food and drank some coffee.

Before they finished a cup of coffee, Stella called.

As soon as the phone call came through, Stella said to Charlie:

"Mr. Wade, I have already found out what you asked me to check."

"Peter Zhou was indeed arrested by the FBI four months ago."

"He was arrested because he offended the Routhschild family and they asked the FBI to arrest him."

Charlie frowned and asked, "Routhschild family? Is it a direct line or a collateral line?"

"Direct line." Stella Said: "It is said that the level is quite high."

"He should be a core member of the family."

Charlie asked again: "Then what specifically caused them to be offended? Have you heard about it?"

"No." Stella said truthfully: "It is said that although the FBI arrested him,"

"It was the Routhschilds who personally interrogated him."

"When the Routhschilds interrogated him, the FBI was not qualified to stay at the scene,"

“But it is said that after the interrogation, the Routhschilds were very angry and used their own power to imprison Peter in Brooklyn Prison without trial.”

“This continued for several months, Peter’s family and lawyers were not allowed to see him.”

Charlie is not surprised. After all, they are the Rothschild family.

Not only are they extremely wealthy,

But they have already penetrated into the powerful elite of the United States.

They naturally have the ability to catch people and lock them up.

Doing stuff is not that difficult, it may even only require one sentence.

So, Charlie asked her: “In a situation like this,”

“If you put people in jail without trial and are not allowed to visit,”

"Does that mean they will never get out in this life?"

"It's very possible."

She said: "The Rothschild family probably wants to get some clues or results from him."

"He will never be released until the goal is achieved,"

"Even if the best lawyers in the United States are called it is still useless."

"Once this happens, they can label Peter as a threat to the country's territorial security at any time."

"Which will be difficult for anyone to use."

Charlie asked her: "Is there any way for Miss Fei to get him out?"

Stella said in embarrassment: "Mr. Wade, tell you the truth."

"In New York, theoretically there is nothing that the Fei family can't do,"

"But the premise is that this family has no objection."

"In New York and even the entire United States, if something is decided by the Rothschild family,"

"No one can change it. If I go to recruit people,"

"Everyone I find will definitely tell me that this matter can't be done."

Charlie smacked his lips, feeling a little difficult in his heart.

The main purpose of coming to see Peter this time was to find out what kind of relationship he had with his father,

Why he changed his name to Zhou Liangyun and went to work at Antique Shop,

And how he had obtained the "Nine Mysterious Heavenly Scriptures" with him.

There is some connection that he doesn't know about.

But all this is based on the premise that he must see him and face him face to face.

Now Peter Zhou was sent to prison by the Rothschild family,

And even Stella couldn't get him out of prison.

This was really difficult to handle.

In desperation, Charlie asked her: "Miss Fei,"

"If you were asked to send someone to Brooklyn Prison, could you do it?"

## Chapter 5825

"Send people in?"

Stella asked him subconsciously:

"Mr. Wade, you...you don't want me to send you in, right?"

"That's right," Charlie said:

"Please help me get a false identity,"

"And then send me to Brooklyn Prison."

"I want to meet Peter Zhou."

Stella thought for a while and said:

"Mr. Wade, I will send you in for questioning. But..."

"Not much hope, I can't guarantee whether you will be able to see Peter Zhou after you go in."

"After all, his situation is too special,"

"And it is worthy of the core members of the Routhchild family to spend a lot of effort on his behalf,"

"No matter what he is offended for. For the other party, this matter must be unusual,"

"So he must also be receiving special attention in the Prison."

"If you want to see him, it will probably take some effort."

Charlie smiled and said: "It doesn't matter, we have to go in first to talk about these."

Stella asked: "When does Mr. Wade want to go?"

Charlie said decisively: "The sooner the better,"

"Can you send me in before noon?"

Stella also replied simply: "No problem,"

"I will make arrangements, please wait for my call."

Charlie hung up the phone temporarily, and Hogan asked him:

"Master, are you planning to go to the prison to see Peter Zhou?"

"Yes."

Charlie said, "The person he offended was Rothchild's core member."

"This is beyond Stella's ability."

"At the moment, there is no better way except for me to go to the prison to see him."

Hogan said with a puzzled look: "Although his antique business is doing well,"

"Compared with Routhchild, it pales into insignificance,"

"Not even a drop in the bucket."

"How could he offend the core members of Routhchild?"

Charlie shook his head: "I don't know,"

"Even I have never come into contact with the core members of the Routhchild family."

After saying that, Charlie added: "So I have to meet him to know the answers I want to know."

"And can also understand by the way why he offended the Routhchild family."

"He was a friend of my father during his lifetime,"

"And he was probably kind to me. If he is really in trouble, I can't just sit idly by."

Hogan wanted to persuade Charlie not to easily conflict with the Routhchild family,

But when the words came to his lips,

He swallowed them again because he thought of himself.

When Charlie first met him, he was willing to offend Gerard Liu for him.

If that Zhou Peter was really kind to him, and according to his character,

He would definitely compete with the Routhchild family for Peter Zhou.

In desperation, he could only say:

"Prisons here are a mixed bag."

"Now that the young master has made up his mind,"

"Please be careful and try not to reveal your true identity,"

"When you first come into contact with the Routhchild family."

Charlie nodded and smiled: "Uncle, don't worry, I know it well."

"I just asked Miss Fei to prepare a new identity for me."

Hogan hesitated for a moment and said,

"Master, how about I go with you,"

"So that I'll take care of you."

Charlie said: "Uncle, you can just wait for me outside."

"It's more convenient for me to go by myself for this kind of thing."

"If you come with me, I will devote my energy to taking care of you."

"After all, you also said, prisons here are a mixed bag."

"It's not dangerous for me, but it's different for you."

Hogan nodded lightly. He knew that although he could help Charlie get some ideas,

Most of the time he would definitely cause trouble for Charlie,

The environment in the prison was a jungle environment.

He was old and had little ability to protect him in that environment.

So he said to Charlie: "Master,"

"From prisons, you can communicate with the outside world by phone."

"If you need me to do anything, please contact me at any time."

"Okay."

...

## Chapter 5826

After the two had breakfast, Charlie drove to the Shangri-La Hotel in New York.

Because he was going to Brooklyn Prison today,

He had someone prepare a luxurious suite for Hogan.

The two rested in the room for a while, and Charlie received a call from Stella.

On the phone, Stella asked Charlie:

"Mr. Wade, where are you now? I have almost arranged the matter."

"If it is convenient for you, I will come out to meet you now and tell you the specific things."

Charlie said, "I'm at Shangri-La now. You can come directly."

Ten minutes later, Stella hurried over.

As soon as they met, she respectfully said to Charlie:

“Mr. Wade, I have prepared the identity you want.”

After saying that, she took out a passport, handed it to him and said:

“This is a Malaysian identity. You can claim to the outside world that you are a Malaysian Chinese,”

“And your identity does not have entry records in the United States.”

“In this way, the security of your identity can also be increased to avoid being found out by interested parties.”

Charlie nodded, took the passport, opened it, and took a look,

The photo is a photo of himself, and the name is Chen Wade.

Charlie saw that the workmanship of this passport was very genuine,

So he couldn't help but ask: "Is this passport real?"

Stella nodded and said: "This is made up of the Malaysian Embassy through the Congo trust relationship."

"Yes, it's a real passport."

Charlie praised: "The Fei family in New York really have great hands and eyes."

Stella smiled and said: "Since it is your need,"

"Mr. Wade, then Stella will naturally do everything possible to meet it."

With that, she said to Charlie: "By the way, Mr. Wade, I have arranged for the Immigration Bureau's informants."

"If you are ready, they will detain you on the grounds of illegal immigration and being suspected of multiple thefts."

"You will be arrested, and then expedited to the Brooklyn Prison through the internal fast track to wait for the next step of the Immigration Bureau."

"Illegal immigrants are caught breaking the law and sent directly to prison."

"This situation is still very common in the United States."

"After all, there are too many illegal immigrants in the United States,"

"And there is no formal process. They can't cope with it, so most of them are arrested and sent to prison first,"

"And then they decide whether to be deported or kicked out, or stay in prison,"

"So if you go in with this background, no one will suspect you."

Charlie nodded and asked: "Then I can go to Brooklyn Prison today?"

"Yes." Stella nodded: "I just asked within the Fei family,"

"We can also find someone in Brooklyn Prison who can cooperate."

"He is the person in charge of the First Ward of Brooklyn Prison and can help you quickly complete the admission process."

"However, the entire Brooklyn Prison is actually controlled by the Routhchild family,"

"And most of them are their spies. I was afraid of alerting others,"

"So I didn't let anyone consult that person about Peter Zhou,"

"But if you need it, I can let someone give it a try."

Charlie shook his head and said, "It's better not to ask, so as not to leak the news."

Stella asked again: "Then how long do you plan to stay in this time?"

"If you have finished your business and are ready to come out,"

"Call me at any time, and I will ask people from the Immigration Bureau to come and pick you out."

"Then tell the prison to take you out."

"If you are repatriated to Malaysia, this matter will not arouse other people's suspicions."

Charlie said: "We haven't determined how long we will stay for the time being."

"We will wait until the matter is completed. It is not too early now."

"The Immigration Bureau will arrest the person before sending him back."

"There are some procedures to go through when we get to the prison,"

"So Miss Fei might as well arrange for the people at the Immigration Bureau to start preparations now,"

"And I'll go to Chinatown and wait for them to catch me."

## Chapter 5827

At noon, when Charlie was sitting alone in a Sichuan restaurant in Chinatown eating,

Two Immigration Bureau police cars suddenly stopped in front of the hotel with their lights flashing silently.

Charlie saw everything but pretended not to care and continued to eat with his head down.

At this time, several police officers rushed in quickly,

Took a photo to compare the guests in the hotel,

And suddenly rushed to Charlie and asked loudly:

“Are you Yechen who smuggled himself to the United States from Malaysia?”

Charlie raised his head, shook his head innocently, and said,

"No..."

The policeman checked the photo again,

Then sneered and said to his colleagues next to him,

"That's him, take him away!"

As soon as he finished speaking, several policemen rushed towards him.

He came forward, twisted Charlie's arms to his back, and then cuffed him.

Charlie pretended to struggle for a few times.

When the other party made a gesture of touching the gun,

He quickly calmed down and stopped struggling.

The police then handcuffed him,

Took him out of the hotel and put him in the back of one of the police cars.

The police car roared all the way and headed straight to the immigration office.

At this time, the police officers did not know anything about Charlie.

They only knew that their superiors informed them that a Malaysian illegal immigrant,

Suspected of multiple thefts appeared in a restaurant in Chinatown,

And asked them to seize the opportunity to arrest him.

After several people took Charlie back to the immigration office,

They confiscated his Malaysian passport,

A worthless old mobile phone and more than two hundred US dollars in cash.

After checking the identity information in the passport,

The Immigration Bureau confirmed Yechen's identity as an illegal immigrant in Malaysia.

Afterward, Charlie was temporarily put into the detention room of the Immigration Bureau,

Waiting for the next step.

When Charlie came to the detention room, there were already at least twenty people in the small detention room.

These people had different skin colors, and each one looked very decadent and frightened.

Seeing Charlie come in, these people all looked at him.

Then, an Asian man with a scruffy beard asked him in English with a strong accent:

"Are you Japanese?"

Charlie shook his head:

"I am Malaysian, my parents are Chinese."

Another Asian-looking man with short hair immediately asked excitedly when he heard this:

"Brother, I am Chinese, we are half-compatriots!"

Charlie nodded and asked, "How did you get in?"

The short-haired man smiled and laughed at himself:

"How else could I have gotten in?"

"I was caught cheating. Have no identity, have no income,"

"People robbed me of everything on the road."

"I didn't have a place to stay when I came to the United States."

"I set up a tent in the park every day, and the tent was stolen too."

"I wanted to steal a bicycle to deliver food, but I was caught by the police and now I am here."

Charlie frowned: "You came in through the wires."

"Logically, you should go to Los Angeles,"

"Which is closer to Mexico. Why did you come to New York?"

The short-haired man patted his thigh:

"Brother, you know the stuff too!"

"Did you also come in through a wire?"

Charlie shook his head: "I came by boat."

The short-haired man was a little disappointed and sighed:

"It's better for you to take the boat."

"You boarded the boat from your hometown and wandered around for a few months."

"Unlike us who are walking the line, this journey has been so damn hard."

"It's not an exaggeration to say, buddy, it's not an exaggeration to say that I will lose my skin even if I don't die."

At this time, someone in the crowd muttered:

"It's a waste to take a boat, walking the line."

"At least you have to stand on the ground the whole time."

"You may have to swim the last kilometer of the boat."

"There were more than 60 people on the boat, and only half of them made it ashore."

"The rest don't know where the waves took them."

When the short-haired man heard this, shrank his neck and sighed:

"Anyway, I really regret it."

"This place is not a fcking paradise on earth."

"It is simply a purgatory on earth."

"The liar agent told me before I came that I would just wash dishes when I arrive here."

"Just by doing that, I can earn seven to eight thousand dollars a month."

"When I came here, in the Chinese restaurant,"

"Eight people rush to wash a bowl."

After that, he said to Charlie: "Brother, didn't you ask me why I didn't go to Los Angeles?"

"In fact, it was Los Angeles that I first went to."

"After arriving from Mexico, a large group of us rushed to Los Angeles first."

"After we arrived, we discovered that there were no jobs with such high wages."

"All the agencies were full. I slept on the street there for more than ten days."

"I could only eat some relief food every day. The relief food was barely enough to make me one-third full."

"Then I slept on the street. A guy I met said the competition in Los Angeles is so dmn fierce,"

"Why not come to New York and try your luck."

Charlie asked curiously: "It's so far from the west coast to the east coast,"

"How did you get here?"

The short-haired man chuckled: "I came by train. , it's so dmn far away,"

"Thanks to following a few homeless Americans,"

"They ran around on the train all day long,"

"So we followed all the way to New York, and our hands were all empty;"

"After coming to New York, I really lamented how prosperous New York is."

"In such a big city, there is always a place for me to stay, right?"

"Then I thought about finding a job in Chinatown, and I found a job,"

"Delivering food from a Chinese restaurant."

"But I didn't have a car, so I couldn't deliver it on my legs,"

"So I tried stealing a bicycle, and I got arrested."

Charlie smiled slightly and said, "Then what are your plans next?"

The short-haired man said melancholy: "How do I know?"

"It's not worth being imprisoned for what I've done."

"Don't you know that prisons are almost overcrowded?"

"If illegal immigrants commit petty theft, they will most likely be imprisoned for a few days."

"I am released. I originally thought they could send me back,"

"But it turns out they are too lazy to take care of it now."

"After I am released, I have to sleep on the street..."

"I wish I had known that this place was such a sgumbag."

"I would have been killed. I won't come either."

## Chapter 5828

Charlie nodded and said, "If you can find an opportunity, go back to China."

The short-haired man shook his head and said,

"I want to go back, but I don't have a passport,"

"I have no money, and these people won't deport me,"

"So how can I go back?"

"I can't take the same route back, this trip costs more than 10,000 US dollars..."

Charlie shrugged: "Then you will find a way to save more money to go back."

The short-haired man was about to cry:

"Brother, I just saved up money for a long time to come here,"

"And carried all the food I had never eaten in my life along the way."

"If I save up money for a long time and go back, am I wronged?"

Charlie couldn't help laughing, and asked him:

“What did you do before you came here?”

“Me?” The man chuckled and said,

“I’ve done everything at construction sites, takeaways, casual works, and group performances.”

Charlie nodded. In this situation, he didn’t do anything important.

The life of illegal immigrants is extremely difficult.

Under normal circumstances, illegal immigrants only get jobs that the lowest level of local people are not willing to do.

Hogan was a leader in the financial field in Hong Kong back then,

But when he came to the United States, he could only open a business.

Living in a roast goose shop, let alone such an ordinary person with no special skills.

At this time, the short-haired man said quietly to himself:

"But to be honest, I really want to go back if I can..."

"This place is so different from what I imagined..."

At this time, several more illegal immigrants were brought by the police.

They were all put into the detention room.

One of the yellow-skinned policemen looked at Charlie and said,

"Yechen, come out with me."

The short-haired man asked curiously:

"Brother, why did he call you?"

"He called me over."

Charlie nodded and said hello to the short-haired man:

"I am going." The short-haired man said a little disappointed:

"Why did you let him out as soon as he came in?"

The yellow-skinned policeman glanced at the short-haired man and said expressionlessly:

"He is going to be transferred to Brooklyn Prison!"

The short-haired man was startled, looked at Charlie's back and said:

"Brother, did you kill someone or set a fire?"

"I heard that prisons are a fcuking mess, so be careful!"

Charlie waved his hands without looking back and said, "Don't worry, goodbye."

The yellow-skinned policeman led Charlie to the office area, at a deserted corner, he whispered to Charlie:

"Sir, our director has taken the fast track and will send you to the Brooklyn Prison right away."

"There is an informant of mine there. When you arrive, you can find him, his name is Lucas,"

"A Brazilian, known as the Brooklyn Prison Know-It-All."

"You can ask him about the situation inside the prison."

"Just tell him that you were introduced by Andrew,"

"And he will definitely spare no effort to cooperate with you."

"Okay. I've noted it down." Charlie nodded slightly.

He thought that this policeman should be a member of the Fei family's intelligence network.

For a top family like the Fei family, it would definitely cost a lot of money.

They have the manpower and material resources to weave our own intelligence network in the United States.

There will definitely be people from Congress, police stations, and major government agencies.

Moreover, for the sake of its own security and confidentiality,

This intelligence network must be divided into multiple different levels.

The upper layers control downwards and the lower layers serve upwards.

Jumping to command and reporting is not allowed.

Even a lot of sensitive information must be isolated layer by layer.

Sometimes, only the people at the highest level may know that they are serving the Fei family.

Apart from them, the lower levels do not know at all that they are actually a member of the Fei family's intelligence network.

In this way, It can ensure that this intelligence network is safe enough.

Soon, Charlie went through the prison transfer process at the Immigration Bureau and was taken directly to the Brooklyn Prison by the police.

Although the Brooklyn Prison is not large, it is located in Brooklyn,

The most chaotic neighborhood in New York with the highest crime rate.

Therefore, the majority of prisoners held here are serious criminals,

And most of them are gang members who commit murder, arson, robbery, and drug trafficking.

Within the New York prison system, Brooklyn Prison has the messiest and worst environment.

Almost all prison guards are unwilling to work in this prison.

When Charlie was taken to Brooklyn Prison,

He went through a quick admission process and was quickly assigned to the first ward of the prison.

Because the Brooklyn Prison is located in an urban area,

It is a multi-story independent building that is entirely closed.

There is no open-air playground, so public places and indoor activity areas are in the center of the entire building.

On both sides of the public place are the First Ward and the Second Ward.

Prisoners in the two Wards can only meet when eating and doing activities.

After Charlie completed the formalities and changed into prison uniform, he took his toiletries and followed the prison guards to the first prison area.

Only when Charlie actually entered the prison area did he realize that this prison was even dirtier than a refugee camp.

Here, there is no such thing as the two-person cells with separate toilets in movies and TV shows.

There are even dozens of people crowded into one cell here,

And prisoners of all races are locked up like sardine cans.

Among them, the room was crowded with nothing but beds.

As Charlie walked along, all the cells he passed were extremely noisy.

There were even many bad guys who saw new prisoners coming in.

They shouted loudly through the iron fence, whistled, and smashed the iron fence with plastic quilts.

There was a loud bang, and some names like rookies were shouted in the mouth,

And there were even many men with perverted looks.

When they saw the tender skin and tender flesh of Charlie, they shouted some obscene words.

Charlie walked by expressionlessly, writing down all the people yelling at him,

Especially those animals with perverted looks on their faces, which made him feel disgusted,

So he couldn't help but murmur: "This sh!t-like place needs to be renovated."

## Chapter 5829

Soon, the prison guards brought Charlie to the door of cell No. 8 where he was assigned.

Originally, the prisoners inside were laughing and making a mess.

The prison guard shouted through the door,

And all the prisoners were in the center of the cell now standing in line.

The two prison guards waiting at the door checked the number of people through the iron railings,

And then used the intercom to notify their colleagues to open the gate.

Then the two went in first to check, and after confirming that there was no problem,

They gave instructions to the prison guard with Charlie behind.

The prison guard pushed Charlie and the prisoners saw a man being brought into the cell.

As soon as he entered the cell, Charlie smelled a sour smell.

Body odor and foot odor mixed with the smell of bedding,

Plus the smell of the toilet made it disgusting.

As soon as Charlie entered, he couldn't help but frown,

But the prisoner inside didn't care at all about the dirty smell inside.

One of them, a muscular white man with a big beard, saw Charlie's disgusted face,

And even couldn't help but laugh and joke:

"Wow, our Asian beauties don't seem to be satisfied with the sanitary conditions here!"

A group of people around suddenly burst into laughter,

And one of them, a thin black man, said with a lewd smile:

"Boss, this guy looks like he has thin skin and tender flesh,"

"He should be one of your likings!"

The muscular man laughed and said:

"I will let him adapt to my body odor and my little brother as soon as possible!"

Everyone burst out laughing.

Charlie frowned and glanced at the muscular man,

And ten thousand ways to torture him flashed through his mind.

When the muscular man saw Charlie looking at him,

He deliberately raised his eyebrows at Charlie,

With a look of obscenity and teasing on his face.

At this time, the leading prison guard introduced Charlie:

"This is your new roommate, and he will sleep in bed No. 16 from now on."

After that, he looked at the muscular man again and reminded:

"Dean, you'd better be restrained."

"What happened last time is not over yet."

"You have caused this kind of trouble several times."

"Sh!t!" The muscular man curled his lips and said,

"I just fcuked that kid a few times."

"I was originally leading him. It gave him happiness,"

"But he couldn't think about it that way and attempted suicide."

"How can you blame me?"

"That's right!"

A prisoner agreed with a smile:

"The boss favored him, that's his blessing! What's so hard to think about?"

As he spoke, he chuckled and asked the prison guard:

"Sir, is that kid dead?"

"He is okay. He's not dead yet. He is still being treated."

The prison guard said with a dark face:

"But, it's still unclear whether he can survive,"

"So don't cause any more trouble for me."

After saying that, he glanced at Charlie and said to the muscular man named Dean:

"It's not that you can't do some things,"

"It's just that you still have to do them."

"You have to grasp the scale and don't cause us any more trouble."

The muscular man chuckled and said,

"Don't worry, I will grasp the scale!"

The prison guard nodded, then ignored Charlie and turned around with the other two prison guards.

Then he walked out.

Then, the fence gate closed automatically.

The dozen or so people who were still in the queue suddenly relaxed.

The muscular man named Dean looked at Charlie and sneered:

"Hey, new guy! Let me tell you the rules of this cell."

Charlie ignored him and walked straight to his bed No. 16.

Seeing that Charlie ignored him, Dean suddenly became a little angry.

He immediately rushed up, grabbed Charlie's collar,

Clenched his fists and gestured at Charlie:

"Boy, I'm talking to you, you fcuking listen. Don't you understand?"

Charlie frowned and said coldly:

"Your mouth really stinks, and your body also stinks."

"The whole cell is filled with a disgusting stench."

"It seems that the hygiene of this cell is not taken care of."

With that said, Charlie pushed his hand away and simply tidied up his bed.

Dean didn't expect that Charlie would dare to talk to him like this,

And he was a little confused in his heart.

He was worried that Charlie had some background that he couldn't afford to offend,

So he stepped on Charlie's bed and asked in a cold voice:

"Boy, what are you doing?"

"You're so fcuking courageous, what's your background?"

"Report it! If you can name it, I can give you some face,"

"But if you can't tell me, don't blame me for being rude to you!"

Looking at his dirty feet which were leaving shoe prints on his bed, Charlie said coldly:

"I don't have any background, I'm just an illegal immigrant caught by the immigration bureau."

"You don't need to give me face, I won't give you face,"

"Now take your dirty feet away from me and wipe these footprints clean!"

Dean was stunned for a moment.

In this cell, who can't be respectful to him?

On weekdays, he can beat whoever he wants and sleep with whoever he wants.

But he never dreamed that a frail-looking Asian with delicate skin and tender flesh would dare to speak nonsense in front of his muscular self.

Others did not expect that Charlie, the newcomer, would be so brave and dare to talk to the boss of the cell like this.

They were all shocked and curious, wanting to see how Dean would teach this ignorant boy a lesson.

You know, Dean is a standard muscle man, big and powerful,

So in a prison where fists are met,

His force value is relatively high. In this cell, no one is his opponent.

Moreover, there were a total of fifteen people in the entire cell,

Not counting Charlie, seven or eight of them were Dean's younger brothers,

And the rest were also very afraid of Dean and did not dare to mess with him at all.

At this time, Dean gritted his teeth with an annoyed look on his face and said:

"Boy, you may not know where I'm from!"

"I tell you, here, I have the final say in everything."

"I let you stand You can't sit down, you can't lie down!"

"You have to do whatever I tell you to do, you have to eat whatever I tell you to eat,"

"And you have to swallow whatever I tell you to do."

"You have to swallow whatever you want,"

"Otherwise, I will make your life worse than death!"

Charlie saw that in addition to the threat on his face when he spoke,

He was also full of vulgarity, and asked him expressionlessly:

"Are you g@y?"

## Chapter 5830

Dean clenched his fists loudly: "I'm not, but here,"

"I like a thin-skinned guy like you who has to serve me!"

Charlie nodded: "You want me to serve you, right?"

"Come and tell me what kind of services you need specifically."

Dean laughed evilly and said, "It's meaningless,"

"Why don't I take you to the bathroom and teach you step by step,"

"So that you can practice it directly!"

"Wow!" Everyone cheered, and some even said excitedly:

"Boss, are you going to have a good time before it gets dark?"

"Can you let me have a good time when you are done?"

Dean smiled and said: "Let me inspect the goods for everyone first!"

"After I'm done, everyone who is interested can go in and have a good time!"

As he said, he darkened his face, looked at Charlie, and said coldly:

"Come on, follow me to the bathroom!"

Charlie nodded, pointed to his feet on his bed, and said calmly:

"I'll tell you about the shoe prints later."

After that, he tidied up his clothes, and first took the step towards the bathroom.

Dean chuckled and said to the people watching around him:

"You have character, I like it."

"You guys wait outside and no one is allowed to peek."

"Otherwise, I will twist his head off!"

Everyone nodded with smiles.

And then Dean also walked into the bathroom.

As soon as he entered the bathroom, he closed the door and said to Charlie with a lewd smile:

"Since that kid committed suicide last time,"

"I haven't met someone as thin and tender as you in a while."

"If you just listen to me, I can make you walk sideways in Brooklyn,"

"But if you don't obey me, I will make your life worse than death every second you spend here!"

Charlie looked at him, covered his nose, and asked:

"Why your fcking mouth is so stinky?"

"Listening to you just makes my eyes burn."

"Don't you usually brush your teeth?"

"Fck!" Seeing Charlie ridiculing himself, Dean immediately cursed:

"You fcuking think I have a bad mouth?"

"Let me tell you, I have other things."

"The place stinks even more!"

"I'll put it in your m0uth soon and let you have a good taste!"

After that, he reached out to untie his pants and said with a sinister smile:

"Boy, I'm going to teach you a lesson today."

"Teach you how to survive in Brooklyn Prison!"

"Lesson?" Charlie sneered: "How about I give you a lesson first, a hygiene class!"

After saying that, Charlie's right hand suddenly moved with lightning speed  
Covering his ears,

He grabbed his neck and pressed his thumb hard on his Adam's apple, almost  
crushing it.

Dean didn't expect that the thin Charlie would be the first to attack him,

And he didn't expect that Charlie's arms, which seemed to have no muscles at  
all, would be extremely powerful!

When he strangled his neck, his brain seemed to be deprived of oxygen in an  
instant,

And his neck was in severe pain, so painful that his body could not exert any  
strength.

He has been practicing fitness for many years,

And the direction of fitness has always been strength,

Which is completely developing in the direction of a strongman.

In his opinion, his body strength can be ranked among the top five in the entire Brooklyn Prison.

How could he be crushed by a thin Asian man!

He was suffering from severe pain in his neck.

No matter how hard he struggled, he couldn't loosen Charlie's fingers even a little bit.

He couldn't breathe at all, and his face soon turned blue and purple from the suffocation.

He wanted to beg for mercy, but he couldn't speak at all.

The look in his eyes that looked at Charlie had changed from contempt and wretchedness to one of deep fear.

Charlie looked at his frightened look and sneered:

"You are still not convinced that you have a bad mouth."

"It seems that you haven't liked brushing your teeth since you were a child."

"When you grow up, you are even more dirty and lazy."

"Come on, let me teach you. , How should you clean up a bad mouth like yours!"

After saying that, Charlie took the toilet brush beside the toilet with his left hand,

Pinched his mouth open with his right hand,

And directly brushed the dirty toilet brush. Put it straight into his mouth.

Although Dean is very big, one of his chest muscles is almost as big as an adult's head,

But this guy's mouth is really not that big in comparison.

When Charlie forced the toilet brush, which was thick and covered with hard burrs, into his mouth, two bloody gashes were opened at the corners of his mouth.

Dean suddenly shivered in pain, but Charlie showed no mercy at all.

With a strong hand, he stuffed the entire toilet brush head into Dean's mouth.

Then, as if he were cleaning a toilet, he scrubbed hard a few times, causing Dean's mouth to bleed continuously.

Dean felt that his entire mouth and throat were in terrible pain.

The hard plastic bristles had already caused countless bloody wounds in his mouth.

His whole body almost collapsed and he couldn't help but shed tears.

He wanted to whimper desperately to attract the attention of the boys outside the door and let them come in to rescue him.

However, the bathroom door had been closed by himself,

His mouth was filled with toilet brush, and his throat was pinched tightly by Charlie's fingers.

Even if he whimpered desperately, it was as weak and could not be heard by anyone outside.

With no hope of help, Dean could only raise his hands above his head with difficulty,

Praying to Charlie with his eyes with a miserable look on his face.

Charlie temporarily stopped his movements, left the toilet brush in his mouth,

And asked him with a sneer: "Didn't you just teach me how to survive in Brooklyn?"

"Why are you crying like a girl now?"

"Are you not worthy of your muscles?"

Dean was speechless, and he couldn't care about Charlie's humiliation,

And he couldn't control his tears.

He could only look at Charlie with more humble eyes, hoping that Charlie would show mercy.

But Charlie didn't have any sympathy for him.

He pushed the toilet brush deeper and asked him,

"What were you talking about just now? Are you trying to stuff something somewhere?"

Dean shook his head in fear. But Charlie continued:

"Hey, you don't admit it, do you? Well, aren't you a good one?"

"Why don't I help you stuff this toilet brush behind your back,"

"So that you can feel completely satisfied?"

Dean felt like five thunderbolts struck his head.

He saw Charlie's cold and solemn expression, which didn't look like he was threatening him at all.

His whole body was so frightened that he was trembling, fearing that Charlie would really do this.

So his knees weakened and he knelt on the ground with a thud.

He clasped his hands on top of his head and kept begging Charlie for mercy with gestures.

Charlie looked at his extremely frightened look and asked curiously:

"What? Are you scared?"

Dean nodded vigorously and shed tears everywhere.

Charlie twisted his wrist and twisted the toilet brush in his mouth again.

A stream of blood mixed with saliva flowed down the corners of his mouth.

Dean's heart was completely broken at this moment.

Seeing that every one of Dean's blood vessels was beating wildly in pain and his heart was collapsed,

Charlie was not ready to let him go, but said extremely coldly:

"Remember this! As long as I still see you unhappy, it's useless for you to be afraid,"

"And it's useless to beg for mercy, I will just like you used to bully the weak when you were a child,"

"I will continue to hit you randomly, impromptu, and for no reason,"

"And continue to destroy you until you are completely dead!"

## Chapter 5831

At this moment, Dean did not dare to have any doubts about every word Charlie said.

When he heard that Charlie would continue to destroy him until he is dead,

His heart felt as desperate as a person who grew up in a tropical rainforest,

And had never seen ice and snow in nature,

And was suddenly thrown into a pool filled with liquid nitrogen.

He knew that he was no match for Charlie,

And he also knew that all the younger brothers outside him combined were certainly no match for Charlie.

Therefore, he knew even more that there was no possibility for him to escape now.

If the younger brothers realized something was wrong and came in,

They would probably all be subdued by Charlie, and he would still not be able to be saved.

And now, there are at least four hours until dinner time.

Now, he no longer thinks about how to take revenge,

Or even how to save his face and dignity.

He just wants to beg Charlie to stop this inhumane torture and humiliation.

Who would have thought that honor and self-esteem...

That he was willing to defend with his own death and that of others would be completely pierced,

And shattered by the old, dirty, and smelly toilet brush in his mouth.

Kneeling on the ground, he could only nod desperately with the toilet brush in his mouth,

His hands clasped above his head,

Like a well-trained teddy dog, trying to use the most humble attitude to get Charlie's forgiveness.

Charlie looked at the miserable state of him kneeling on the ground, sneered, and asked:

"Has anyone begged you on their knees before,"

"Like you begged on your knees?"

Dean's expression was stunned for a moment,

And a few thoughts could not help but arise in his heart

Familiar and unfamiliar faces were all poor people who had been tortured to death by his inhuman means,

Or tortured to the point of committing suicide.

In fact, in terms of cruelty, Dean is far more cruel than Charlie.

He could use the cruelest, violent, and humiliating methods,

On the most innocent, cowardly, and pitiful people, and he takes pleasure in doing so.

But Charlie, no matter how ruthless his methods were, would never hurt innocent people.

Seeing that Dean didn't dare to make any response,

Charlie smiled slightly and said, "It's the first time we've met,"

"And I don't know much about your past,"

"But it doesn't matter, those people outside must know very well what you've done."

"Let them tell me what evil you have done!"

After saying that, Charlie grabbed the tail of the toilet brush,

Lifted it up hard, and directly lifted Dean who was kneeling on the ground.

What followed was an even more severe pain in Dean's mouth.

He felt that there was not even a piece of good skin the size of a needle tip in his mouth anymore,

And it was all blood and bloody ulcers.

The pain was heartbreaking.

As for Charlie, he never had the slightest sympathy for such people.

Even though Dean had collapsed for several rounds,

In Charlie's opinion, this was just a small appetizer.

After using the toilet brush to pick him up with one hand,

Charlie walked to the bathroom door and gently turned the door handle.

At this time, there were fifteen manpower outside,

And seven or eight people looked excited.

## Chapter 5832

There was even a tall and lanky man who couldn't hold himself back any longer.

As he unbuttoned his belt, he said to a few people around him:

"Boss is done, it's my turn to feel good!"

As he said that, he ran to the door jumping.

Waiting expectantly for the bathroom door to open.

The moment the door opened, he looked around to see the situation inside,

And said with a flattering look:

"How do you feel, boss..."

As soon as he finished speaking, he realized that the person standing in front of him turned out to be a cold-faced Charlie.

He was stunned, but he didn't feel anything unusual.

He just said with a lewd smile:

"Oh, my Asian beauty, you can't help but want to find a second one?"

Charlie smiled and held out one hand and picked Dean on the inside of the door in front of him and said with a smile:

"It seems that you really want to be the second one."

The tall and thin man seemed to have seen an evil ghost.

Whose skin was peeled off at this moment.

He was extremely frightened and stared.

His mouth was wide open, but he couldn't say anything or even make any sound.

He never dared to imagine that the man in front of him,

Who was more miserable than the clown was actually the boss Dean.

Whom he had admired and followed for a long time.

When Dean saw him, he subconsciously wanted to call for help,

But his mouth was still blocked by the toilet brush.

He opened his mouth desperately,

And the blood and saliva in his mouth surged out instantly,

Covering the scalp of the tall, thin man with fear and a tingling sensation.

Others knew that Dean had a bad temper.

Although they liked to watch the fun in this situation,

Except for the tall and lanky man, almost no one dared to come close to watch,

So they still didn't know what was going on.

The tall and thin man collapsed in fear and subconsciously wanted to retreat,

But as soon as he took a step back,

Charlie raised his foot and kicked him hard in the chest.

With a bang, the tall and thin man flew out directly from the bathroom door in a parabola shape,

And then hit the opposite wall with a bang.

He almost didn't even make a sound.

He completely passed out.

The other people in the cell were startled by this sudden scene.

Everyone subconsciously came over to take a look, and they saw the miserable Dean.

No one could believe the scene in front of them,

And didn't know what to do for a moment,

But Charlie pulled the toilet brush out of Dean's mouth with force,

Then sneered and said to Dean: "Come on,"

"What do you want?"

"What you said to you little brothers, say it now."

The moment the toilet plug was pulled out,

The last thing Dean wanted to say was to yell, 'Kill him.'

However, when the words came to his lips, he couldn't say them anyway.

He already knew very clearly in his heart.

That Charlie's combat power was an absolute dimensionality reduction blow in this cell.

## Chapter 5833

If he lets these minions attack him,

Let alone whether these minions will be killed by him,

Charlie will definitely not let him go just because of his rebellious behavior.

Seeing that Dean was silent, Charlie slapped him in the face and said coldly:

"Weren't you pretty dmn good at talking just now?"

"As soon as I entered this cell, your broken mouth stopped."

"You stopped, why are you playing so hard now?"

Dean was slapped so hard that several of his teeth were knocked out,

And the severe pain made his brain feel like it had been stabbed repeatedly by countless iron needles.

When the others saw Dean being beaten, they felt even more shocked.

They also know that Dean's fighting power is extremely powerful.

Even he was mutilated into such a bird-like state.

Afraid that the combined strength of Dean is not enough.

So everyone subconsciously stepped back, not daring to come forward to provoke Charlie.

At this time, Charlie pulled up a plastic chair and sat directly in front of a dozen people.

Then he picked up the toilet brush stained with blood and flicked it hard on the ground in front of him,

And a line of blood appeared on the ground.

Afterward, Charlie said calmly: "It's good of you to give it to me."

"I'll give you three seconds to line up behind this line."

"After I count to three, if there are still people who haven't stood still, I will break one leg."

After saying that, Charlie stretched out a finger and shouted:

"One!"

As soon as he finished speaking, Dean struggled to stand behind the red line made of his own blood.

Charlie stretched out another finger at this time: "Two!"

Although the others were completely frightened into stupidity, seeing that Dean, the victim, responded immediately,

No one dared to delay any longer, so everyone lined up behind the red line.

Charlie nodded at this time and said one word lightly: "Three!"

At this time, everyone had lined up and stood in line, and the only one who did not come to line up was the one who was kicked out by Charlie just now and bumped into the wall.

Charlie stood up at this time, walked around the human wall, came to the back, looked at the tall and thin man who was unconscious,

Grabbed his slightly curly hair, and dragged him to the front of the human wall.

Afterward, Charlie threw him to the ground and left him lying there motionless like a dead dog.

He turned to the remaining dozen people and said,

"I just said, if I count to three and no one stands still, this guy is lying there motionless like a dead dog,"

"Not taking my words seriously at all. If this is the case, how can you lead this team in the future?"

"So, I will break his legs in front of you today. I want you to know that I do what I say!"

Everyone was confused when they heard this, and they thought to themselves,

Isn't the reason why this guy is motionless like a dead dog just because of you?

How can you still blame him so confidently?

When he was confused, he saw Charlie lift his foot and step on the tall and thin man's right leg.

There was a click, and the bones broke.

Immediately afterward, the man woke up from his coma in an instant, rolling around on the ground holding his residual leg and crying incessantly.

Everyone else was dumbfounded. Who would have expected that Charlie would not even spare an unconscious person?

He was obviously unconscious, so how could he come to line up when he counted to three?

Just when everyone was too frightened to speak, in the crowd, a middle-aged white man in his fifties said tremblingly:

"You... you can't treat a comatose person like this, it's not fair!"

"Fair?" Charlie said calmly at this moment: "As the saying goes, a gentleman's words are hard to catch."

"When I walk in the world, what I pay attention to is not fairness, but integrity!"

"I will break one of the legs of anyone who doesn't come to line up. I will never do it. Can't break promise."

As he spoke, Charlie frowned and looked at him, and asked curiously:

"Old man, who are you? Do you dare to speak for him at this time?"

The middle-aged and elderly white man mustered up the courage and said,

"I am a priest! I am a servant of God! I speak for justice!"

Charlie sneered: "Sorry, I am an atheist and don't believe in anything."

"You..." The priest said nervously: "Even if you don't believe in God, You can't do this either!"

Charlie smiled and said, "You are quite good at criticizing others."

"When have I ever done such a thing? I just don't take his servants seriously."

With that, Charlie left and walked up to him, looked him directly in the eyes, and asked:

"Honestly, when did you enter this prison?"

The priest pursed his lips and said in a panic: "Three...three years ago... .."

Charlie nodded and asked again: "How long have you lived in this cell?"

The priest replied nervously: "Two... two years and three months..."

Charlie nodded again, pointed at Dean on the ground, and asked:

"You have lived here for such a long time, you should have seen him before."

"This guy tortured a lot of your fellow inmates, right?"

"I want to know, when he tortured those people, did you speak for those people?"

"I..." The priest was speechless for a moment.

He didn't actually want to speak for the tall and lanky man, nor did he really want to beg for mercy or seek justice for him.

He just realized that a new era had begun in this cell.

When Charlie picked up the toilet brush in Dean's mouth,

When he walked out of the bathroom, it meant that he had ascended the throne and became the new king here.

Therefore, he wanted to deliberately use this trick to gain a position in front of Charlie,

And at the same time, he also used this behavior that seemed to have a sense of justice to clarify one thing to Charlie:

Dean and the others are not the same group.

If you want to mess with them, it's okay, but don't mess with him.

And he also believes that since he is motivated by justice and has the blessing of a priest,

There is a high probability that he will not be targeted or even retaliated by Charlie.

In this way, he can be able to protect himself in this new era, and even gain the favor and trust of the new king.

But he never thought that a chess game he carefully planned would be killed by Charlie with one move.

When Dean harmed anyone in the past, instead of saying a word to those people, he even told Dean that God would not blame Dean for punishing those guilty people.

After all, no one who can end up in prison is really clean.

Stealing a wallet is also guilty, so his rhetoric is very popular with Dean.

This is why he can protect himself here wisely and never will be affected in any way.

Now, Charlie suddenly asked him in front of everyone whether he had spoken for the victims.

How should he answer? Isn't this murderous and heartbreaking?

Seeing that he remained silent for a long time, Charlie slapped him on the face, causing him to spin around in circles several times and lose two of his front teeth.

After a slap, the priest spun around and was about to fall down.

Charlie grabbed his collar, looked at him, and asked,

"Weren't you pretty good at talking just now?"

"You've already brought this out, why? Are you silent now?"

The priest was beaten to pieces, and his face hurt as if a firecracker had exploded his cheeks in his mouth.

He covered his face and cried, "I am the priest, don't hit me! God will punish you!"

Charlie smiled and asked him: "Since you are a priest and a servant of God, let me ask you,"

"How did you get in? How can you, a priest who serves God, What kind of crime did you commit to become a prisoner in Brooklyn Jail?"

The priest was immediately panicked and did not dare to say another word.

Charlie turned to look at the brown-skinned boy next to the priest and asked:

"Come on, tell me why this priest came in! If you don't tell me or lie to me, your end maybe even worse than that muscular man."

The brown-skinned boy was so frightened that he trembled all over and shouted loudly:

"Sexual assault! He came in because of sexual assault!"

After that, he added: "His name is John Lawrence a pedophile!"

"Moreover, he has not been a clergyman for a long time! Now he is still talking about his priesthood without shame, which is simply nonsense!"

John Lawrence suddenly felt like a deflated ball, curling up in front of Charlie, he was shaking like a drum washing machine with a broken shaft.

"It turns out it was sexual assault..." Charlie curled his lips, looked at John, shook his head and said:

"John, John, you said that you are quite old and can't control your body."

"You still can't do anything. How pathetic is it to know your own situation?"

As he spoke, Charlie changed the subject: "But I still admire your courage."

"I must make proper arrangements for people like you."

When John Lawrence heard this, he was desperate. But a glimmer of hope suddenly ignited in his heart.

But Charlie said: "Since you like to do that kind of thing so much, I definitely can't let you hold it in,"

"So I will arrange a good candidate for you."

After that, he kicked Dean on the ground and said Said:

"Listen to me, from today on, you must use your best method every day to satisfy Mr. Lawrence."

"Otherwise, on behalf of Mr. Lawrence, I will convict you of incompetence and condemn you!"



## Chapter 5834

Dean originally thought that Charlie would continue to torture him to death in the future,

But he did not expect that Charlie would actually give him a chance to make meritorious deeds.

As a result, his desperate life seemed to feel a faint light.

Excited, he nodded repeatedly without thinking, and expressed his sincerity earnestly:

"Please don't worry, sir, I will take good care of him and satisfy him!"

At this moment, John Lawrence felt his eyes darken, and he almost fainted.

He couldn't imagine how Dean would torture him if he fell into the hands of Dean in exchange for Charlie's appreciation.

Thinking of this, he immediately knelt down and begged: "Sir, please forgive me this time. I'm old and I can't bear the trouble!"

Charlie waved his hand: "It's okay, don't worry, I will never die."

After that, he looked at Dean on the ground again and said seriously:

"Listen to me, no matter how hard you try, you must ensure the safety of Mr. Lawrence's life.

"Do you understand?" Dean did not dare to hesitate for a moment and nodded.

He said eloquently: "Listened clearly, listened clearly!"

After saying that, he quickly looked at John Lawrence, whose face was full of tears, and said:

"Lawrence, don't worry, I will be very gentle!"

John Lawrence heard this, and instead of feeling any comfort, he realized that his future would be dark.

He looked at Charlie, wanting to continue begging for mercy from Charlie, and choked with tears:

"Sir, I..."

Charlie directly reached out and interrupted him, threatening in a cold voice:

"This is already what I can give you. This is the best condition."

"If you don't accept it, then I will add another person in on the basis of this condition."

After that, he pointed at Dean on the ground and smiled: "I believe there are people in this cell."

"He shouldn't be the only one with that kind of hobby, right?"

"Isn't the guy with the broken leg also interested in this kind of thing?"

John Lawrence didn't expect that Charlie wouldn't give him a chance to beg for mercy, and his whole body collapsed and burst into tears.

And Charlie reminded him with a smile but not a smile: "Crying? You have to cry too!"

As soon as John Lawrence heard this, even though the tears had burst,

The rhythm of sobbing started to run like a tractor.

But still held back the crying and held back the tears.

He knew that surrendering on the current conditions was the best choice, and stubborn resistance would only make his surrender conditions worse.

Seeing that he didn't dare to say anything anymore, Charlie stopped paying attention to him.

Instead, he cleared his throat and said in a cold voice: "Now I'm going to announce something to you."

"From now on, I'll be the one to talk about things. Everyone must obey them unconditionally 24 hours a day."

"You must not disobey my orders, otherwise, I cannot guarantee that your fate will be better than any of them today."

And what John Lawrence learned just now, how can any of the people dare to say no, they all nodded like an oil extraction machine running at 20 times the speed.

Seeing that these people were already in obvious awe, Charlie was quite satisfied, then he cleared his throat and said coldly:

"Everyone listen to my command and stand at attention!"

Upon hearing this, everyone tried their best to stand upright, even Dean stumbled up and stood at the end of the queue.

The boy with a broken leg struggled to get up, but as soon as he stood up, he fell to the ground again due to pain.

Charlie glanced at him and said calmly: "You don't have to queue up."

The man was nervous and sweating profusely. When he heard this, he breathed a sigh of relief and said gratefully: "Thank you, sir!"

Charlie ignoring him, continued to shout to the others: "Everyone, turn right!"

Everyone quickly followed suit, but at this time, a boy turned ninety degrees in the opposite direction.

Charlie had some impressions of this kid. After he came in, he was cheering and jumping. He should be one of Dean's minions.

So, Charlie immediately pointed at him and asked: "What's the matter with you? Are you deliberately going against me?"

The man was so frightened that he shook his head desperately and said with a sad face:

"I'm sorry, sir... I... I have been a bit indiscriminate since I was a child... .."

"You don't distinguish between left and right?" Charlie smiled slightly: "It's okay, I can help you."

After saying that, he grabbed his right hand, and with a little force of his thumb. The right wrist is completely broken!

The man cried out in pain, but Charlie said to him with an indifferent expression:

"Remember, this is the fcking right! I believe you will never forget in this life."

Everyone was so scared that their scalps were numb. Then heard Charlie shouting again: "Turn left!"

Everyone quickly turned back, for fear of making a mistake.

The guy who had just broken his right wrist was able to distinguish left and right this time and did not make any mistakes again.

Charlie nodded with satisfaction, pointed to the man on the far left, and said:

"Come on, starting with you, introduce yourself: what is your name, where are you from, what crime have you committed, how long have you been here, How long is the sentence left?"

The man said quickly: "Sir... I... My name is Ruan Ming, a Vietnamese. I have been here for robbery for one year, and I have six years left..."

Charlie nodded: "Okay, next!"

"Sir... My name is Hank, an American. I have been here for half a year for fraud, and I have three years left in prison..."

One by one, everyone began to introduce themselves.

Soon, it was the turn of the brown-skinned man to introduce himself.

He said with an attentive look: "Hello, sir. My name is Haji. I am an Indian-American. I have been here for two and a half years because of rape."

"I have another twelve years and half sentence..."

Haji's face suddenly changed and he blurted out: "Sir... why do you want to slap me... "

Charlie said coldly: "All sexual criminals must be beaten."

After that, he looked at the two people and shouted angrily: "Why don't you take action?"

"If you don't take action, I will let the people around you two, I'll give you a hundred slaps each!"

"If you don't slap hard enough, I'll let someone else slap you both a hundred times."

When the two heard this, they couldn't care less about their usual friendship with Haji.

Now is the time when disaster strikes and everyone flies away.

No one dares to offend Charlie, the evil star, so no matter what he orders, they have no reason to not follow it in order to protect themselves.

As a result, the two men exchanged glances and slapped Haji ten times on the face.

Haji's cheeks were soon swollen from being slapped, and his whole face was swollen into a pig's head.

His tears kept falling on the ground, and he felt a million grievances and anger in his heart, but he didn't dare to show it at the moment.

Seeing Haji being beaten into a pig's head, the most nervous person was John Lawrence.

He knew that if Haji was going to be beaten, he would definitely not be able to escape.

Soon, it was John Lawrence's turn to introduce himself. He said with great fear: "Sir... I... my name is John... John Lawrence..."

"I... I... am here... because of s3xual assault and r@pe, sentenced to life imprisonment...without parole..."

As soon as John Lawrence finished speaking, a young man next to him blurted out and asked: "Sir, how many slaps should I slap him?"

Charlie waved his hand. : "One hundred."

After saying that, he added: "One hundred per day!"

"Okay!" The man raised his hand and drew it towards Lawrence without thinking. The man fired his bow left and right together.

Before the hundred slaps were finished, the two of them were already too tired to lift their arms, and Lawrence was even worse. His face was completely swollen.

If one didn't look carefully, it looked like a dead body that had been soaked in water for half a month and is now floating on the surface.

By the time the slaps were over, Lawrence had completely fallen into a coma.

One of the people responsible for the slaps respectfully said to Charlie:

"Sir, a hundred slaps have been done. What should I do if this old guy is unconscious now?"

Charlie waved his hand: "Throw him into the bathroom and leave him alone."

"Yes! Sir!" The man shouted, and together with his partner, he carried the unconscious Lawrence into the bathroom.

The self-introduction continues.

Most of the remaining people were arrested for murder and injury, and almost all of them were gangs in New York. Some of the members are even Dean's minions.

After these people finished introducing themselves, Charlie looked at the kid whose leg was kicked off and said, "Come on, tell me."

The man said tremblingly: "My... my name is Mark... Mark ·Bob... been in prison for two years for second-degree murder...forty years in prison, with a minimum sentence of twenty years..."

Marven looked at Dean again and said calmly: "Come on, boss, it's your turn."

Dean said in panic: "Sir... you... you are the boss..."

Charlie smiled and said: "I'm sorry, I accidentally took your position."

Dean quickly said: "Sir, please don't say that, in front of you, I can only be a minion who is behind the wheel..."

Charlie chuckled lightly and said, "Okay, introduce yourself."

Dean said humbly: "Boss, my name is Dean, an American, was imprisoned for drug trafficking and murder and was sentenced to life imprisonment."

Charlie nodded and said loudly: "Now that everyone has finished introducing themselves, let me talk about it now,"

"Starting today listen carefully to the rules of this cell. If anyone breaks my rules, I will not forgive!"

Upon hearing this, everyone quickly cheered up and their eyes lit up. He looked at Charlie without blinking, for fear of missing the important thing he wanted to say.

Charlie stretched out a finger at this moment and said:

"First, from now on, no one is allowed to fight or have s3x in this cell without my permission, otherwise I will break his hands and feet."

Everyone said in unison: "I understand!"

Charlie stretched out a finger again and said coldly: "Secondly, from now on, you people are strictly prohibited from talking to others outside this cell."

"Anything related to me, otherwise I will make his life worse than death, do you understand?"

Everyone quickly said: "I understand!"

Charlie nodded, stretched out three fingers, and continued: "Third, Starting from today,"

"All of you must brush your teeth and take a shower every morning and evening, and all sheets and bedding must be kept clean, fresh, and smell-free!"

"In addition, everyone will take turns mopping the floor and cleaning the toilet once a day!"

"Listen, what I'm saying is Everyone must mop the floor and clean the toilet once a day!"

"There are fifteen of you, that is, cleaning fifteen times a day. Excluding eating and relaxing time, the remaining time is divided equally among fifteen."

"When working, other people are responsible for supervising."

"If they find that the cleaning is not done properly, each person will give the cleaner two slaps and urge him to make corrections."

"If I discover the problem, everyone will strip and sleep at night in the toilet!"

"One more thing, if I find out that someone has a peculiar smell on their body or bedding,"

"This person will be kept in the toilet by me for the next three days except for eating and relaxing time."

"When others go to the toilet, he has to stay in he also has to stay in there, until he can clean himself up!"

## Chapter 5835

If Charlie's orders were placed in the past, these people would definitely think it was a fantasy.

However, after a few people experienced Charlie's methods and most people witnessed his cruelty,

These people felt in their hearts that Charlie's orders were not too much.

Therefore, each of them nodded as if they were talking,

Fearing that Charlie would take advantage of them if they expressed their opinions too late.

Seeing them all nodding in agreement, Charlie smiled slightly and said:

"Since you all have no objections, we will implement it from now on."

"This cell is dirty and smelly right now, so all of you will do a general cleaning first."

"Be sure that the cleaning must be spotless, otherwise, all of you will be punished together."

They did not dare to say more and quickly started an unprecedented cleaning.

In order to satisfy Charlie as soon as possible, everyone who could still move immediately participated.

They threw all the bedding that had not been changed for a long time into the bathroom,

Leaving a few people to be responsible for washing, while the rest began to clean everywhere.

They knew that if Charlie was not satisfied with hygiene in the slightest,

They would not be able to avoid a physical meal.

Moreover, the pain Charlie gave them was really painful!

Even Dean dragged his body and wiped Charlie's bed repeatedly with a towel,

Especially the footprints he had stepped on before and no traces were left after he wiped them carefully.

At this time, Charlie looked at the miserable Dean and asked:

"Dean, I have a question for you. You must answer it truthfully."

"If you dare to play tricks on me, I will make you a hundred times more miserable than you are now. Do you understand?"

Dean trembled and said quickly: "Sir, ask me, as long as I know, I will not hide anything!"

Charlie nodded and asked: "Have you ever heard of a Chinese prisoner named Peter Zhou here in prison?"

"Peter Zhou?" Dean shook his head and said, "I've never heard of this man."

Charlie asked back, "Think about it carefully."

"Think about it, you can't recall any memory of this name in your mind?"

Dean said with a look of fear: "Sir, I really didn't lie. I have never heard of the name you mentioned. ..."

Charlie could see that Dean was not lying, and he had no extravagant hope of getting news about Peter Zhou from Dean.

After all, he was the one targeted by the core members of the Routhschild family.

Even if he was sent to this prison, it would definitely not be known to everyone.

Then, Charlie remembered the informant Lucas the police had mentioned to him,

So he asked: "Have you ever heard of a Brazilian named Lucas?"

Dean nodded quickly and said, "Lu Cass, I know, that kid is very smart,"

"And he has good news in all directions in Brooklyn Prison."

"He has a nickname, Brooklyn Prison Know-It-All. He is in Cell No. 15, not far from here."

Charlie said again: "Now tell me about the situation of the prisoners in Brooklyn Prison, especially the situation of the gangs inside."

Dean thought for a while and said: "Sir, there are two wards in the Prison."

"The one we are in now is the first prison district."

"Each prison district has a boss. This boss is the person who can truly intimidate the entire prison district."

After saying that, Dean added: "In the first prison district where we are, the boss is the famous Mexican drug lord Gustavo a very powerful person."

"It is said that before he was arrested by the police, he was worth more than 10 billion US dollars."

"However, he was sentenced to life imprisonment without the possibility of parole."

"His family currently inherits him in the drug sales empire,"

"After he was imprisoned, a group of diehard loyalists were sent to the prison one after another."

"These people protected him in prison and helped him gain the status of the boss of the prison area."

"With this gang's presence,"

"The first prison district has become the prison district with the highest death rate in the United States."

Charlie continued to ask him: "What about the second prison area?"

Dean said: "The boss of the Second Ward is the boss of the New York gang from ten years ago,"

"His name is Joseph Norris."

"He was very prosperous in New York at the time and had many minions."

"The Italians only rose to prominence after he was imprisoned."

"If he is outside, those mafias would tighten their but.ts even if they fa.rt in New York."

Charlie nodded and asked: "How long until dinner time?"

Dean looked up at the electronic clock and said quickly:

"There are still forty minutes."

"Okay." Charlie said calmly: "When it is time for a meal in a restaurant, introduce Lucas to me."

## Chapter 5836

Dean said respectfully: "Okay sir, I will introduce him to you."

Charlie smiled and suddenly asked him:

"By the way, Dean, shouldn't you take the opportunity to have a meal to complain to the prison warden?"

Dean waved his hands quickly: "No, no, sir, please rest assured,"

"I will never complain to the warden."

"There is an unwritten rule in this prison."

"According to the regulations, internal problems must be solved internally without seeking the help of prison guards."

"Once a person asks the prison guards for help,"

"He has broken the rules and will be reduced to the lowest level in this prison,"

"And everyone will bully him..."

Dean wasn't lying.

In this prison, there have been rules for a long time.

After all, the people who can get in here are either gang members, serious criminals, or drug lords.

These people all have two characteristics in common.

The first characteristic is that they are ruthless and merciless.

The second characteristic is that they hate people reporting to the police.

So once someone is bullied in this prison and turns around

And file a complaint with the prison guard, he will be hated by everyone in this prison.

And the people who made the rules in the first place, in order to completely prevent anyone from snitching to the prison guards behind their backs,

So they have always used lynchings against whistleblowers to maintain the deterrent effect of this rule.

Over the years, many people have been killed in this prison for informing.

Their death methods were all bizarre.

Some of them hanged themselves because they were very upset about their whistle-blowing behavior.

Some people died by accidentally "falling" while walking,

Some people died by "choking" on their toothbrushes while brushing their teeth,

And some even died by "suffocating" because they couldn't poop.

After many people died, internal whistleblowing was almost completely eliminated in this prison,

And Dean was considered an old face here, and he knew the rules here very well.

In his opinion, although he was very angry when he was beaten,

Tortured and humiliated by Charlie today,

After all, he survived for the time being.

As long as he still had a way to survive, he must not report it,

Because that would be tantamount to pushing oneself to a dead end.

After hearing what he said, Charlie roughly understood the survival rules of this prison,

So he asked him again: "If a serious violent conflict occurs here,"

"Will the prison guards intervene?"

Dean said truthfully: "In this place, as long as it is a violent conflict among the prisoners themselves,"

'They will never interfere."

"They usually let the prisoners resolve it themselves."

"As long as no lives are lost, they will never show up."

After that, Dean added: "Because there is no outdoor playground in this prison,"

"So the exercise here is connected with the meal time."

"Usually after lunch, the prison guards will send everyone back to the prison area,"

"And then let everyone move freely in the area for an hour, that is,"

"The doors of all cells are open, and prisoners can move around freely in the prison area."

"If there are friends or enemies in other cells,"

"They can go to them at this time after meal,"

"The prison guards will leave all prisoners in the dining room,"

"And there will be activities in the fitness area for an hour,"

"And everyone will be sent back to the cells after an hour."

"During this hour, the prisoners in the two cells will be together."

"If there are friends or enemies in other cells, they can also meet at this time;"

"During the two breaks every day, the prison guards will evacuate the release area,"

"Leaving the prisoners free to move around."

"If there is a violent conflict between prisoners, the guards will not intervene."

Charlie nodded and said: "As you say, wait after dinner, will the two prison areas have free activities together?"

"Yes." Dean quickly said: "Who is Peter Zhou you are looking for?"

"If he is in this prison and has not been in solitary confinement,"

"Or if he is injured and sent for treatment, you can see him while eating!"

## Chapter 5837

In order to satisfy Charlie as soon as possible,

The fifteen prisoners started cleaning everything that could still be moved as soon as possible.

They threw all the bedding that had not been changed for a long time into the bathroom,

Leaving a few people to be responsible for cleaning,

And the rest at once began to clean up everywhere.

As for the injured ones, as long as they could still move, they tried their best to participate.

The ones with broken legs sat on the ground and wiped the floors and half of the wall.

Thanks to the large number of people and the small area,

It didn't take long for the inmates to clean the room and make it spotless.

None of the fifteen prisoners expected that this cell would one day be cleaner than a five-star hotel.

They knew that if Charlie was not satisfied with hygiene in the slightest,

They would not be able to avoid a physical meal.

Moreover, the pain Charlie gave them was really unbearable!

The floor that used to stick to their shoes when they walked on it is now as shiny as new,

And you even need to be careful to avoid falling.

However, the body odor and cigarette odor in the room have been there for a long time,

And it will be difficult to remove it after a while.

So Charlie temporarily added another rule:

No one was allowed to smoke in the cell or bathroom,

Otherwise, he would be slapped a hundred times.

Although these prisoners were all severely addicted to smoking,

They did not dare to say a word of objection at this time.

At half past five in the afternoon, it's dinner time.

The prison guard came to count the number of people.

When he saw the injured Dean, he was particularly shocked.

He was about to ask what happened.

Then he saw several other prisoners with severed arms and legs, and he was even more shocked.

Looking at the newly arrived Charlie, he looked calm and content,

With no trace of any scars on his face, he guessed that all of this was done by Charlie.

However, he did not ask about this matter.

He knew the rules of the Prison better than the prisoners.

The prisoners here did not bother the guards unless necessary,

And the guards here did not interfere with the prisoners' internal affairs unless necessary.

The prison implements three purposes from top to bottom:

First, don't resist;

Second, don't kill anyone;

Third, don't escape.

In other words, as long as the prisoners did not attack the prison guards,

Were still in prison and were not dead, everything else had nothing to do with them.

As for the conflicts and struggles between the prison districts,

Between the cells, or within the cells, they have always turned a blind eye.

At present, none of the injured people have asked for medical treatment,

Which means that they themselves do not want the prison to intervene,

So the prison guards don't even bother to ask.

They just want to count the number of prisoners and let the prisoners go there in a queue.

However, when he saw that John Lawrence's face had been swollen into a pig's head,

He couldn't help but ask in surprise: "Father, what's wrong with you?"

John shivered in fright when he heard the word "father".

He quickly said, "I'm not a priest! I no longer have a priesthood title!"

In fact, John had enjoyed being called a priest by prisoners.

After all, although many prisoners are guilty of crimes,

They still have religious beliefs in their hearts.

If they can meet a priest who is also an inmate in prison,

Even if they know that this guy has a disgraceful past,

Everyone will give him a little less favor.

But John knew that it was because he was a priest in the past that made Charlie feel particularly unhappy with him.

From now on, he would be slapped a hundred times a day,

And just thinking about it would make him feel hopeless.

So, he subconsciously asked the prison guard in a low voice:

"Can you help me change a cell? I'm not used to this cell..."

As soon as John said these words,

Except for Charlie, the other prisoners all looked at him in surprise.

The rules of the Brooklyn Prison are that internal affairs are handled internally.

Anyone who seeks help from the prison guards is breaking the rules of the entire prison.

Therefore, they all couldn't figure out why John suddenly asked the prison guards for help.

Could it be that asking the prison guards would free him from Charlie's threat?

The prison guard was also a little surprised and said:

"Father, changing cells is very simple, but prisoners who ask the guards to change cells will not be welcomed in other cells."

"This has happened before. Prisoners asked to change cells,"

"But the result was that they were not allowed to change."

"Which cell is willing to take him? After being changed and beaten,"

"He can only go back to the original cell, so I suggest you not change."

John suddenly burst into tears, and he also knew, according to the rules of the prison,

The reason why he impulsively proposed to change cells was because he was really afraid of Charlie.

However, after thinking about it carefully, what the prison guard said was reasonable.

Prisoners in this prison did not like people who broke the rules,

So they could change cells themselves must be the unpopular ones.

Thinking of this, he could only say with tears:

"I was joking with you just now. I won't change even if I'm beaten to death..."

The prison guard patted his shoulder, and then said to everyone:

"Everyone, Leave the cell and go to the cafeteria."

With the order, everyone lined up out of the cell and headed to the cafeteria with the prisoners in other cells.

Along the way, Charlie kept paying attention to other prisoners around him,

He hoped to see Peter Zhou here, but he never found him.

Along the way, he saw many prisoners who also went to the restaurant.

They had different skin colors and and age gap was also very large,

But it can be seen that in the Prison, gang members with tattoos and strong muscles account for about half.

Moreover, Charlie also discovered that many prisoners had flesh wounds on their faces and bodies,

And some were wearing bandages and using crutches.

It looked like they had been beaten.

No wonder the prison guard didn't care when he saw several people in this cell being injured.

Mind you, the cafeteria in Brooklyn Prison is very large and can accommodate one to two thousand prisoners eating here at the same time.

## Chapter 5838

After the prison guards brought everyone into the restaurant,

They immediately retreated outside the iron gate, and then left the place to the prisoners to govern themselves.

The person who eats is the prisoner, and the person who is responsible for bringing meals to all the prisoners is also the prisoner.

While waiting in line for food, Dean told Charlie:

"Sir, you can't sit casually when dining here. There are fixed users in almost every area."

"The seats by the window on the south side are almost occupied by two prison areas."

"The boss and the younger brothers around them are divided."

"We can only sit by the window on the north side."

"Although there is no sunlight there, the view is pretty good."

Charlie asked him: "Do you have a boss in Brooklyn Prison?"

Dean shook his head and replied: "One The boss of the district is Gustavo Sanchez."

"He doesn't look down on us little gangsters at all, and he doesn't allow us to get too close to the boss of the second district,"

"So we don't dare to go with other bosses."

"Otherwise, I will definitely hang out with the boss of District 2,"

"After all, he is originally from a New York gang and is our senior."

Charlie asked curiously: "Since Gustavo Sanchez looks down on you, why doesn't he let you work with other bosses?"

Dean said: "Gustavo Sanchez has too many enemies."

"It is said that when he was developing, at least thousands of people were killed directly and indirectly,"

"Many of whom were government officials there."

"There were countless people in Mexico alone who wanted to avenge him,"

"So he paid great attention to his role in terms of personal safety in the prison, anyone who forms a gang in the first area is a certain threat to him,"

"So once he finds that someone is forming a gang in the first area, especially if he joins forces with people in the second area, he will give a death notice."

"This guy has his own armed force in Mexico."

"If anyone provokes him, he will kill his whole family."

"We can't afford to provoke him."

Charlie nodded. At this time, Dean looked at the entrance to Area 1.

At the place, he whispered to Charlie: "Sanchez is here!"

Charlie followed his gaze and saw a few brown-skinned gangsters striding at the front,

Roughly pushing everyone aside on both sides and then,

A short and fat middle-aged man, about 1.65 meters tall, walked out expressionlessly.

Behind him, there were several brown-skinned bodyguards.

Dean said to Charlie: "The people around Sanchez are all masters he carefully selected from his own armed forces to protect him."

Charlie didn't take Sanchez seriously. He thought of the criminal group in Mexico.

To sum up, there is no essential difference from criminal groups around the world.

It is just that they are more brutal and have no bottom line than most criminal groups.

Back in Mexico, Charlie once eradicated an entire criminal group.

Although these lawless militants were brutal in their methods, their combat effectiveness was not very strong.

They just had an overwhelming advantage over ordinary civilians.

Charlie came to Brooklyn Prison this time not to punish evil and promote virtue.

He just wanted to find Peter in his father's old photo.

As for who is the boss of this prison, he doesn't care.

So, he asked Dean: "Is the know-it-all Lucas here?"

Dean searched around for a long time, pointed to a thin young man in the crowd not far away, and said:

"That is Lucas."

At this time, Lucas, who had just walked into the restaurant, was queuing up behind Charlie to get his meal while whispering to the prisoners next to him.

Charlie took note of Lucas' appearance and prepared to find an opportunity to chat with him later.

At this time, Sanchez and his group of more than a dozen people had already sat down by the largest window on the south side.

Sanchez himself sat at a six-person dining table by the window,

And the others sat in a semicircle at the empty table next to him. sit down.

When Charlie was wondering why no one in this group went to get food,

Several prison guards and a man wearing chef's clothes walked in pushing a dining cart.

Although the top of the dining cart was covered with a stainless steel cover,

There was a strong aroma inside. It still made many prisoners secretly swallow their saliva.

The dining car was pushed directly to Sanchez's side.

His men immediately stepped forward to open the lid and take a look.

There were many exquisite meals inside, including bread, salads, cold-cut Spanish ham, French escargot soup, and more...

What's more, there is also a medium-rare top steak and a bottle of Romanée-Conti red wine.

Charlie was surprised when he saw it. He didn't expect that the prison of the American Empire would be so blatant in its privileges. Sanchez's dinner was simply a French meal with three Michelin stars.

At this time, Sanchez's men began to bring out the meals and place them in front of Sanchez, and a younger brother skillfully opened them.

For Romanée-Conti's red wine, he took out a decanter and a red wine glass from the second floor of the dining car and poured the red wine into them.

Seeing Dean drooling while looking at the other person's meal, Charlie couldn't help but ask him:

"Has this Sanchez always been so high-profile in prison?"

"Yes..." The wound in Dean's mouth was stung by saliva, and he endured the pain and said to Charlie:

"Since the day Sanchez came in, he has been in this state, and he brought the chef from Mexico.

It is said that part of the prison kitchen is specially used by his chef.

He has three meals a day. His chef is responsible for all the meals."

As he spoke, Dean said with an envious look: "Brooklyn Prison is a federal prison."

"Federal prisons do not have the opportunity for conjugal visits, but Sanchez has the privilege."

"He has three hours of visits three times a week."

"During the couple's meeting time, it is said that his subordinates outside will send him some beauties of different styles every time for him to enjoy..."

Charlie saw his envious expression, and asked curiously: "Why are you still so envious? Aren't you gay?"

Dean said with a sad face: "Sir... whenever I have a chance to meet a woman, I will not be gay..."

"I am forced to have no choice but if someone gives me three of them every week here, even if you beat me to death, I won't do anything gay..."

Charlie smiled slightly and said nothing more.

He had been paying attention to his surroundings.

Almost everyone from the first, and second wards was here, but he still didn't see Peter Zhou.

After grabbing a meal, he did not go to a fixed area with Dean to dine.

Instead, he walked near the queue at the back and said to Lucas:

"Lucas, right? I am Andrew's friend. He Let me come in to find you and say that you can take care of me if anything happens."

As soon as Lucas heard Andrew's name, he quickly pointed to a table in the corner and said to Charlie:

"Brother, wait for me at that table."

Charlie nodded and came to the corner with the dinner plate.

In Brooklyn Prison, all prisoners like to join in the fun,

And few like to sit in the corner, so there are no other prisoners around Charlie.

A few minutes later, Lucas came over with a dinner plate,

Sat down opposite Charlie, and asked him in a low voice: "How can I help you?"

While eating, Charlie lowered his voice and said,

"I heard It is said that a Chinese American named Peter Zhou was imprisoned here a few months ago."

"Have you received any news?"

"Peter Zhou?" Lucas thought for a moment, shook his head and said,

"I have never heard of this person. Are you sure he is being held here?"

Charlie nodded: "Sure, the source of the information is very reliable, there should be nothing wrong."

"Strange..." Lucas said seriously: "You are talking about Peter Zhou,"

"I've really never heard of him, and I have a list of new prisoners there,"

"Which I compile and update every day, but I haven't seen this name."

Charlie asked him: "Will he be held in solitary confinement here?"

"A certain location in the prison?"

Lucas thought for a while and said seriously: "I can't be sure about this."

"Since you were introduced by Angelou, I can't hide anything from you."

"To tell you the truth, this prison is a federal prison on the surface,"

"The actual controller is the Rothschild family."

As he spoke, he looked at Sanchez who was cutting steak and drinking red wine leisurely in the distance, and said to Charlie:

"You Look at that man, the drug lord Gustavo Sánchez,"

"He can eat steak and drink red wine here not only because he is rich and powerful,"

"But also because he cooperates with the Rothschild family!"

## Chapter 5839

Charlie was somewhat shocked to hear that the Routhschild family would actually cooperate with a drug lord like Gustavo Sanchez.

In his opinion, the Routhschild family is already the most powerful family in the world.

With hundreds of years of history,

They must have grown up to this day a big family that cherishes feathers very much will definitely not be associated with a criminal group that commits murder, arson, and drug trafficking.

Therefore, the family cooperated with Gustavo and even imprisoned him in a prison for home service.

This was indeed somewhat unreasonable in Charlie's opinion.

Seeing that Charlie was a little confused, Lucas lowered his voice and said,

"The government has been trying to extradite Gustavo to the country for trial."

"Gustavo had also been fighting overtly and covertly with the Mexican government, hoping not to be extradited."

"Originally, Gustavo and his sons were ready to make some big noise in Mexico to obstruct them as soon as the Mexican government decided to extradite them."

"But in the end, it was the Routhschild family that mediated and Gustavo finally agreed to be extradited to the United States for trial,"

"But the prerequisite was that the United States cannot sentence him to death,"

"And he must serve his sentence in a prison controlled by the Routhschild family."

After speaking, Lucas added: "Don't look at the great privileges he is enjoying here."

"In fact, this prison is basically useless to him. He can get out at any time as long as he wants."

"My informant in the laundry room once told me that several times someone took advantage of the night delivery opportunity to send in a man with a body shape and dress similar to him,"

"And then sent him out quietly the next night. I also heard that Gustavo suddenly felt unwell several times at night and went to the infirmary."

"He stayed there all night. I speculated that Gustavo often ran away at night,"

"And the person who is quietly sent in is just to lie in the infirmary for him all night."

Charlie smiled slightly: "I didn't expect the famous Routhschild would go to great lengths for a drug dealer."

As he spoke, he shrugged and added, "But it's not surprising that they have been inseparable from the opium trade since the 19th century,"

"And has even been involved in China's opium trade."

"They gained huge benefits in the war, and maybe they are still doing the same thing now."

Lucas shook his head and said: "The family really doesn't do business in this area anymore."

"The reason why they cooperate with Gustavo is mainly because of the actual influence of his criminal group in Mexico;"

"You know, Mexico is right under the nose of the United States, with nearly two thousand miles of national border with the United States."

"There are too many articles that can be done here, this family has a deep presence there,"

"So deep that it is inseparable from the Mexican government and the development trend of the entire country;"

"As for Gustavo's family, to put it bluntly, it is a bomb they have planted in Mexico. It can play a huge role at any time."

"Maybe one day a Mexican executive or even a congressman is killed by a drug cartel."

"On the surface, it is thought that he has angered the drug cartel, but in fact, it may just be because he promoted the drug cartel in Mexico."

"Certain policies that will hinder the interests of the Routhschild family."

As he spoke, Lucas smiled and added: "In short, it's all politics."

"Ordinary people like us can't understand it."

"I don't understand what I just said."

"I just talked casually and do not bear any legal responsibility."

Charlie did not expect that Lucas seemed to be glib,

But his depth of understanding of the problem was unusual, so he asked him curiously:

"Did you sum up all this yourself, or... did you listen to what others said?"

Lucas laughed at himself: "What can I summarize?"

"I know this because there was a prisoner who worked in finance on Wall Street before."

"He knew a lot about the Routhschild family, so he told me some stuff."

After that, Lucas added: "That person also told me that the main reason why the Routhschild family secretly controls this humble Brooklyn prison is because it is close to Wall Street."

"It's too close. For them, after taking control of this place, they can turn it into their own asylum center."

"Those drug lords, gangs, and financial criminals extradited by the United States will be in trouble as long as they end up in Brooklyn Prison."

"The Routhschild family must be behind the scenes;"

"As for why Brooklyn Prison wants prisoner autonomy, it's because the Routhschild family wants to make the place as chaotic as possible."

"It's best if prisoners are beaten every two days."

"Prisoners are seriously injured and die every now and then."

"As long as they created such an impression to the outside world, they could send the people they wanted to get rid of here,"

"And their death would not attract the attention of the outside world."

"After all, it is common for people to die in Brooklyn Prison."

Just as he was talking, at the entrance of the second prison area,

A group of muscular men with tattoos on their arms, necks, and even faces strode out.

Several muscular men surrounded a strong man with some gray hair, who looked to be about 20 years old.

He was in his forties or fifties, but he kept working out, so he kept a very strong figure.

Lucas said to Charlie: "That guy with gray hair is the boss of the second ward, Joseph Norris.

Charlie asked him: "Does this person also cooperate with the Routhschild family?"

Lucas shook his head: "He didn't. He has been in this prison for many years."

"Before the Routhschild family took control of this prison, he had already become the boss here."

"Later, after taking over this place, the prison was transformed into two wards,"

"Norris was placed in the second ward, and the first ward was given to Gustavo."

As he said, Lucas added: "According to my speculation, the Routhschild family just wants to use Joseph to check Gustavo."

"If Gustavo is allowed to dominate here, the Routhschild family will not do so."

"They can handle him directly. In that case, he will live too comfortably."

"Gustavo will have to be a little scrupulous about leaving Joseph here."

"After all, although Gustavo is strong, but the strength is in Mexico."

"Joseph although his strength is not as good as Gustavo's, he responds to everything here."

"If one day he really wants to break up with Gustavo,"

"As long as he shouts, many prisoners in the first area will stand by him,"

"Including that Dean who was sitting next to you just now."

## Chapter 5840

Charlie nodded lightly and covered Gustavo, but he couldn't let Gustavo live too comfortably.

He also had a whip to gesticulate with him from time to time.

It seems that the Routhschild family has a strong interest in Gustavo.

And whoever it was he was very shrewd in what he did.

At this time, as soon as Joseph came in, he took his younger brother and walked towards another area near the window on the south side.

During this period, many gang members saw him and they greeted him very respectfully,

And some of the more senior ones even shook hands and high-fived him.

When Joseph passed by Gustavo and his men, he suddenly stopped,

Looked at Gustavo's dining table, frowned, and asked:

"Gustavo, does Romanee-Conti taste good?"

Gustavo looked up at Joseph, chuckled, and said, "What? "

"Isn't there any store selling Romanee-Conti in New York?"

"This kind of wine is not expensive, it only costs 50,000 dollars."

"You have never drank it, right?"

Joseph was not angry, but walked directly towards him.

Seeing this, Gustavo's men immediately stood up and stood in front of Joseph.

One of them said coldly: "Don't come any closer!"

Joseph looked at him and said sarcastically:

"Brother, this is not Mexico, this is New York,"

"How dare you be so fcking arrogant in New York?"

"Do you really think that the drug traffickers can run rampant all over the world?"

That man was a desperate man. Even though he was asked to kill more than a dozen people at once,

He never blinked an eye. Now that he was ridiculed, he was naturally filled with anger.

He almost went into a rage. He pointed at Joseph and said,

"I'm going to kill you!"

Joseph said disdainfully: "I know you have killed people, and many of them,"

"But it's useless. Boy, I told you, this is New York,"

"Not a place for you to be arrogant!"

"No matter how ruthless you are, you can only be arrogant in Mexico."

"Here, don't you still have to be Gustavo's dog in prison?"

The man gritted his teeth and said,

"If you humiliate me, aren't you afraid of dying in my hands one day?"

Joseph said disdainfully: "Dmn it! Believe it or not,"

"As long as I say a word, starting tonight, all the gangsters in New York will hunt down your drug dealers on the streets?"

"Your boss may have a lot of people, can he bring thousands of people to New York?"

The man couldn't bear it anymore, and his clenched fist was about to hit Joseph immediately.

At this time, Gustavo suddenly shouted: "Alberto, shut your mouth!"

Alberto had no choice but to hold back the anger in his heart.

When Joseph saw that he was no longer talking, he sneered disdainfully,

Walked up to Gustavo, picked up his bottle of Romanee-Conti,

Which was still half full, and said to Gustavo:

"I'll take the wine to taste."

"Once you have a taste, remember to save a bottle for me next time you have such a good thing."

Gustavo was not angry and smiled:

"My fault, I will prepare a few bottles for you next time."

After that, he asked Joseph: "Do you need a decanter and a wine glass?"

Joseph took a few sips directly from the bottle,

Then burped and said with a smile:

"What kind of wine glass should I use? That's not my style."

After that, he actually reached out and picked up the remaining half of the top steak from Gustavo's steak plate,

Put it into his mouth in an exaggerated manner and took a big bite.

While chewing, he cursed and said:

"Fck, why don't we have this kind of steak to eat?"

"Next time this happens again, I think we can hold a riot in the prison to protest!"

Gustavo laughed and said: "Joseph, what do you think?"

"Just tell me when you want to eat steak,"

"And I will arrange it for you. Why do you need to make such a big move?"

Joseph nodded, pointed at Gustavo, and said, "It's better that you take the next step."

After that, he waved his hand and said lazily:

"Let's go, don't forget what you said, prepare a few bottles of this good wine for me,"

"I will need it tomorrow."

Gustavo watched Joseph walk away and sat down in another area, his expression gradually fell into a haze.

Alberto asked him in a low voice just now:

"Boss, do you want me to kill that idiot?"

"As long as you say a word, I will directly insert the knife into his brain and stir it up a few times!"

Gustavo asked back: "Haven't you seen his intention?"

Alberto shook his head: "Isn't he just here to cause trouble?"

Gustavo sneered: "He came to trouble me just to provoke disputes and trigger a fight between the two sides."

Alberto said immediately: "Boss, we are not afraid of them in a fight!"

"I have killed more people than the women he has played with!"

Gustavo said coldly: "Do you really think this is Mexico?"

"You dare to kill people here, they will put you in a single cell where you can't see your fingers and keep you there until you die!"

After that, Gustavo added: "Also, although you are all well-trained killers,"

"In a place like this, there is no such thing as weapons at your disposal and no terrain advantage to hide yourself,"

"Most of your skills will not be used, and we do not have the advantage in numbers."

"By then, these people will be able to kill you alive by just throwing a bench."

"If you die, I will have no protection here."

"At that time, I will ask the Routhschild family to arrange for another group of people to come in to protect me."

"But once more people come, the Routhschild family will support a new Joseph to consume me..."

# Chapter 5841

At this point, Gustavo added: "Actually, that family's idea is very simple,"

"That is, not to let me live a happy life here."

"They must have known that we have used our own methods to arrange new manpower in the Brooklyn Prison,"

"So they must also want us to use up some time now."

"You also heard what Joseph said just now, that there is going to be a riot."

"I think he is not just talking about it, maybe he is planning this."

"If you go to fight Joseph at this time, you will just fall into his trap."

Alberto asked: "Boss, are you just putting up with them like this?"

Gustavo nodded, and said helplessly: "I can only endure it now."

"I have asked people to investigate the background of Joseph."

"All his family members are dead and he is the only one left."

"There is nothing outside that can control him, and the people around him are also all hardcore gang members,"

"And their families are running away without any worries."

"It really drove him to panic, but we were passive!"

"He is not afraid of death, and I still want to find a chance to leave the United States alive!"

At this time, Joseph ate the steak while walking towards his specific dining area.

Then he took a few sips of red wine from the bottle and sat down in his exclusive seat.

The boys around him have already brought lunch.

Although each portion is large, it is essentially the same thing as what other prisoners eat.

Joseph looked at the prisoner in front of him and cursed:

"Damn, I just finished half a piece of such a delicious steak."

"Looking at these now, it looks like fcking sh!t."

The other boys looked depressed.

The boss said it was like sh!t, should they eat it or not?

At this time, Joseph's most trusted younger brother asked him in a low voice:

"Boss, how can that drug lord be so arrogant? He's not fooled at all!"

Joseph said coldly: "Gustavo is smarter than a ghost."

"I think he has guessed my purpose a long time ago."

The younger brother hurriedly asked: "What should we do?"

Joseph stretched and said: "If the fish doesn't take the bait, then we have to find another way!"

Charlie, who was asking Lucas about the prison situation, heard all the conversations between the bosses of the first and second prison districts.

He really didn't expect that a prison in downtown New York that didn't even have an open-air playground would have such an undercurrent surging.

Looking at this trend, Joseph, the boss of the Second Ward, is looking for a suitable opportunity to give the boss of the First Ward, drug lord Gustavo, a serious blow.

Although Gustavo is pampered in this prison and leads a luxurious life beyond the reach of other prisoners, he also has his worries.

Although his family is powerful, unfortunately, those murderous drug dealers have no way to enter the United States, let alone the Brooklyn Prison to help him.

His own life and safety, as well as the future of the entire family, are still in the hands of the government and the Routhschild family.

At this time, Lucas said to Charlie:

"Joseph's behavior today is not normal. This guy may be brewing some conspiracy."

Charlie asked curiously: "How can you tell?"

Lucas explained: "Joseph doesn't usually deal with Gustavo very much."

"He is an old-school gang member who advocates fighting, head-on confrontation, and a bit of personal heroism;"

"But Gustavo is different. He is sinister and cunning, and there is no bottom line."

"He not only slaughters his competitors and police, but also civilians."

"Like a poisonous snake, Gustavo likes to use the most insidious means to attack the enemy in secret and give the enemy a fatal blow,"

"So Joseph usually keeps things to himself,"

"But now he takes the initiative to provoke others, and it is clear that he wants to stir up trouble."

Charlie nodded, but he did not expect that Lucas's analysis was basically consistent with Gustavo's.

It seems that Lucas is indeed aware of everything around him in this prison.

The most rare thing is that this person can use his brain and analyze the intention behind a person's behavior.

This is much better than the big guys around him.

At this time, Lucas saw that the iron doors leading to the dining hall from the two prison areas had been closed by the prison guards, so he asked Charlie:

"The prisoners are all here. By the way, isn't the Peter Zhou you are looking for here?"

Charlie shook his head. He had been paying attention to every prisoner who walked into the restaurant,

And he did not see Peter Zhou.

Lucas frowned and said: "If someone enters here, but is not within the two prison areas,"

"It is most likely hidden by the Routhschild family."

Charlie asked him: "If the Routhschild family wants to hide someone in this prison,"

"Where would they hide them?"

"I can't say that." Lucas said seriously: "The bottom floor and the top floor of this prison are the offices of the prison guards area,"

"In the middle is the prison area where prisoners are kept."

"I don't know much about the office area,"

"But it stands to reason that they are unlikely to hide people there."

After that, Lucas added: "But what is certain is that Routhschild family will never kill the person you are looking for,"

"Because if they want to kill someone in this prison, they will definitely let the person appear in the public view of the prison first,"

"And then use the prisoners inside to create chaos, let him die in prison instead of hiding him."

Charlie asked him: "If I want to find him and meet him, where do you think I should start?"

"This..."

Lucas hesitated for a moment and said seriously:

"The situation in this prison is very special. Although the entire prison is under the control of the Routhschild family,"

"Most of the staff here have no access to them. If you want the person they were looking for is hidden by them,"

"I estimate that among the guards in Brooklyn Prison, there are no more than five people who know about it."

"But we have no chance to contact these people at all,"

"Just like the warden here, We can see him less than three times in 365 days a year."

# Chapter 5842

Charlie felt a little worried for a while.

He originally thought that Peter Zhou should be detained in the prison area.

As long as he found Lucas, he would have a chance to get clues about him.

Unexpectedly, someone like Lucas, who was extremely well-informed, knew nothing about him.

And in such a huge prison, finding someone is not as easy as imagined.

In this case, if you can't find him in the prison area,

You can only use spiritual energy to check other areas.

Aura detection was Charlie's second choice if he couldn't find anyone in the prison area.

Spiritual energy is most suitable for finding limited enemies in a vast expanse of land,

And this whole prison, to put it bluntly, is a complex building where thousands of people live.

The density of people's survival is extremely high.

Once the spiritual energy is released, thousands of people can be detected immediately,

And it is necessary to eliminate them one by one from the thousands of people.

It is almost impossible for Peter Zhou to find out.

Because although the aura can help him detect the situation,

It does not allow him to truly see everything through the aura.

Everything can only be perceived by the aura.

However, fortunately, it is mealtime in the prison, and all the prisoners are already here.

I have paid attention to the prisoners here just now.

Since there is no Peter Zhou here, he can use the spiritual energy to check other areas and other people outside the restaurant. This should be a lot easier.

As soon as he thought about this, he quietly released his spiritual energy,

skipped the first and second prison areas, and began to explore the entire prison.

Charlie's spiritual energy skipped the prison area and wandered to the top floor first.

Here were all the prison staff. There were at least seventy or eighty people at the moment.

Moreover, these people were not imprisoned, and there was no such thing as a cell that could hold people in prison.

Locked-in rooms exist, and staff are either on duty at their posts or eating in the staff canteen.

So Charlie searched the lower level with his spiritual energy.

There were at least a hundred people working on the lower level,

But these people were all busy working or eating, and there was no sign that anyone was being imprisoned.

Charlie couldn't help but be surprised, and thought to himself:

"Could it be that the people have been moved to other places by them?"

After all, Peter Zhou has been here for a long time,

And he has not been sent to the prison area from beginning to end.

It would be logical to move him elsewhere.

However, Charlie also felt that the Routhschild family secretly controlled Peter Zhou and sent him herem

Because they definitely did not want the outside world to know.

In this case, the best way for them is to try not to transfer him again after settling him down.

Just like when he sent people to Orvel's dog farm before.

It is safest to throw a person directly into the dog farm and never let him out again.

After all, the other person is only on the way to the dog farm,

And there is a certain risk of exposure.

Once a person comes in, as long as he is not allowed to go out again,

This person will never be exposed again.

However, if people come in and then move to other places, they will be exposed again,

And the risk factor will naturally increase exponentially.

At this moment, Charlie's spiritual energy suddenly noticed that a person appeared out of thin air from the ground.

So he immediately gathered his spiritual energy there,

Surprisingly discovered that there was a very narrow elevator shaft next to the prison's pipe shaft.

The length and width of this elevator shaft were about 1.5 meters, and the car was pitifully small, only about 1.2 square meters.

Moreover, the elevator shaft does not have any openings on the first or middle floors,

Which means that it goes directly from the top floor to the underground.

Charlie was not in a hurry to immediately use his spiritual energy to investigate downwards.

Instead, he followed the people in the elevator to the top floor.

What was even more outrageous was that the elevator was actually in a hidden compartment behind a huge office on the top floor.

According to Charlie's perception, this office is the largest in the entire prison.

It seems that it is most likely the warden's office.

So Charlie immediately used his spiritual energy to go down the elevator shaft,

But what he didn't expect was that this elevator shaft's underground part of the cave was unfathomable.

Charlie's aura continued down for about twenty meters but still failed to touch the bottom.

However, this is already the limit that his spiritual energy can reach.

Twenty meters of soil and rocks, coupled with the reinforced concrete foundation, are a big problem for his spiritual energy,

And the consumption of spiritual energy is increasing. But the perception at the end is getting blurry.

So, Charlie withdrew his spiritual energy at the right time and asked Lucas:

"Lucas, does this prison have any relatively hidden places like basements?"

"No..." Lucas thought for a while: "I have been here for a few years, and I have never heard of a basement here."

"What's more, prisoners like me can't even go to the first floor after coming in, let alone the basement."

Charlie heard this he concluded in his heart that Peter Zhou is most likely being imprisoned in this hidden underground facility.

However, he can't find out the specific conditions of the underground facilities at all now.

If he wants to get down from here, his only option is to find a way to get to the warden's office first,

And then take the hidden elevator down from there.

Such an important secret passage is located inside the warden's office.

It can be seen that the warden should be a confidant of the Routhschild family.

However, what made Charlie feel embarrassed was that it was difficult for him to access the elevator to confirm whether he was inside or outside the prison.

After all, this is a modern prison with high security.

Various monitoring and security equipment are scattered throughout the prison.

It is easy to force his way in, but if he wants to sneak in without anyone noticing,

It is really difficult.

To take a step back, even if he asked Stella to get him out now, and then find the warden here from the outside and control him with psychological suggestions,

It would be almost impossible for him to take him to the underground facility.

You don't need to think about it to know that the Routhschild family must attach great importance to this place.

Maybe they are paying attention to the hidden elevator shaft and Peter Zhou who is imprisoned below all day long.

After all, he is a living person. If he follows the warden openly,

He will definitely be noticed by the Routhschild family.

They will be alerted before he even can see Peter Zhou.

In contrast, it is easier to find a breakthrough from inside the prison.

This prison is the fortress of the Routhschild family.

According to the inertia of their thinking, they will definitely focus on guarding the outside,

Thus inevitably ignoring the internal risks.

At this moment, Charlie heard the big drug lord Gustavo say to his subordinates:

“Make arrangements. I want to see the warden after dinner!”

## Chapter 5843

Gustavo wanted to see the warden, and so did Charlie.

It is best to find an opportunity to meet the warden without being noticed by the Routhchild family.

However, due to the special conditions in the prison,

It is not easy for Charlie to achieve this goal.

It seems that Gustavo can be an opportunity.

In Charlie's opinion, getting close to Gustavo is at least easier than getting close to the warden.

After all, he and Gustavo happen to be in the same prison area now.

So, he asked Lucas in front of him: "If I want to be friends with Gustavo, is there any good way?"

"Who? Gustavo?" Lucas seemed to have heard a fantasy, He smiled and said:

"Brother, before Gustavo came to prison, he was not only a major drug lord but also one of the top 100 richest people in the world."

"He was also the leading private armed commander in Mexico."

"He is imprisoned in this prison for ordinary people like us, is almost like a tiger in a cat's nest."

"How could he be friends with people like us..."

Charlie couldn't help but chuckle when he heard this.

In Lucas's view, there is no comparison between himself and Gustavo.

But the reality is that Gustavo is simply incomparable to himself.

Comparing money? If Gustavo's assets are followed by two zeros, they may not be comparable to his own.

Comparing the team? His little drug-trafficking armament was nothing in front of the Cataclysmic Front.

Besides, Charlie doesn't even bother to be friends with a drug dealer, and he is just using him now.

However, Lucas' words also gave Charlie a wake-up call.

Although he is much stronger than Gustavo in all aspects, Gustavo definitely looks down on him in Brooklyn Prison.

In other words, Gustavo looks down on anyone here.

It seems that he needs to think carefully about how to approach Gustavo.

While Charlie was eating and thinking about the plan, he looked at Joseph,

The boss of the second prison area, and his group of people from the corner of his eye,

And found that Joseph and his men were obviously starting to gather more and more.

At first, they were still sitting sparsely. More than a dozen people gathered,

And thirty or forty people gathered around him first,

Surrounding Joseph and his confidants in the middle, as if they were having a meeting.

Charlie didn't know what conspiracy they were making, so he used his spiritual energy to investigate and sensed that next to Joseph in the middle,

A minion took out several dagger-shaped objects from his arms.

Joseph handed these objects one by one to the most trusted person around him.

The minion then whispered: "Once the situation escalates later, you will find the opportunity to kill Gustavo directly!"

"Remember, the tip of the knife goes straight into the heart."

"Someone else will insert knife into the back of his head,"

"This will ensure that he will definitely die and will not be saved at any cost."

"As long as Gustavo dies, good days will come for us in the future!"

Several younger brothers hid their daggers in their sleeves, looking excited, and nodded.

One of them asked: "What about his minions? Shall we kill them too?"

Joseph nodded and said coldly: "Kill whoever stands in his way."

"Anyway, everyone is already serving life imprisonment without the possibility of parole."

"Killing one or ten it does not matter!"

Charlie was slightly shocked. He just listened to Lucas and Gustavo's own analysis.

Joseph should have been instructed by the Routhchild family to cause trouble for Gustavo.

And by the way, consume his vitality in Brooklyn Prison.

However, now Joseph actually wants to kill Gustavo directly.

Charlie secretly thought to himself that the Routhchild family had spent so much effort to lock Gustavo in a prison controlled by them.

It was definitely impossible to kill him just like that, so it was very possible for Joseph to kill Gustavo.

And the strength of this person must not be underestimated, otherwise, it would be impossible for Joseph to leave the Routhchild family behind.

It is speculated that this person is likely to be a member of the Gustavo Sanchez family.

If you think about it carefully, for the current rulers of the Sanchez family, keeping Gustavo in the hands of the US is tantamount to placing a tight curse on themselves.

If they do not cooperate even a little bit,

Other people in the family may think that, he doesn't care about Gustavo's life or death, so Gustavo's life is a constraint for him.

If Gustavo is allowed to die directly during the prison riot, this constraint will disappear,

And both the US government and the Routhchild family will lose their leverage to directly control him.

Thinking of this, Charlie smiled slightly, knowing that the opportunity had come.

So, he asked Lucas: "Have there been riots in this prison?"

"Of course," Lucas said casually:

"Riots are commonplace here, and the prison guards don't pay much attention to them."

"They are like the owners of a dog farm. Put a group of hunting dogs in a cage,"

"And let them bite and fight as they please. They just watch the fun behind the iron fence."

"When they have seen enough of the fun, they come in to intervene,"

"Separate the biting hunting dogs, drag the bodies out, and then beat each living hunting dog with fifty sticks."

As he said that, Lucas asked Charlie: "Why do you ask this suddenly?"

Charlie looked towards Joseph and saw that Joseph's men began to disperse and move towards him from several directions.

Looking around Gustavo's position, he whispered:

"I feel like they are going to cause trouble."

Lucas was used to it and said: "It's normal."

"They have a clear goal in causing trouble. Let's stay away and watch the fun."

Charlie smiled slightly, put down his spoon, and said with a smile:

"What's the point of watching the fun from a distance? I just like to join in the fun."

After that, he stood up and walked slowly towards Gustavo.

At this time, Gustavo also realized something was wrong.

## Chapter 5844

Although Joseph's men were scattered in all directions,

They all seemed to be making detours towards him.

Some came directly towards him in a straight line,

While some went around several parabolas with varying arcs,

And some even went around to the other side trying to wrap him in.

His expression suddenly became serious, and he said coldly to the men beside him:

"It seems that Joseph is going to take action today!"

A dozen of his men became nervous for a while.

To Gustavo's analysis, Joseph wants to weaken Gustavo's strength in Brooklyn Prison.

Therefore, they instinctively thought that Joseph's people were coming for them,

So they all felt like they were facing a formidable enemy and were ready for a tough battle.

The key is that although they, members of the Mexican criminal group, are strong in fighting outside,

They only rely on the guns in their hands and a cruel heart.

Give them a pistol and they dare to kill seven or eight unarmed civilians one by one.

But once they lose their guns, their brutal hearts and fighting prowess are no match for these American muscular men.

After all, a cruel heart cannot strengthen its muscles.

When it comes to using their hands, one of Joseph's gang of muscular men who pound the iron all day long can beat the two of them.

Moreover, Gustavo's men don't have an advantage in terms of strength,

Nor do they have an advantage in numbers.

In Brooklyn Prison, there are at least a few hundred of Joseph's minions and admirers,

And there are currently thirty or forty muscular men mobilized.

If a fight breaks out later, don't know if there will be dozens or hundreds of people showing off black feet among the onlookers.

Gustavo was hiding behind a dozen boys at this time,

Looking at the muscular men surrounding him with an indifferent expression,

Not realizing that he was in danger.

He felt that the Routhchild family just didn't want him to be too happy.

If a few of his minions were really killed today, then he would just keep a low profile in the future,

But it would not prevent him from continuing to eat, drink, and play with w0men.

So, he stood up and looked at Joseph from a distance, his expression angry and a bit cold.

He felt that the next time he discussed cooperation with the Routhchild family,

No matter what they asked him to do, he had to attach a condition, and that was to kill Joseph.

Anyway, to the Routhchild family, Joseph was a dog they kept in a Brooklyn jail.

If this dog died, it would not matter if he replaced it with another.

Confident and arrogant, he didn't even realize that the one who was really going to be hunted tonight was himself!

When Joseph's men gradually surrounded Gustavo and his minion,

These minions also formed a circle around Gustavo.

Gustavo's expression is still cold, even cold, with a bit of anger.

He feels that he is the standard, and he will be bullied by dogs when the tiger falls down.

When he was outside, he had thousands of troops.

If anyone dared to look at him on the street, he would take out his pistol and shoot him in the head without hesitation.

As a result, now, he is in prison, but he is forced to be so passive by a group of brainless muscular men.

Seeing that he was outnumbered, Gustavo couldn't help shouting:

"Joseph, what do you want?"

Joseph left his minion at this time, walked to the outside of the encirclement, looked at Gustavo, pointed to his own group of boys, and said very seriously:

"Gustavo, you are too high-profile in this place."

"Some of my boys have not eaten real steak for more than ten years,"

"But you are eating it here every day!"

"Also, half of my men don't know what caviar tastes like,"

"But I saw you stuffing a jar of caviar worth tens of thousands of dollars."

"Not to mention that Romanee-Conti that costs tens of thousands of dollars a bottle."

"It's only today that I know what the h3ll Romanee-Conti tastes like!"

At this point, Joseph said with an embarrassed look:

"Gustavo, there is an old saying that worries not about scarcity but inequality."

"You are trying to gain fcking privileges here every day."

"My brothers see it and are anxious in their hearts!"

"Now they don't want to be passive! They also want to eat steak,"

"They also want to eat caviar, and they also want to drink Romanee-Conti."

"I have no choice. I can't solve these problems."

"I can only let them solve it with you!"

One of the boys immediately cheered and shouted:

"Yes! Why can only you eat steak and drink red wine here? Why can't we!"

Gustavo said with disdain: "That's because you don't have as much money as me."

"If you are like me, you also have a net worth of tens of billions of dollars,"

"But you can also sit here eating steaks and drinking red wine."

"You have no fcking money, and the boss you work with has no money,"

"And you end up blaming me?"

The minion didn't expect to be beaten by Gustavo was so sarcastic, and immediately cursed:

"Gustavo, you son of a b!tch! How much money you have outside is your business,"

"Even if you drink all the red wine into your stomach, I have no objection!"

"But when you get here, you must abide by the rules here!"

"The rules here?" Gustavo asked disdainfully:

"Tell me what the rules are here?"

The boy cursed angrily: "Dmn, the rule here is that if others can't eat steak and drink red wine,"

"Then you can't do it either! No matter how rich you are!"

"That's right!" All of Joseph's men immediately agreed in unison, cheering and shouting:

"You can't have privileges in Brooklyn Prison!"

# Chapter 5845

Gustavo was in danger but didn't know it.

He still felt that these people were targeting his men, not himself.

He, who had been proud for most of his life, now had a look on his face he said sarcastically:

"A bunch of ignorant! You may not have enough knowledge of my strength."

"The privileges I enjoy here are much more than what you see!"

"When I feel like fcuking my men carefully selected beauties from all over this country for me."

"Some of these beauties fly from thousands of kilometers away."

"They will only let me fcuk for three hours, and then get out with tens of thousands of dollars."

"I can even ask my men to bring any of your wives over and have her kneel in front of me and serve me."

"This is something you people will never be able to enjoy in your lifetime!"

Gustavo saying this is feeling happiness, but the expressions of his minions are getting more and more depressed.

They also thought that these people were targeting them, not their boss,

So the angrier the boss made them now, the harder they would work to teach them a lesson later.

The minion was so angry that he gritted his teeth and said to Joseph:

"Boss! I can't stand this rotten potato anymore!"

"I'm going to kill him today!" Joseph sneered and shouted:

"Brothers, just feel free to do whatever you want to do today. Do it boldly!"

“Whatever happens, I will take care of it!”

Joseph gave the order, and the boys shouted, and then they rushed towards Gustavo’s gang like a tide!

Gustavo’s men were all facing a formidable enemy, and they could only pick up plastic dinner plates and spoons as weapons.

However, after all, the opponent is a muscular man who continues to pound iron for several hours every day.

In front of this kind of close range without any moves, the competition is whose fist is harder,

And it can be seen with the naked eye that every fist under Joseph’s hand is eager to compete.

The faces of Gustavo’s men were even bigger,

And it was almost common for him to knock one of them unconscious with every punch.

So, after several encounters, Gustavo's men were blasted by these muscular men until they knelt down and begged for mercy.

Gustavo watched the minions beside him fall down one after another.

When the minion fell halfway, he thought that the other party was about to stop,

But the other party had no intention of stopping at all.

At this time, Gustavo's previously arrogant face finally began to turn pale, and for the first time, his face was filled with fear.

As Joseph's men continued to approach, Gustavo was frightened and subconsciously shouted:

"Have you forgotten that I am Gustavo?! The famous Gustavo Sanchez!"

"I have tens of billions Worth of dollars, thousands of private armed forces!"

"As long as I am willing, all of you included, remember! All your family members, I can kill them all, leaving no one alive!"

At this time Joseph said with disdain: "Come on, Gustavo, it's useless even if you take advantage of the army in Mexico!"

"This is the United States, the United States of America!"

"If you are really powerful, why don't you arrange for thousands of private armed forces to come to Brooklyn Prison to rescue you?"

"You also know that there are only a few dozen armed guards in this entire Prison."

Gustavo didn't know how to answer for a while, so he could only bite the bullet and say:

"Joseph, I am a man who must retaliate. The number of people I killed in Mexico was not only tens of thousands but hundreds of thousands."

"If today's things end here, then I will never promise you that this matter will be settled like this,"

"And I will not settle the accounts with anyone. What do you think of this proposal?"

Joseph sneered: "What do you think of the proposal? Let my men tell you!"

As he spoke, Joseph spread his arms and waved gently to both sides.

One boy directly shouted: "fcuk the proposal! Let's all join together and kill him directly!"

A group of boys immediately echoed: "Yes! Kill him!"

As soon as the words fell, several boys who had hidden daggers, had already pulled out the homemade dagger from their sleeve.

Without exception, these daggers are all made of angle iron.

Although they look very simple, they are extremely sharp,

And their shape is at a ninety-degree right angle.

If stabbed once, it can directly open a large hole!

Seeing that the other party showed more than one weapon, Gustavo's mood suddenly sank to the bottom.

At this moment, he suddenly understood that what Joseph wanted was actually his own life!

Gustavo, who was extremely frightened, no longer had the arrogance and pride he had before.

He retreated towards the window and begged: "Everyone,"

"If you have something to say, please speak it carefully. Don't be impulsive!"

"If you want money, I can give you a lot of money,"

"How about one million dollars per person? I'll give you ten million!"

As he spoke, he hurriedly said: "By the way, don't you all want to drink red wine and eat steak and caviar?"

"From today on let's start, I've got all your steaks, red wine, caviar, and other high-end ingredients all covered!"

"How about the black truffles? I'll arrange for them to be delivered tomorrow,"

"As well as the best bluefin tuna! And the United States, The best Chinese and Japanese food!"

"By the way, do you like sushi? There is an old man in Japan who makes sushi very well,"

"And is quite famous. As long as you say a word, I will ask him to come here tomorrow and serve it to you with his own hands."

"If he doesn't come, I'll kill his whole family!"

Joseph sarcastically said: "Gustavo, are you interested in writing a bad check here?"

"You said you would give us money, right? Then take it out now!"

"Don't give me 10 million dollars specifically. I don't want any of your 10 million dollars."

"You can directly give these brothers two million dollars each. Give them now!"

Gustavo said with a sad face: "Joseph, now that I am in prison, how can I have so much money and give it to you immediately?"

"But as long as you give me a little time, I will definitely arrange the money!"

Joseph walked up to Gustavo and smiled sarcastically and said:

"Gustavo, you are a little confused about the situation."

"Let me tell you the truth, even if I give you time, you can't come up with the money."

## Chapter 5846

Gustavo said quickly: "Impossible, this Money is nothing to me at all,"

"I just need to make a phone call to my son,"

"And by this time tomorrow at the latest, he will be able to arrange all the money,"

"Whether it is cash or transfer."

Joseph turned his head at this time after looking around, he saw that the prison guards did not come to intervene,

And others did not dare to step forward.

He knew that even if Spartans appeared tonight, it would be impossible to save Gustavo.

So, he winked at his men, and a group of people immediately moved Gustavo's unable-to-move men out and threw them dozens of meters away.

At this time, Joseph smiled and said to Gustavo:

"Gustavo, stop struggling. To tell you the truth, you must die today."

Gustavo shuddered and blurted out:

"Joseph, if you Kill me, the Routhchild family will not let you go,"

"My son and the entire Sanchez family will not let you go!"

Joseph snorted curled his lips and said:

"Gustavo, before you die, I will make it clear to you,"

"The person who wants your life is not me, but your son."

"This is impossible!" Gustavo retorted without hesitation:

"My son will never do this. The Sanchez family will never harm their relatives!"

Joseph smiled and said: "Your son asked me to tell you before you die,"

"The Sanchez family is a great family and cannot be held back by any government or family because of you."

"No matter what, if you are alive, the Sanchez family can only be controlled by them,"

"But if you die, the Sanchez family can break this shackles,"

"So now is the time for you to sacrifice for the Sanchez family."

As he said, Joseph asked him: "Do you think the crown prince of any country is still willing to stay in the position of the crown prince,"

"And wait wholeheartedly for his biological father to come back when his biological father is kidnapped by the enemy?"

"Isn't that an idiot thought?"

Gustavo was stunned on the spot.

Joseph approached him and continued to ask:

"Gustavo, do you think your son can do it?"

Gustavo lowered his head and did not dare to speak.

Seeing his arrogance, Joseph sneered: "fcuk, aren't you an idiot?"

When speaking, Joseph especially emphasized the pronunciation of the word 'you'.

When Gustavo on the opposite side heard this, he was completely shocked!

This is really fcuking heartbreaking! It's really murderous and heartbreaking!

He looked at Joseph with great fear and begged: "Joseph, I beg you,"

"For the sake of my fellow prisoners, give me a way to live."

"Even if you let me have a phone call with someone from the Routhchild family,"

"They will definitely help me regain control of the Sanchez family."

"By that time, I can give you whatever you want, and I can even let you get out of this prison!"

Joseph smiled and said: "How is it possible Gustavo?"

"The reason why I tell you this is because you have to die today."

"I will burn the boat and never give you any chance to bewitch or bribe me."

"If I don't kill you today, your son will kill me tomorrow."

"And my reason also tells me that even if you can leave Brooklyn Prison and leave the United States,"

"Your son will definitely not let you go back alive to Mexico, so you must die no matter what."

At this moment, Gustavo's heart was filled with despair.

He knew that if Joseph could tell him so much,

He would definitely not spare him. He was cutting off his retreat.

And every word of the conversation between the two people fell into Charlie's ears.

Lucas did not have such good hearing. He could only look at the human wall three floors outside and three floors there.

He couldn't help but say in surprise: "Why does it feel like something is not right?"

"If they just want to teach Gustavo a lesson,"

"That should be over by now. Could it be that there are some new changes in this matter?"

Charlie then stood up and said with a smile:

"Instead of guessing here, why not just go over and have a look?"

"Fck! ..." Lucas was startled, and quickly stopped Charlie, saying:

"Brother, don't join in the fun, these two groups of people are not good people,"

"We can't afford to offend them!"

Charlie smiled and said: "I'm not here to watch the excitement,"

"I'm here to be a peacemaker. You sit here for a while and I'll come back when I'm done."

Lucas was so frightened when he saw Charlie turn around and walk towards the crowd.

He shouted in a low voice: "Brother, it doesn't matter."

"Why are you being a peacemaker?"

"Whoever steps forward at this time will be in trouble. Come back quickly!"

Charlie smiled at him, waved his hand, and strode out.

At this time, Gustavo in the middle of the crowd was still pleading:

"Joseph, if you kill me today, That means you boarded my son's pirate ship."

"Think about it, how could the Routhchild family spare you?"

"I am their hostage! With me here, many of their activities in Mexico can proceed very smoothly."

"If I die, they will definitely blame you!"

Joseph smiled and said: "It doesn't matter,"

"After you die, your son will immediately renegotiate with them,"

"And by then he will bail me out."

Gustavo blurted out: "How is it possible, Joseph?"

"He even wanted to kill his own father, how could he keep his word to you?"

"He is big but has a small brain! You are really stupid!"

"You know nothing," Joseph said disdainfully:

"Gustavo, do you really think I am a fool?"

"So many of my brothers know that we were instructed by your son to kill you."

"If he doesn't protect me or us, then the news about him killing you will spread,"

"And he won't be able to stand firmly!"

"As for the Routhchild family, they won't be able to avenge you after you die."

"Because their family's purpose for hundreds of years has been to put profits first."

"If you die, they will definitely cooperate with your son as soon as possible."

"Otherwise, nothing will be lost?"

"You can't even understand this, how could you get to this level?"

Gustavo was completely desperate at this moment.

He knew that he would definitely die today because his son had already set a certain death situation for him,

And Joseph had also made a plan to kill him.

Determined, no one around him can protect him at this moment,

And he has no other possibility except death.

At this time, Joseph had lost the patience to continue communicating with him,

So he gestured to his subordinates and said coldly: "Kill him!"

As soon as he finished speaking, several young men holding sharp weapons immediately approached Gustavo and clamped him in.

When Gustavo saw the cold tip of the knife,

He couldn't imagine how miserable his death would be today.

At this time, the minions looked ferocious,

Brandishing the daggers in their hands, and were about to stab Gustavo in the heart and back of the head.

At this critical moment, a voice suddenly came from outside the crowd and shouted:

"You guys, give me some face! Stop your hands!"